Our Family's Story:

the History of the Forebears of Lowell Everett Cooper & Grace Beatrice Scribner -- Their Times, Their Struggles & Their Lives (Volume 3)

by Laura Cooper Fenimore

Scribner

© 2008 by Laura Cooper Fenimore. All Rights Reserved.

Cooper

"If a man cares not for his roots, then how can he care for his branches?"

-- Doyle M. Davis

"People will not look forward to posterity, who never look backwards to their ancestors."

--Edmund Burk

Contents

Section 4: Our SCRIBNER Family 5
Part 1: Grace Beatrice Scribner & Family 6
Part 2: Our Scribners Come to America 76
Part 3: Scribners in America -- from New Hampshire to Michigan. 96
Part 4: Civil War, Tragedy, and West Coast Migration 107
Part 5: The Autobiography of Tom Scribner 114
Part 6: Our HETSLER Family History 154
Part 7: Our CARLL Family History. 183
Part 8: Our MORRELL Family History & Our New England Quakers. 184
Part 9: Our JOHNSON & MOULTON Quaker Families 200
Part 10: Our GREEN & MOULTON Family History 201
Part 11: Our BURBANK Family History 204
Section 5: Our STEELE Ancestors 205
Part 1: Our Michigan STEELE Family 205
Part 2: Muriel's Memoires: Clinton Steele & The FENIMORE Family 226
Part 3: The FENIMORE Family: From Quaker Roots. 277
Part 4: The SHARPS & GRAVES - The Regulators and Our Carolina Cumberland Connection 281

Introduction

One of the questions that most intrigues students of genealogy is the *why* question: *why* did our ancestors come here? In fact, *why would anybody undertake such a perilous journey fraught with so much uncertainty?* Or, perhaps more succinctly, *what legacy did our ancestors leave us that was worthy of the sacrifice of their very lives?* There are reasons that people do dangerous things. When those reasons are discovered, they can become some of the most important context for understanding our ancestors as people. By discerning their motivations, we may see what drove them to undertake risks that could end their very lives. Such knowledge tells us what kinds of people they really were, because it unequivocally demonstrates what they really believed and cherished. Those beliefs, in turn, give us a glimpse into understanding our ancestors as people; their beliefs shaped every aspect of their lives, their struggles and their triumphs. In essence, I here endeavor to see our ancestors as people of their times; in doing so I hope to impart a fuller understanding of the legacy they left for us to guard. It is my solemn belief that it is our duty as their progeny to treasure that legacy, *guard it with our lives, if necessary,* and pass it on to the generations that follow.

With such a monumental task, where do we begin? In my view, the most logical approach to an overall family history is to begin with a description of the events that became common cause for all our ancestors to migrate to North American from Europe.[1] Our ancestors from the British Isles arrived earlier in the Colonies than our German brethren, so the logical starting point is to describe the events in the British Isles that evoked the first emigrants to take to the seas

As a student of history, I am also aware that the original German Palatine emigration from London to New York was financed by Queen Anne of England (after their original migration to England from Holland). England had finally defeated the Spanish Armada, and with it, the last vestige of challenge to its sovereignty as a Protestant nation. In Europe -- unlike Britain -- the issue was pretty cut-and-dried; it was, quite simply, a question of religious differences between protestants and Catholics. As the influence of Protestants rose, Rome became supportive of efforts to wipe out protestantism wherever it existed.

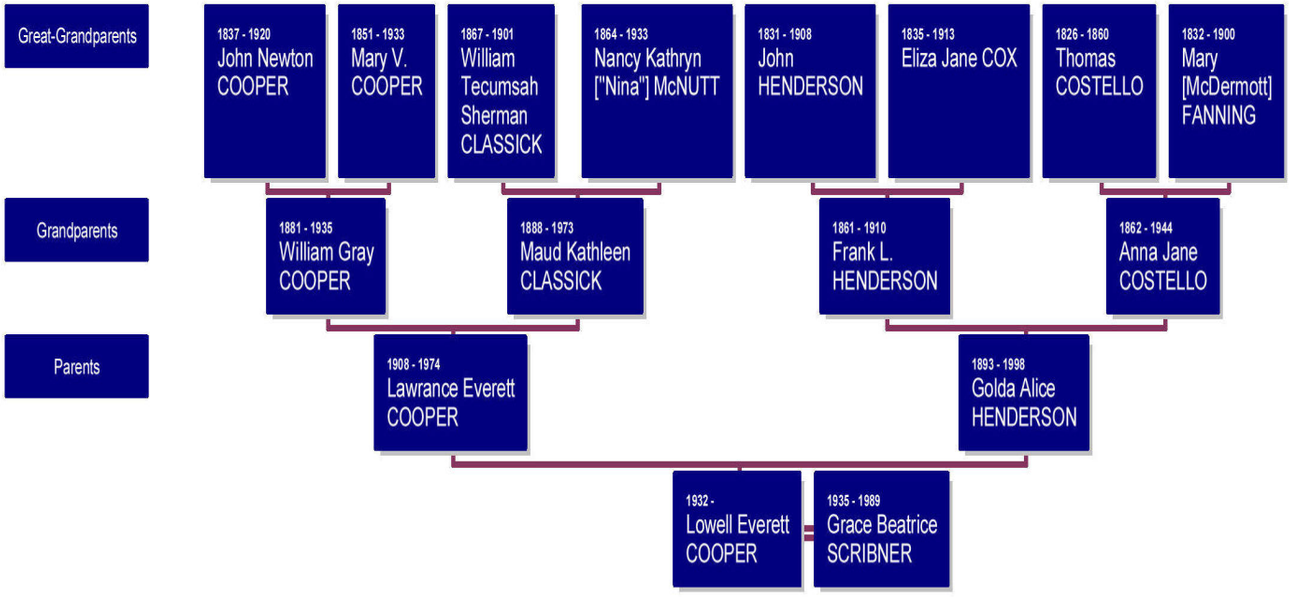
ORGANIZATION

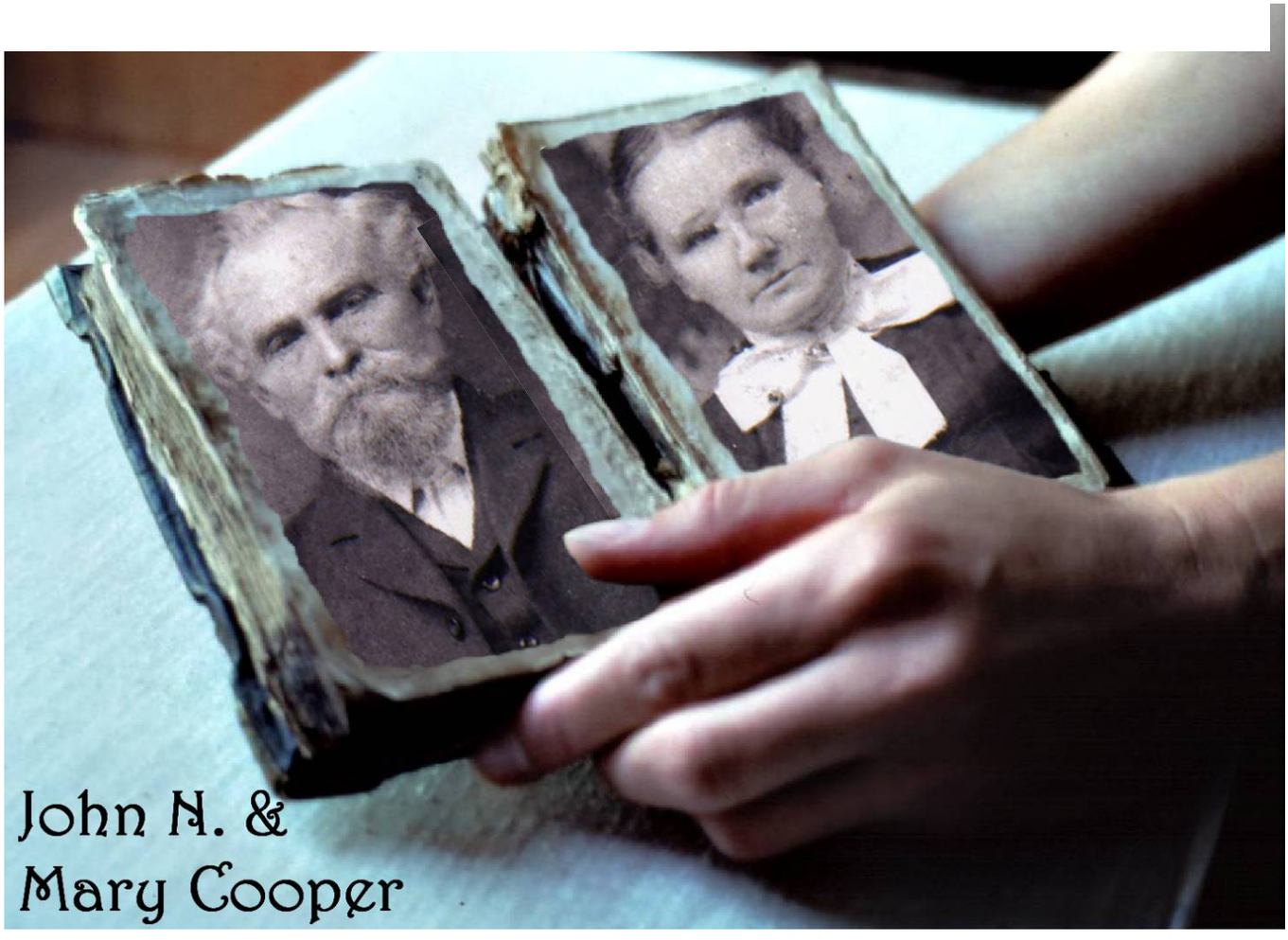
This book is organized into sections and parts. This first section is a collection of narratives about historic events that are common to many branches of our family. Each part delves into a specific topic, but together the first part represents a general overview of the causes of migration for our family from Europe, followed by a series of events in American History that became cause for migration of family groups within America..

The remaining parts contain surname histories for various parts of our family; Sections 1, 2 and 3 delve into our paternal Cooper line; this includes our paternal Cooper [Section 2] and maternal Henderson [Section 3] narratives.; likewise, Section 5 explores our mother's paternal Scribner line, and Section 6 follows her maternal Steele lineage. Each of those sections are further divided into parts, which are generally organized by surname. However, for more recent family history, parts are used to describe separate generations within our family.

1 In my years of genealogical research on both the Scribner and Cooper families, I have discovered a remarkable pattern: with only two exceptions, every single branch of our family I have traced back to European origins arrived in the American Colonies before the Revolutionary War. The two exceptions are the Costellos (Anna Jane Costello married Frank Henderson) and the Classicks (or "Clossicks" as they were known in Ireland; Michael John Classick was the father of William J. Classick, who married Nina McNutt). Both of those families were Irish, and both emigrated during the disastrous potato famine of the early 1850s. Both of those lines are on the Cooper side. One other large generalization can also be made: every single pre-Revolutionary War branch of our family except a few that I have identified has come from one of two places: either somewhere in the British Isles (Scotland, Ireland, England, or Wales), or somewhere in the German Palatine region [the area we know of as Baden-Wurttemberg, Saarland, Rhineland-Pfalz, and Bavaia; including French Hugenots from Alsace/Lorraine; also including parts of Northern Switzerland]. The only exceptions are two Scandinavians -- one in the Cox family, whose genetic origin has recently been discovered to have been Swedish and descended from Peter Larsson Cocke, and the other Norwegian in origin and an ancestor of Mary Benedict, the wife of Pennsylvania Dutch-born Frederick G. Hetchler., the parents of Minerva Hetsler, the grandmother of both of my mother's parents.

Ancestors of Lowell Everett COOPER





The Coopers

1979

1976

1970

1964

Section 4: Our SCRIBNER Family

Charles William Scribner; Company F, 22nd Michigan Infantry; died February 1864

Part 1: Grace Beatrice Scribner & Family

My Scribner Family History begins with my mother, Grace Beatrice SCRIBNER who was born on October 20, 1935 in King County Hospital, Seattle, King County, Washington; and died June 06, 1989 in Lower Umpqua Hospital, Reedsport, Douglas County, Oregon. She was the fourth child and only daughter of **Thomas Jefferson [Jeff] SCRIBNER** and **Dixie Elizabeth STEELE**. She married **Lowell Everett COOPER** March 20, 1954 in Chapel of the Roses, Chula Vista, California. He was born November 29, 1932 in Hayes County, Nebraska. He was the son of Lawrance Everett COOPER and Golda Alice HENDERSON.

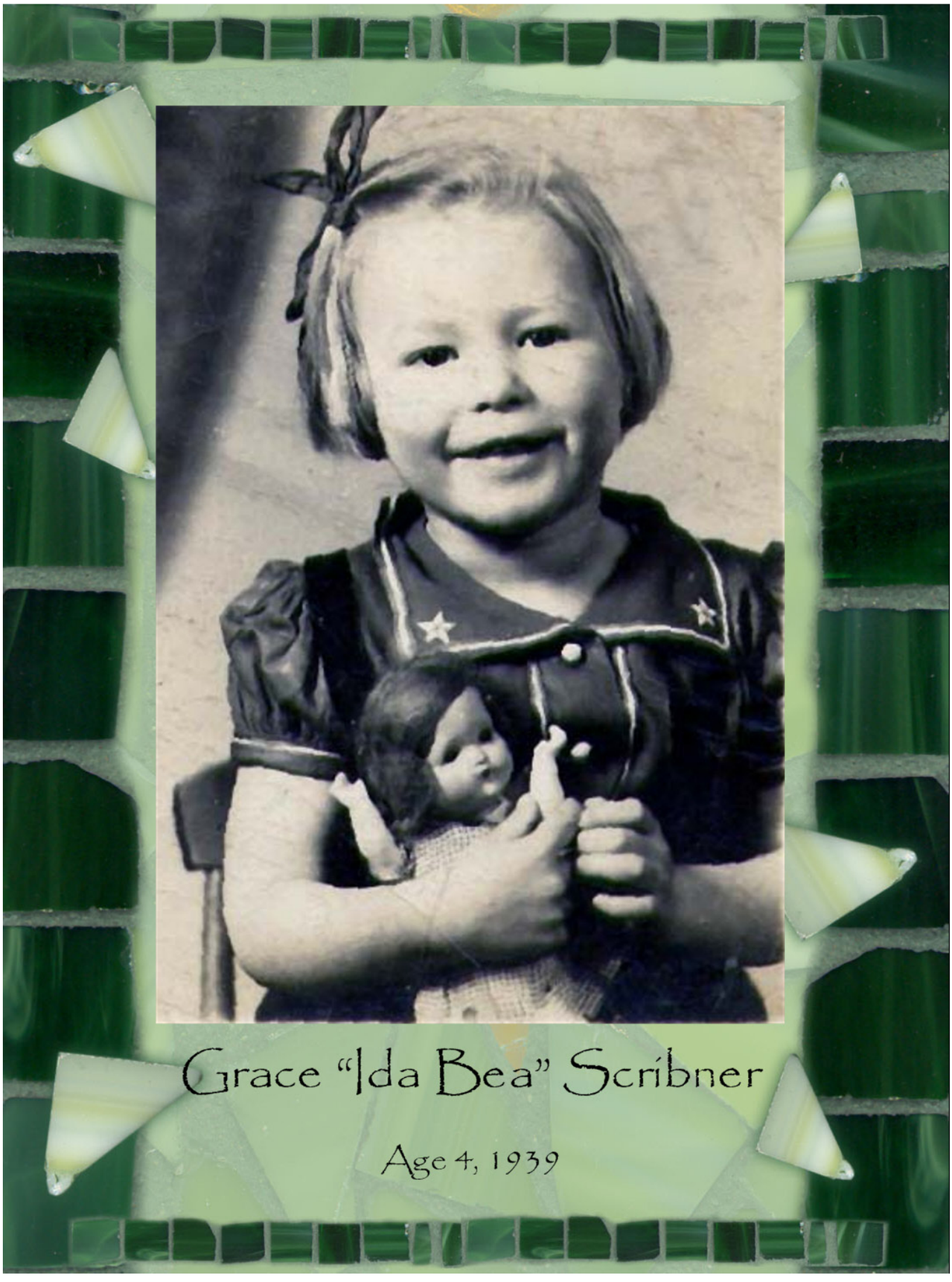
But this was not meant to be just another genealogy book with a lot of "so-and-so begat so-and-so" and dry names and dates in it. Rather, this volume and its companions are meant to impart to future generations the *color and wonder* of our forebears; to understand and appreciate our place in history and to see with a clearer vision what sacrifices and toils were undertaken on our behalf. This volume, unlike the more academic volumes produced in my detailed genealogy work, will not be filled with sources and detailed studies. What it will contain, however, are our *stories,* recounted with as much clarity and accuracy as I could achieve with the information I had available. So, let's begin with the story of my mother's own life.

Grace Scribner's father Tom Scribner followed centuries of Scribner Family tradition and worked in the wood products industry; he was an itinerant logger who began working in logging camps in Minnesota at the age

of 12 in 1911. He was an early and vocal member of the I.W.W. He moved from camp to camp to find work. In later years, Scribner used a small printing press to turn out newspapers in his logging camps; as a consequence of his activities as well as his openly communist views, he lost many jobs. In fact, Scribner was blacklisted because of his views when the practice was legal and he often had to work under assumed names. Grace's mother Dixie shared Tom's political views.

Dxie and Tom also shared bloodlines -- they were first cousins, having a common grandmother. That Grandmother was Minerva Hetsler, who had first married Charles William Scribner before the Civil War in Macomb County, Michigan. The couple birthed two boys in Macomb County -- Charles William and Thomas Jefferson, and then Charles William Sr. died during his service with the Michigan Voluntters in the Union army in February 1864. The Widow Scribner thereafter married Peter Steele in 1866, and two [possibly three] sons by that marriage lived into adulthood: Lewis Albert and Clinton Richard. Tom was a son of Charles William Scribner, Jr. [aka "William C. Scribner"] and Dixie was a daughter of Clinton Richard Steele. To complicate matters further, Tom's mother was the youngest sister of Peter Steele, which made Tom the son of Dixie's great Aunt as well as a cousin to Dixie!

Tragically, Gace 's mother died when Grace was only two years old, and Tom was left to raise Grace and her three older brothers by himself. Grace was separated from her 3 older brothers and father when she was placed in the care of other family members until her father remarried in 1940. Grace returned to her father's



Grace "Ida Bea" Scribner

Age 4, 1939

Grace Beatrice Scribner

Estimate: 1st Grade, 1941; probably Sisters, Oregon

home with her step-mother, Mary [formerly Martin], along with step-siblings Carl,. Doris. and Virginia], and began school in Sisters, Oregon. The family was eventually moved to Redmond, Oregon. Tom continued his itinerant workstyle. Grace was often left alone with her step-mother Mary when her father would go away to work or do labor organizing. She remembers being whisked away from place to place, many times having to leave her few prized personal possessions behind. She recalls that her brothers all left home as young men. During high school, she was living in Elkton, Oregon. When her father wanted to move her to a small town in California -- but with no high school [Burney] -- Grace realized that her continued schooling was threatened. She had also longed for some continuity; so, she was determined not to go. An arrangement was made for her to live with a local family until she finished high school -- the Ted & Mildred Taylor family

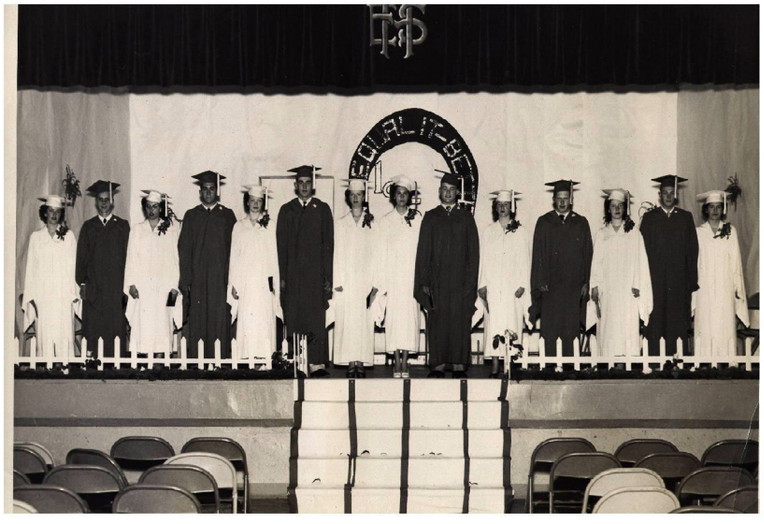
Mildred Taylor was a Hancock by birth, and therefore a member of a family that was among the earliest settlers of Douglas County, Oregon. The Hancocks had staked adjoining homestead claims in the 1860s in a beautiful valley stretching along Elk Creek and siding the mountain just east of Elkton. [Today, the area is known as "Hancock Valley" and is bisected by Oregon State Highway 38 just west of the tunnel between Elkton and Drain. The valley is viewable from the highway as it ascends the hill and then drops to the east of Elkton city limits.] When Grace came to live with the Taylor family, Mildred was living across the road from the old Hancock home where she had grown up. The Hancocks had learned how to reap what they needed from the land, and Mildred faithfully planted and harvested her enormous garden each year. The Taylors had three children of their own (Janice, Judy, and Rick; -- a fourth -- Bob -- would be born later). Grace helped out around the house and assisted with the other children in exchange for room and board, but was treated and regarded like a member of the family. Janice and Judy were like younger sisters to her -- something she had not experienced before.

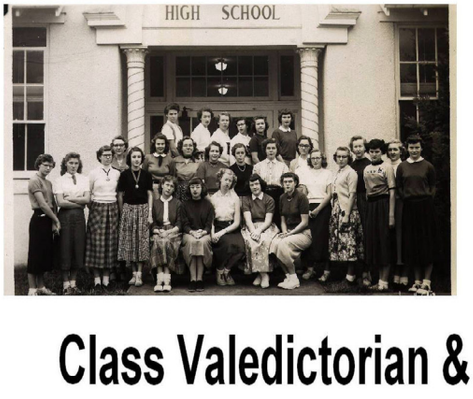
Grace graduated as valedictorian of her tiny 1953 high school class in Elkton, and subsequently enrolled at Oregon State College. Grace was also an academic superstar in English -- when she sat for the freshman entrance examinations at the College, she achieved the single highest score on the English section for all entering freshmen! (A newspaper article in Tom's trunk describes Grace's achievement on the OSC entrance exam, my source serial #0793.)

In the fall, Grace left Elkton and enrolled as a freshman at Oregon State College in Corvallis. She lived at the Azalea House, a campus cooperative house for women. Her initial goal was to become a marine biologist, but after flunking chemistry she changed her

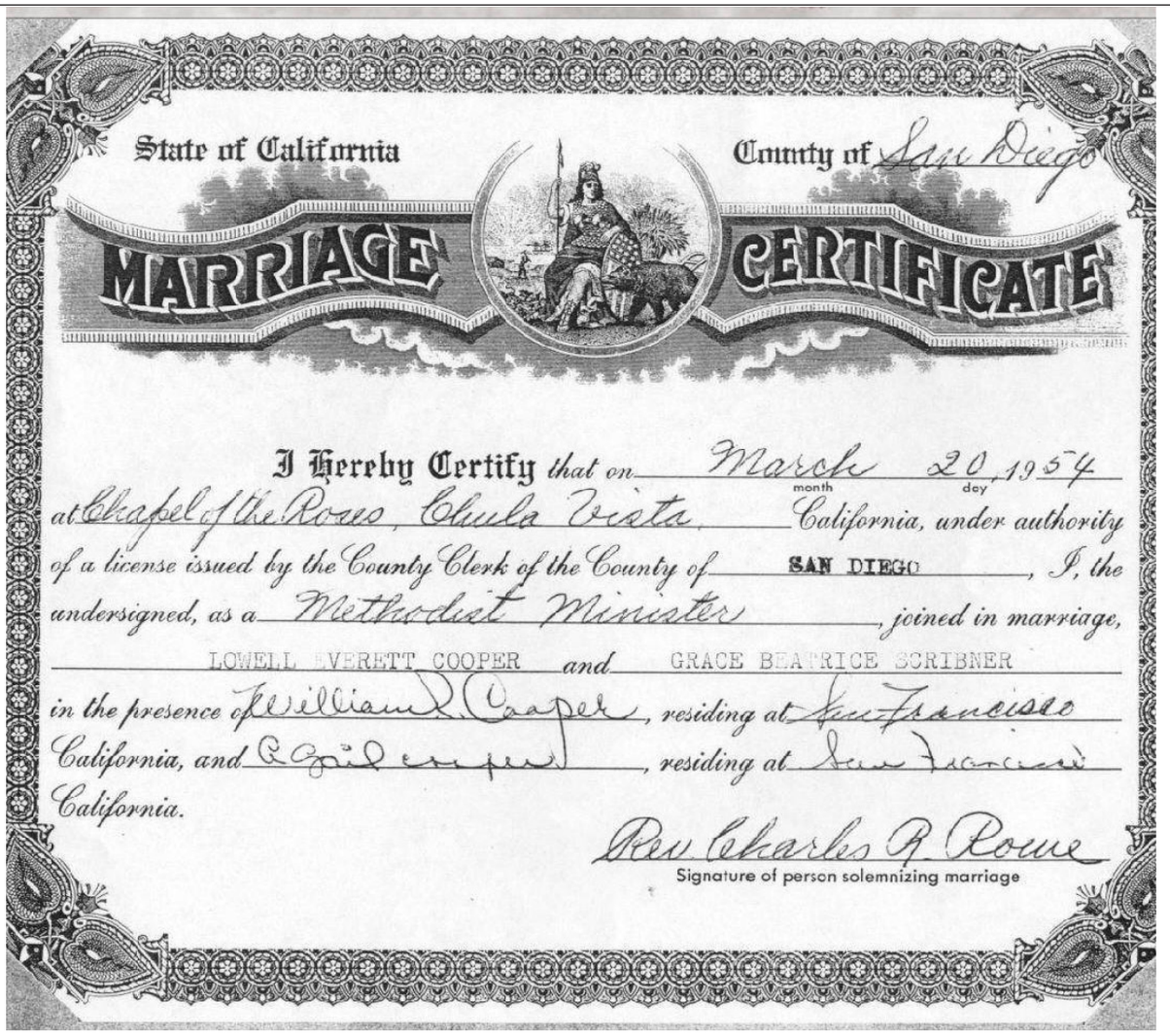
Abt.
1943
Grace B.
["Ida B."]
Scribner

Grace Beatrice Scribner, Elkton High School, Senior Year 1952-1953





Class Valedictorian & Football Cheerleader



State of California County of San Diego

MARRIAGE CERTIFICATE

I Hereby Certify that on March 20 1954
month day
at Chapel of the Roses, Chula Vista California, under authority
of a license issued by the County Clerk of the County of SAN DIEGO, I, the
undersigned, as a Methodist Minister, joined in marriage,
LOWELL EVERETT COOPER and GRACE BEATRICE SCRIBNER
in the presence of William R. Cooper, residing at San Francisco
California, and Abigail Cripps, residing at San Francisco
California.

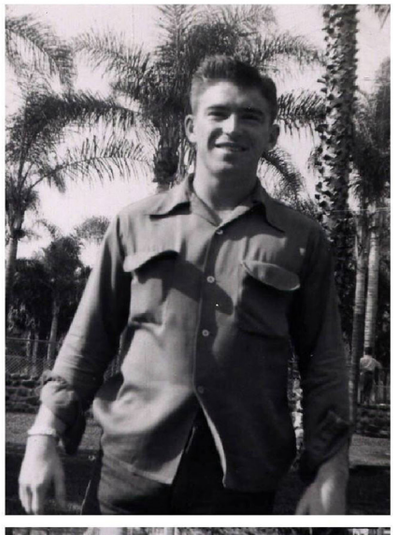
Rev Charles R Rowe
Signature of person solemnizing marriage

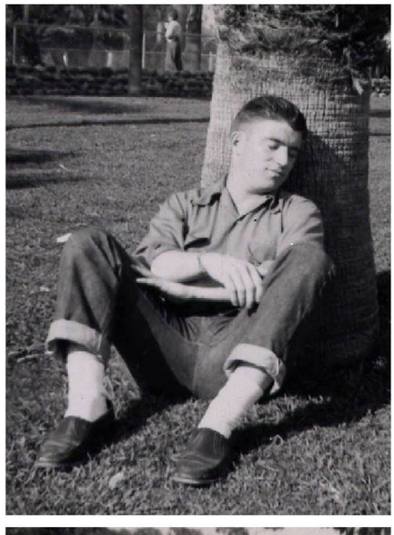
major to nursing. Lowell Cooper made his fateful first appearance in Corvallis in the fall of 1953, and the couple fell immediately in love.

On March 20, 1954, Grace Beatrice Scribner and Lowell Everett Cooper were married at the Little Chapel of the Roses in Chula Vista, California. Lowell had arranged for a Methodist Minister to perform the ceremony. William Rex Cooper served as best man, and Abigail [Cripps] Cooper served as Matron of Honor [Lowell's brother and sister-in law who were living in the San Francisco area]. Grace and Lowell then spent the next six days at the U.S. Grant Hotel in San Diego on their honeymoon; while in San Diego, they visited Balboa Park and the San Diego Zoo.

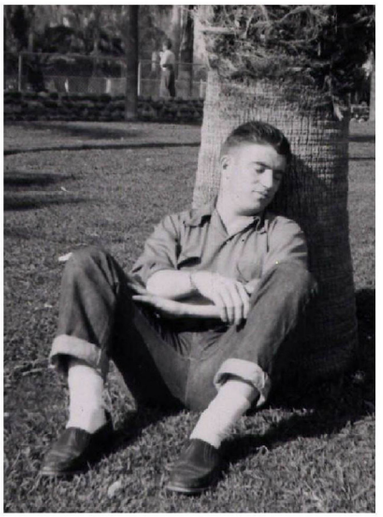
After their wedding and honeymoon in San Diego during spring break, Grace returned to school. She was devastated to learn that married women were not allowed to live in Azalea House, but was graciously allowed to finish out Spring term as a resident, nevertheless, she would have to make other arrangements for the fall. She also had great difficulty with her chemistry class, and failed for the first time in her academic life. She felt her world coming apart. The Taylors were also furious when they learned of the marriage -- after the fact -- fearing that would be the end of Grace's education. Their concern was propitious.

Following spring final exams, Grace rode with her brothers Bob and Ben to San Francisco. Grace then

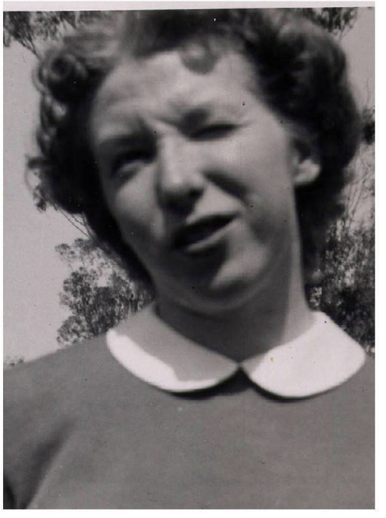




Grace & Lowell in San Diego, California 1954



Grace & Lowell in San Diego California 1954



Spring Break 1954; a honeymoon in San Diego

took a bus the rest of the way to San Diego. Lowell had rented a house on a monthly basis in San Diego that they would be able to use as their first residence. Lowell commuted to Long Beach each day while Grace learned to keep house in San Diego. In August, Lowell shipped out to the Phillippines as senior Petty Officer aboard the U.S.S. Bellegrove, serving as operations officer in charge of personnel, radarmen, sonarmen, radiomen and electronics engineers.

By late August, any doubt about whether Grace would finish college right away were resolved when she discovered that she was pregnant. So, instead of returning to school in Corvallis, Grace went to Elkton to stay with the Taylor family. Lowell's ship served its tour of duty in the Phillippines and headed back to the states in the fall. By November, Grace and Lowell were making plans to set up housekeeping in San Diego. When Lowell's duty schedule showed a docking in Astoria, Oregon, Lowell requested leave. Grace then got on a bus to rendezvous with Lowell in Astoria.

Just before Thanksgiving, 1954, Lowell took his leave, and he and Grace rode the bus together from Astoria to Portland where they immediately purchased their first car, a 1949 Ford sedan. They planned to use the car to move Grace to San Diego and thereafter to use it as basic transportation for the young family while living in San Diego. After purchasing the automobile, Grace and Lowell drove to Elkton, Oregon. While in Elkton, they spent

Thanksgiving with the Taylor family, and then loaded up Grace's belongings and drove straight to San Diego. Upon arrival, they rented an apartment on National Street. The photograph above was taken shortly after their arrival in San Diego in early December 1954. [Photo taken by Robert Wells, Lowell's boyhood friend from Palisade, Nebraska, who was also serving in the U.S. Navy and was stationed at San Diego.]

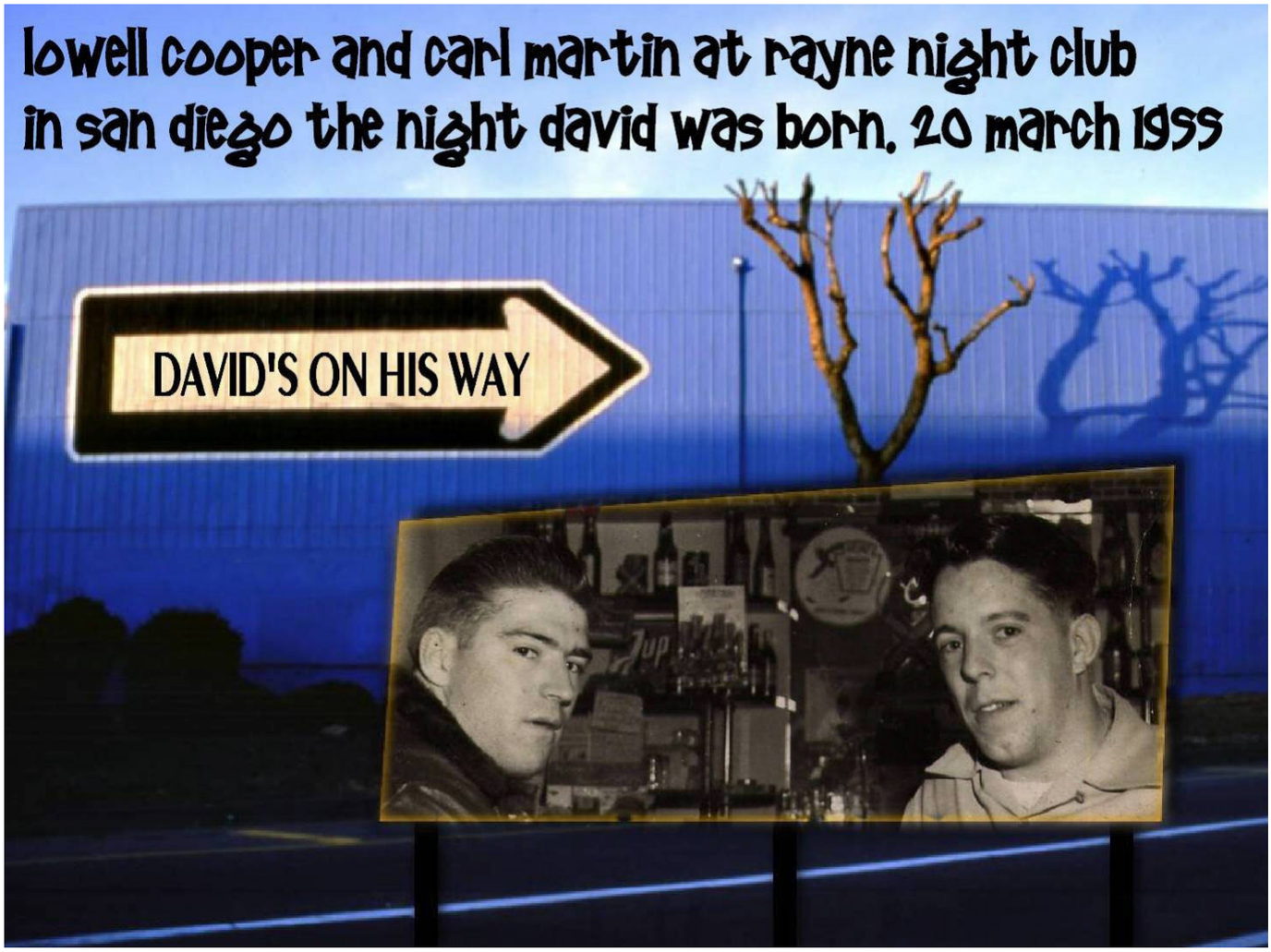
Grace and Lowell's first real home together was in San Diego. Lowell's ship [the U.S.S. Bellegrove] was in

Lowell & Grace Cooper, early December 1954

(in front of their first car -- a 1949 Ford; in San Diego, in front of their apartment on National Street, and Grace is about 5 months pregnant with David at the time

port at Long Beach, and Lowell commuted each day to and from his duty station aboard ship while Grace prepared for the baby's arrival. In February, Lowell started attending what was called the "Cold Weather School" for radar operators. The school taught Lowell about operating his systems in special conditions existing in extreme cold weather climates such as Alaska. After completing the sixty-day course, Lowell would be prepared for an officer's duty assignment to Point Barrow, Alaska.

David Allen Cooper was born on Grace and Lowell's first wedding anniversay on March 20, 1955 at the U.S. Naval Hospital in San Diego. Shortly after David was born, Lowell completed the Cold Weather School. He had performed very well at the school, and was at the top of his class. Lowell's ship was being fitted for duty at Point Barrow, Alaska; when the ship was being staffed for the deployment, Lowell was offered an assignment as a First

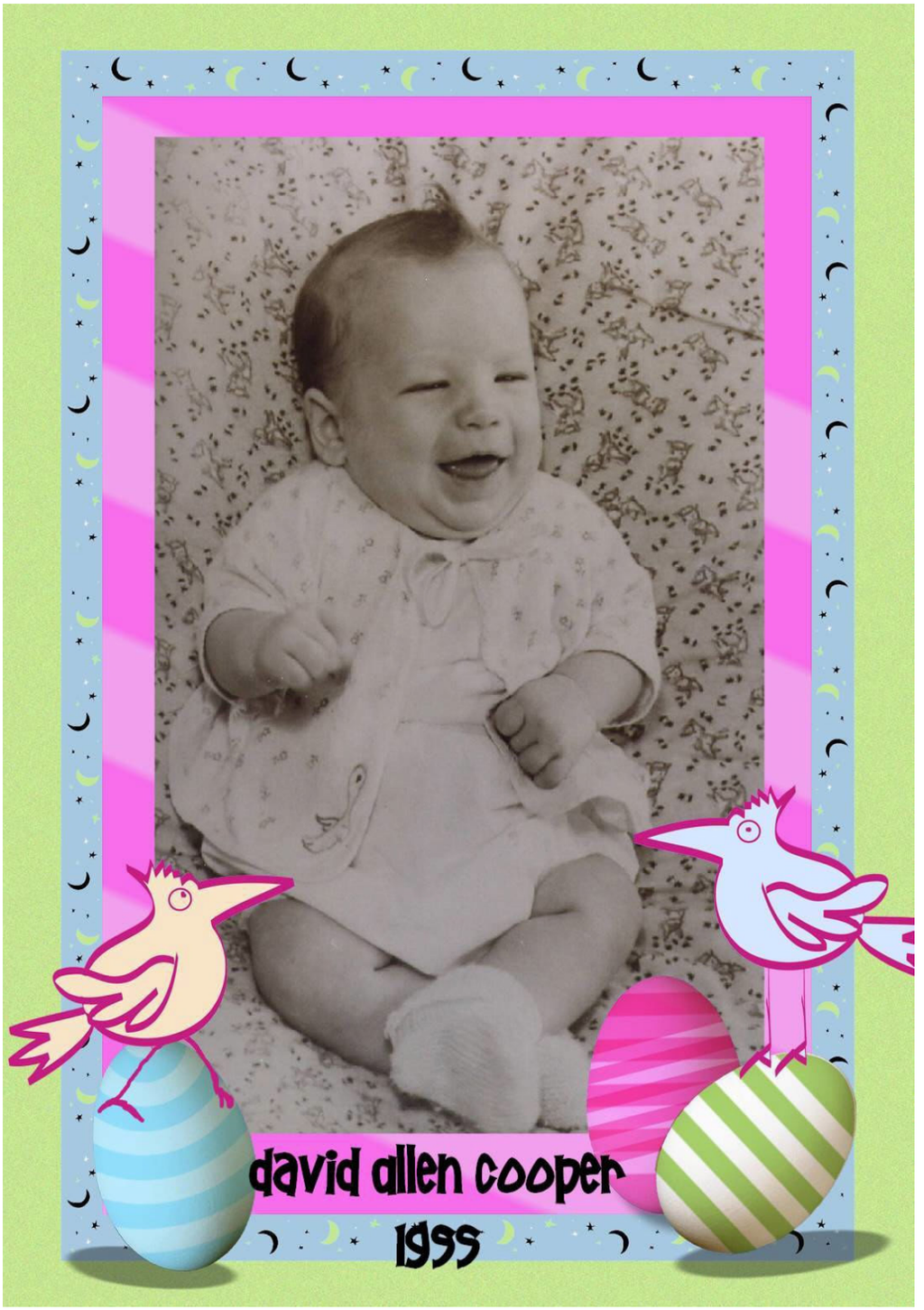


Grade Petty Officer. Grace and Lowell discussed the offer, but they both realized that as a career naval man, Lowell would be at sea most of the time. Grace was not happy with that prospect -- and, frankly, with a family, neither was Lowell. As an alternative, Grace and Lowell thought a better option would be for Lowell to use his G.I. benefits to attend college. Which college? That was a no-brainer-- why, Oregon State, of course! So, Lowell turned down the offer and prepared to move his family north to Oregon. He received his honorable discharge from the U.S. Navy in May 1955.

Immediately after reciving his discharge, Lowell and Grace packed up baby David and all their belongings and drove straight to the Taylor home in Elkton, Oregon. Money had to be earned and tucked away for college. Lowell had told Ted Taylor he would be needing work, and Ted had pre-arramged a job for Lowell through Jim Adamo -- the head of the local survey crew for the Longbell Division of International Paper Company. The Coopers arrived in Elkton at about 7 o'clock in the evening, and Lowell was taken directly to the home of Jim Adamo in Elkton to discuss the job. Jim gave Lowell and old pair of cork work boots and was Lowell was hired on the spot. Lowell returned to the Taylor home by 9 o'clock, and reported for work in Scottsburg the next morning at 5 a.m.! Lowell worked for the Longbell survey crew that entire summer; their task was to survey the wooded land parcels owned by International Paper, divide them into 40 acre sections in order to assure that logging was occurring in the right places, to provide for sustained long-term management and timber yields, and to check property boundaries to make sure that they only cut on land owned by the company. They also surveyed to site new logging access roads.

The first few weeks the Coopers lived with the Taylors until they could secure their own small apartment in town in Elkton. Mildred always kept a large producing garden and preserved much of the garden's produce each year, so Grace assisted Mildred with that effort in addition to helping Mildred in caring for her four children (along with Grace's own new family).

During the summer, Lowell made phone calls to the Oregon State Athletic Department and football coach inquiring about the football team. He was told when practices would begin in August, and Lowell was hopeful that he might be able to obtain a football scholarship to help defray the costs of school. So, Lowell announced he would be attending practice as a walk-on Freshman, and Lowell and Grace left Elkton and rented an apartment at 387 N. 26th Street in Corvallis in August before college actually began, but in time for the commencement of football practice. Lowell had been a stand-out football player and all-around athlete in his tiny Nebraska high school, so he and Grace both thought it was worth the try.

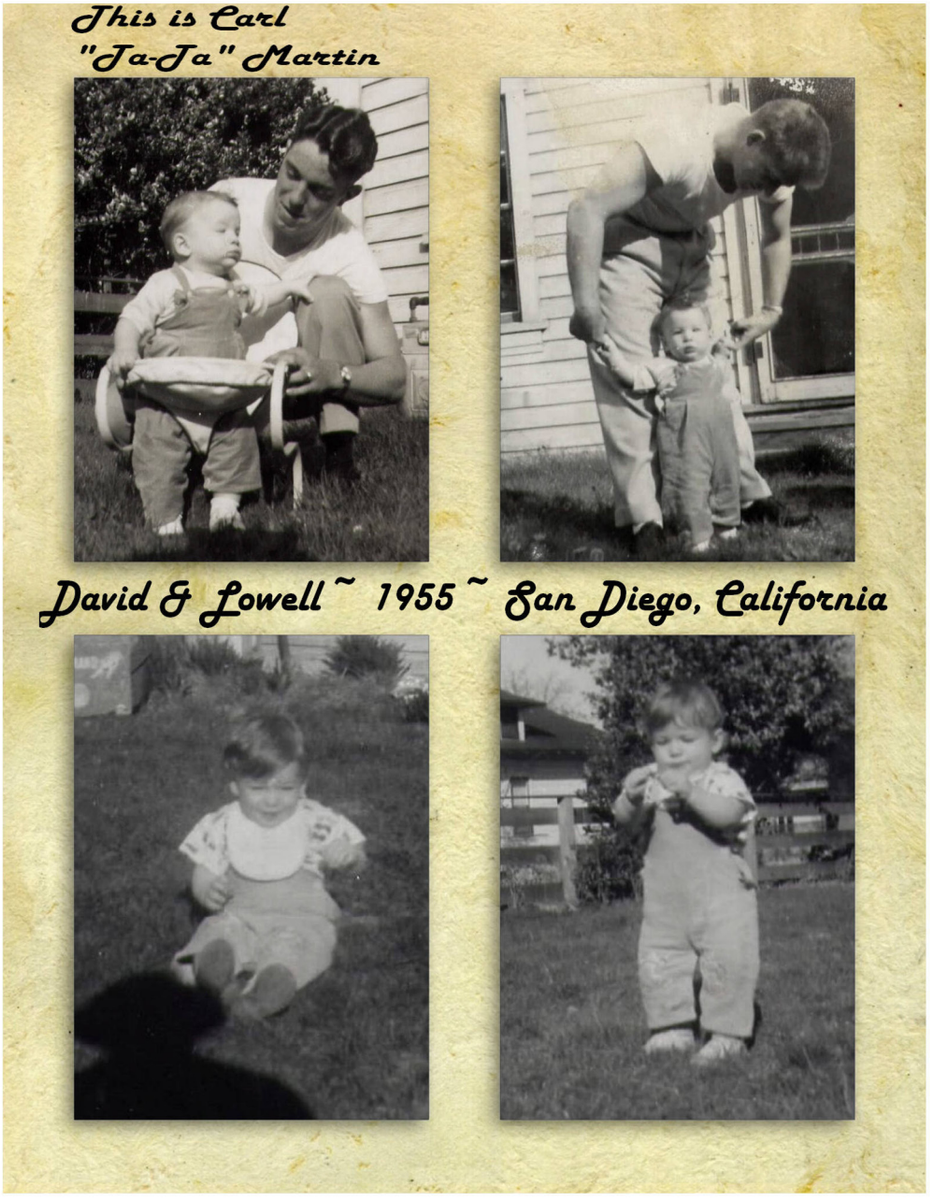


In the meantime, by late summer, Grace had discovered that she was pregnant with their second child -- who would be due in March. While the baby was a cause for celebration, Lowell and Grace knew that they would have to get serious about their finances. When Lowell arrived for football practice in August, he knew that scholarship opportunities would be rare. Lowell suited up and began practice with the team, and was well-received. As a member of the football team, he was given preferential treatment and "walked

through:" his initial registration. An added bonus for the family would be that the football team doctor [Dr. Waldo Ball] would deliver both of the family's daughters [Laura and Elizabeth] Lowell was never cut from the squad, but by November it was also clear that he would not be offered a scholarship.

Lowell's original declared major had been mechanical engineering., but at the end of fall term his freshman year, Lowell had changed his major to accounting and finance in the School of Business. Lowell was motivated toward the new major by a desire to learn how to get and control money -- and he needed to apply the lessons to help his own family and to get himself through college. He had never been exposed to any kind of personal finance theory, so it was all new to him. He changed majors before Christmas of his Freshman year, and spoke with the Dean of the Business School -- Clifford Maser -- who encouraged the change.

To make ends meet, Grace had gone to work in the fall of 1955 in a clerical position performing bookkeepping for the college administration. Grace's first job with the college was to reconcile the telephone bill as between academic departments. She was so good at that job that the college kept increasing her responsibilities and moving her up. By Lowell's 2d year, the college asked Grace to take some accounting classes (for which they would pay). After Grace was approached about the accounting courses, Lowell talked to the Dean of the Business College to set it up. Gtace continued to work for the administration until she left Corvallis.



By November, Lowell had to make the

Photo Note: thse photos were taken when David was about 6 months old; even though this layout says "San Di-ego" they were more likely taken at the apartment in Corval-lis on 26th Street.

March 1956 ~ Corvallis, Oregon

Grace, David, Golda (grandmother), Laura (2 weeks old)

and Lawrance Cooper (grandfather) ~ visit from Nebraska

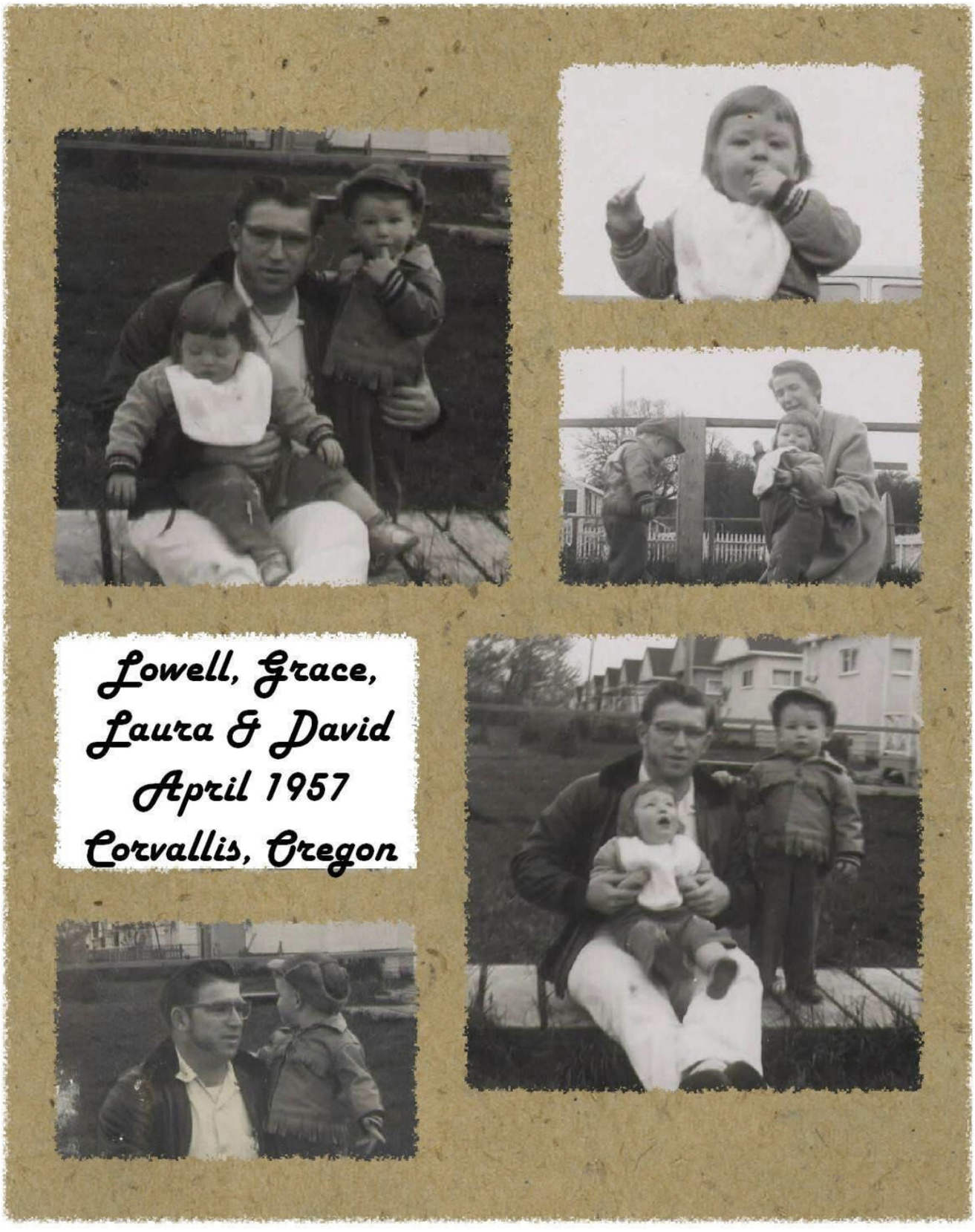
difficult choice to quit football in order to procure a job to help pay for college and his growing family. Lowell began working as a janitor at the college, but his work shift began at 4 a.m.; after a few months, he decided to look off campus for better hours. In February, 1956 Lowell was hired by Simpson Plywood in Albany to work the night shift dry chain behind the dryers (where the plywood sheets were dried before being laminated and pressed). Lowell worked for Simpson's for more than 2 years, 5 nights per week, while he attended college. During the summer, Lowell worked odd jobs (one summer he worked for a local Corvallis handyman; another summer he worked at a sawmill pulling on the green chain -- stacking lumber after it is sawed into logs).

As time went on, Grace and Lowell became acquainted with other students and became involved with the Veterans Club. Some members of that club were living in "married student housing" -- low-cost apartments for married students close to campus -- something Grace and Lowell had been unaware existed. After learning about it from members of the Veterans Club, they added their names to the college's waiting list for available units. Grace and Lowell were offerred a unit in May or June 1956 -- after other families had left for the summer. In the meantime, they continued to live in their apartment on 26th Street.

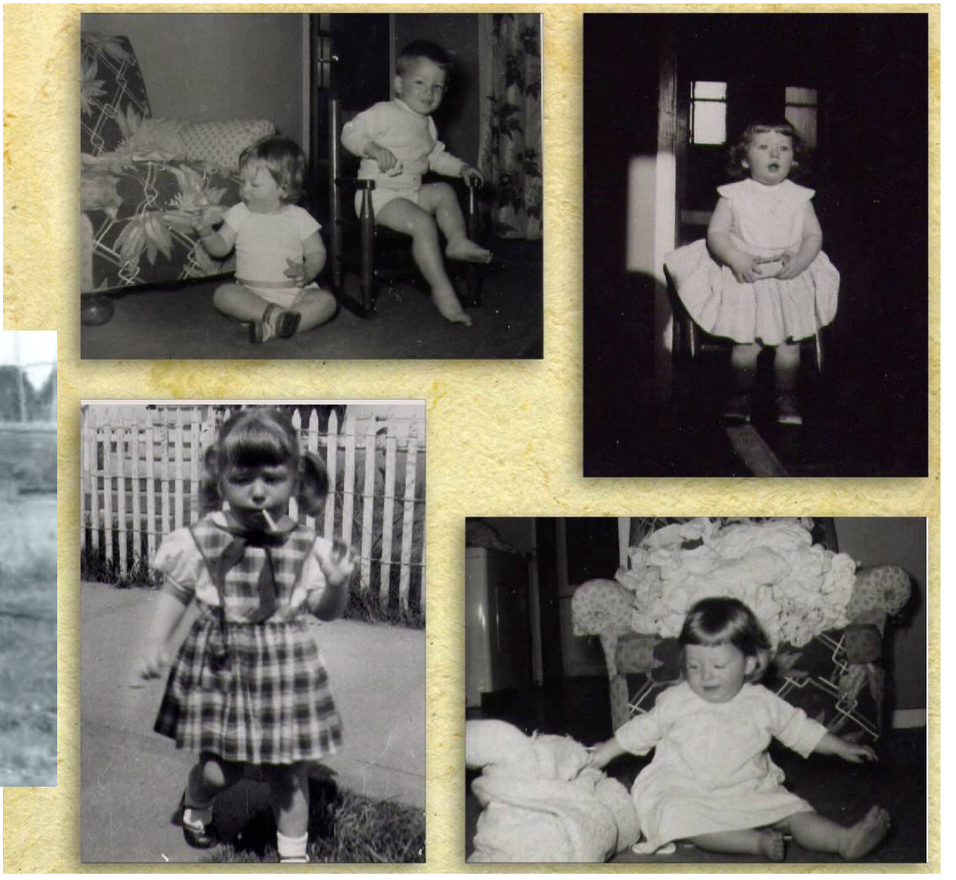
Just before the family moved into married student housing, on March 14, 1956, and right smack in the middle of Lowell's freshman final examination in speech , Laura Denise Cooper was born. Lowell's parents Lawrance and Golda came from their home in Palisade, Nebraska to Corvallis to help Grace out with the

Lawrance & Golda with baby granddaughter Laura; March, 1956

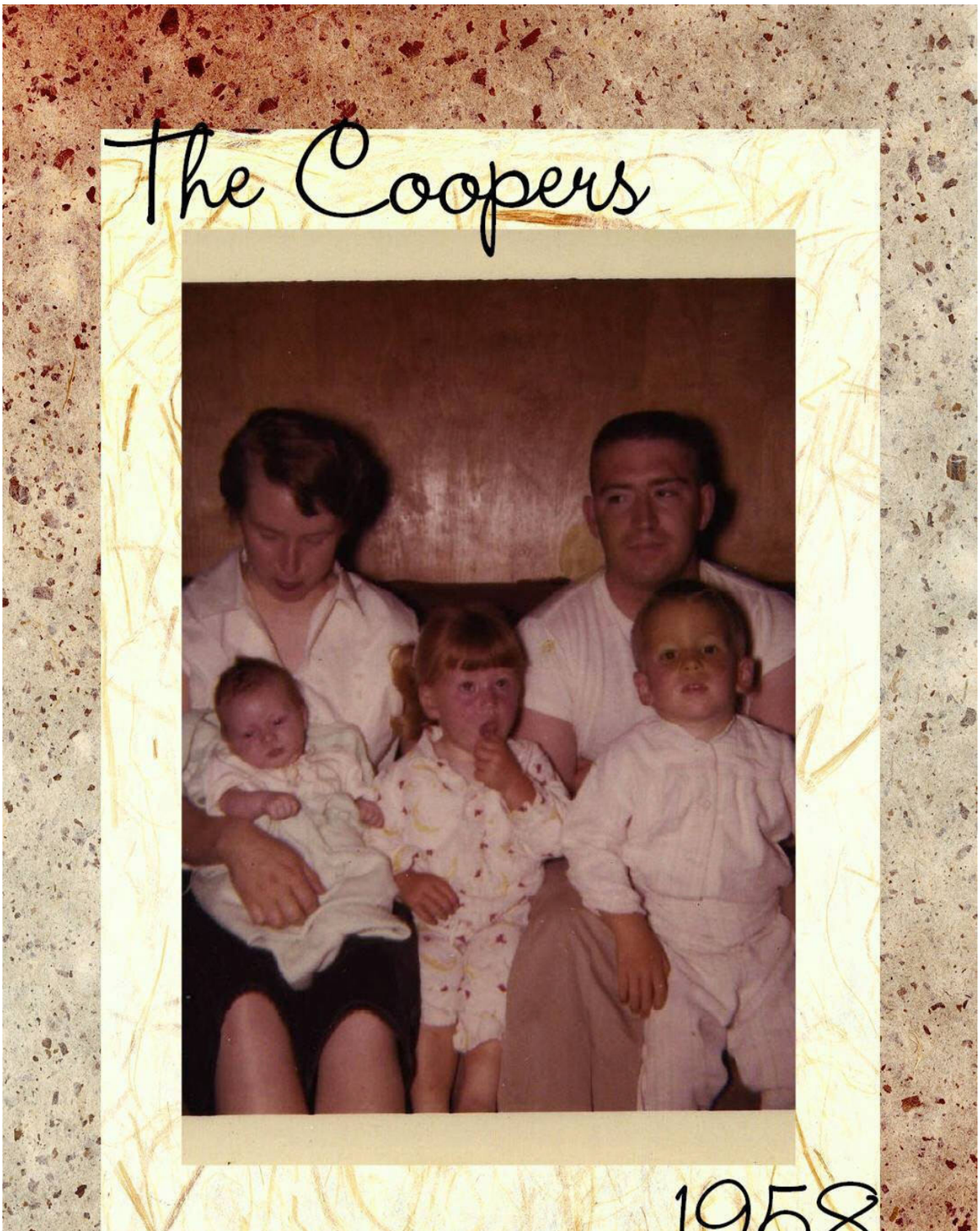
Cooper Family
October 1956


Lowell, Grace,
Laura & David
April 1957
Corvallis, Oregon

David & Laura in Corvallis, circa 1958



Easter, 1958 in Corvallis, Oregon


The Coopers
1958

Photographs 1958 by Muriel Smith at Muriel & Randy's dairy farm in Bridgeport [Falls City], Polk County, Oregon, near Dallas; Lowell -- age 25; Grace -- age 22; David -- age 3; Laura -- age 2; and Elizabeth -- infant.

new baby.

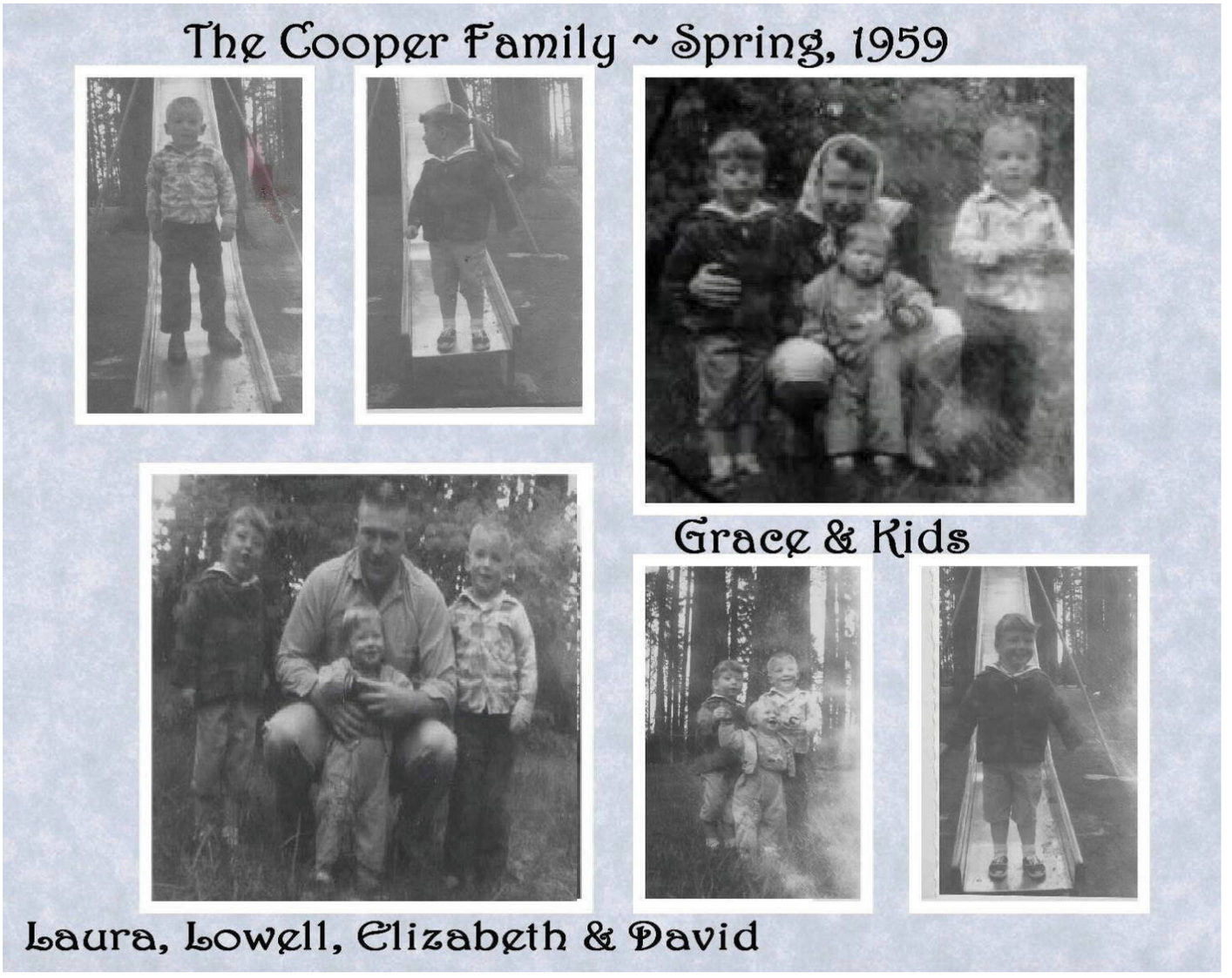
Their third child, Elizabeth Michelle Cooper, was born on April 7, 1958, while Lowell was a junior business major at OSC.

Lowell attended summer school one time, and graduated with his Bachelor's Degree in Business from Oregon State College [now Oregon State University] at the end of Winter Term in March 1959 with a B-Plus average.

On many occasions during Lowell's college days (and thereafter quite often when their children were young), Grace and Lowell packed up the family to go to a dairy farm in Bridgeport, a tiny hamlet outside of Dallas, Polk County, Oregon. The farm was run by Grace's aunt (Grace's mother Dixie's sister) Muriel (Steele) Smith and her husband Randy, along with their son Randy Smith, Jr. & his wife Sandra [Altheide]. Randy & Muriel's daughter Gloria also lived on the farm. The Smith family nicknamed David and Laura "the Campbell

The Smith Family, circa 1949

The Ranch at Grants Pass, Oregon: Randy, Muriel, Gloria & Randy, Jr.

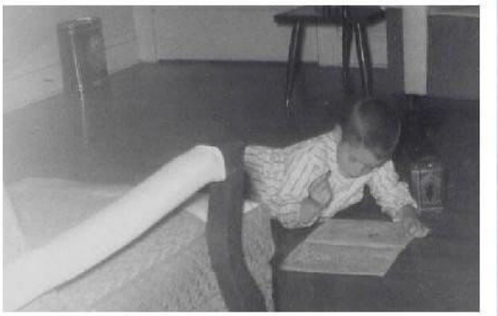


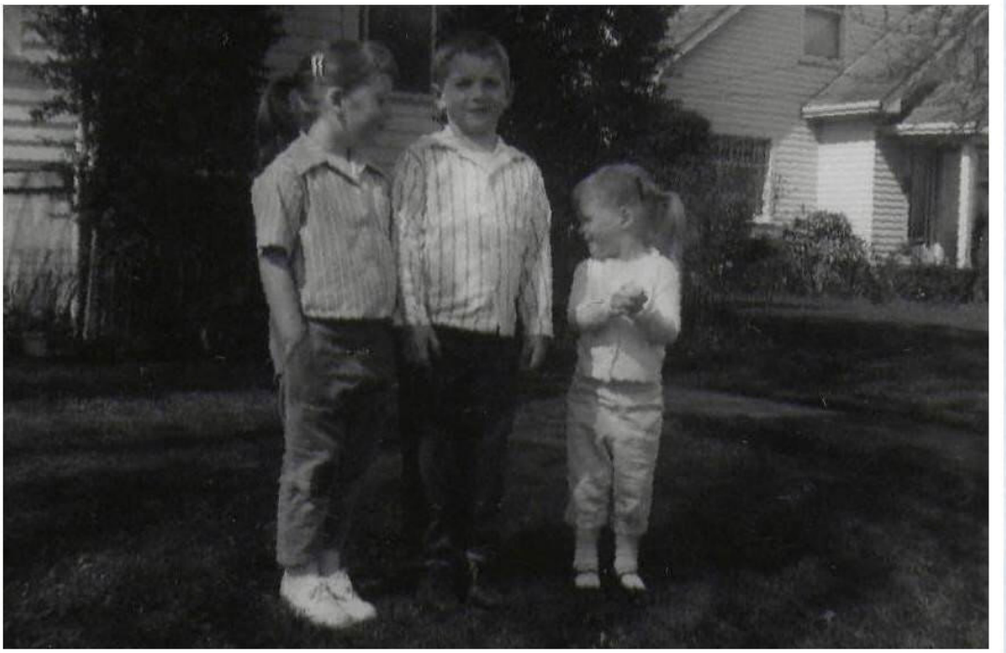
Soup Kids" because of their resemblance to the chubby, cherub-faced "kids" used for marketing on the Campbell Soup Can label. These photos -- taken by the Smith family -- demonstrate why they adopted the nickname. [See picture of ad at right; Actually, the resemblance is quite remarkable -- right down to Laura's red hair, and therefore the nickname is very appropriate, in this author's opinion.]

After Lowell graduated from college, he accepted a position in the accounting department at Brooks Scanlon, a wood-products firm in Bend, Oregon.

Laura in Portland, 1961

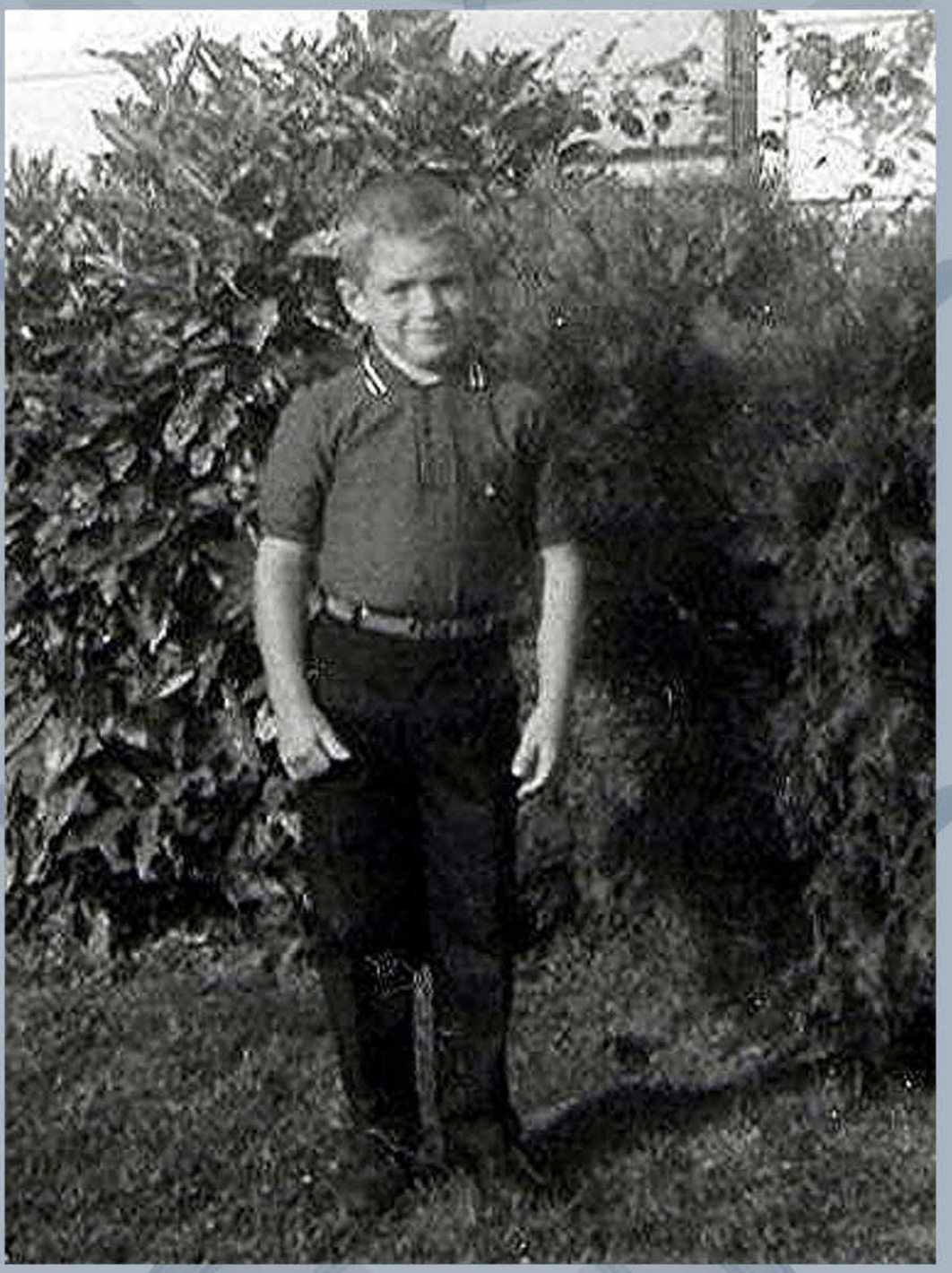
david, laura & elizabeth cooper





1961 in portland, oregon

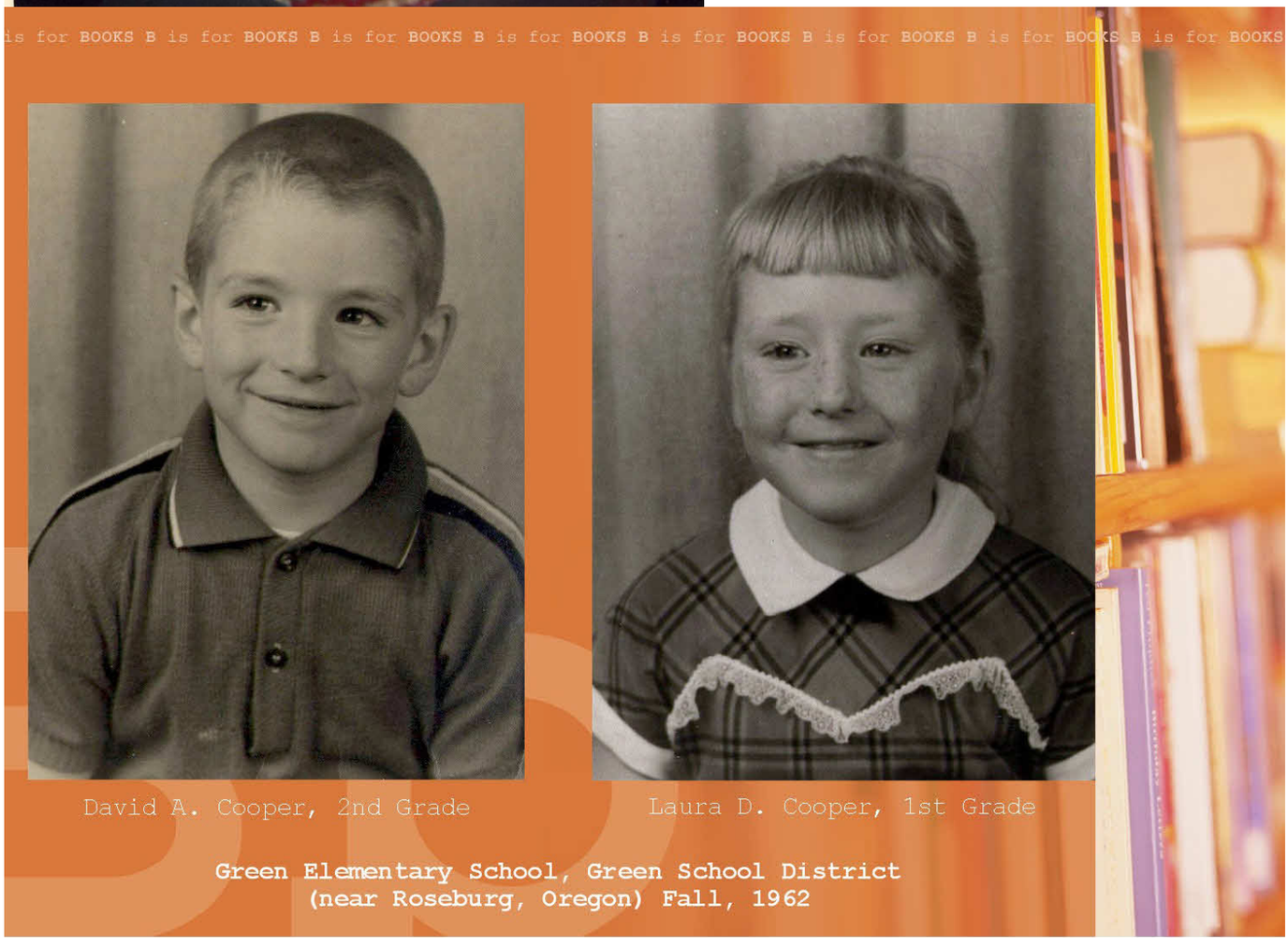
Lowell eventually quit that job, and then enrolled in the Internal Revenue Service tax school to become an IRS tax agent and auditor. As Elizabeth changed from a baby to a toddler, the Coopers decided that they would try one more time for another child and hoped it would be a boy. In 1961, the family was living in Portland, Oregon, where Lowell was enrolled in tax school when the fourth child, Nancy Joan Cooper [NOT a boy!], was born on June 11, 1961. [She would be known as "Joanie," and was actually named for a family friend living in Bend named Joan Evans.]



David's First Day of School

Bethel School District, Eugene, Oregon; September, 1961

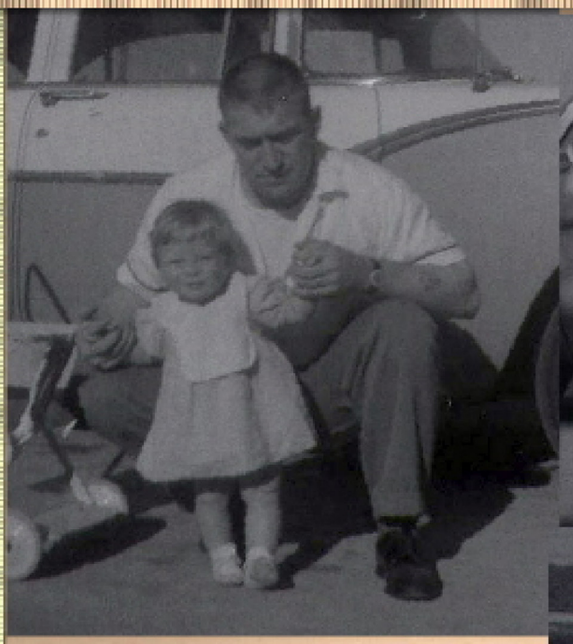
Laura in Eugene, circa 1961-62



The Cooper family lived in the Roseburg area on Easter, 1963. Our home was on Linnell Avenue, in the Green School District, south of Roseburg city limits. Linnell Avenue was located on a steep hill, and the photos were taken in our driveway; our 4-door Ford sedan automobile is in the background of the photos; our neighbor's Ford is parked in their adjacent driveway, just above our house (showing the steepness of the hill). Joanie was still a baby -- she was 1 year old, and just learning to walk. David had just turned 9 on March 20 and Laura 8 on March 14; Liz would be 6 on April 7.

EASTER

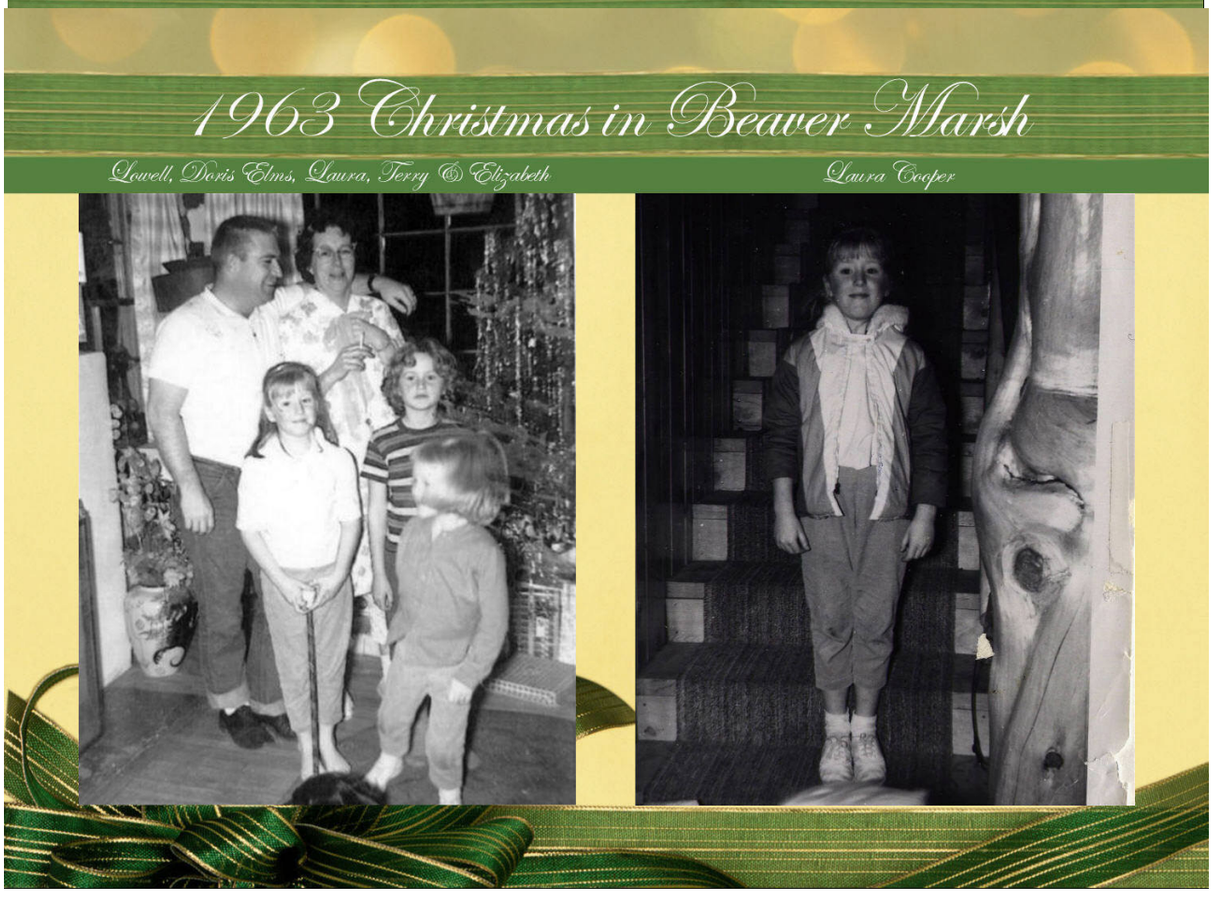
1963



The Cooper Children

Right: August 1963: Lowell & Grace Cooper; Bob & Kay Wells families, Lowell's boyhood friends from Palisade, Nebr.; top -- "Buzzard's Bay", swimming hole on the Umpqua River near Elkton; from left - Grace, Joanie, & David, Cooper, Chrissy Wells, Laura & Lowell Cooper; John Wells, Liz Cooper, David Wells; bottom -- Roseburg on bank next to Cooper house on Linnell Street; from left - John Wells (age 9), Lowell Cooper, David Wells (age 2 or 3), Grace Cooper, Elizabeth Cooper (age 5), Laura Cooper [with doll](age 7), Joanie Cooper (age 2), David Cooper (age 8 -- 10 months younger than John Wells), Chrissy Wells (abt age 4).

1963 Christmas in Beaver Marsh
Laura, David, Elizabeth, Grace & Joanie Cooper


1963 Christmas in Beaver Marsh
Lowell, Doris Elms, Laura, Terry & Elizabeth
Laura Cooper

Scribners in Central Oregon, Christmas 1963

TJ & Renee; Tom Scribner; Grace & Joanie; Phil Scribner

From back left: Bob Scribner, Joanie & Grace Cooper; Pat & David Scribner; TJ & Renee; Mary & Tom Scribner; [Front Left]: David, Laura, Elizabeth Cooper

Lowell finished tax school and was assigned to work as an IRS agent in Eugene in the fall of 1961. That same fall, David began attending school for the first time, in the Bethel School District in the Eugene area. At the end of the school year, the family relocated to Roseburg. Lowell was on good terms with everybody who worked for the IRS, but he got to the point where he did not like what he was doing. The breaking point was one audit he did in Roseburg of a logger. During the summer of 1962 he had to hand the guy a big tax bill, after he had been badly served by his accountant. The so-called "accountant" was somebody who didn't really know what he was doing, and was cheap, and this logger unfortunately got caught by the bad service. The logger

had five kids and was broke, and Lowell had to hand him a big tax bill. Lowell decided right then and there he didn't like what he had to do and went to Eugene to talk to a Special Agent named Lee Davis. He asked Lee where the most tax fraud in the region was at, and Lee told him -- no doubt about it -- the Oregon South Coast. Lowell told Mr. Davis that within a year he would be working as an accountant on the south coast. Grace recalled during the time Lowell worked for the Internal Revenue Service, that it was almost impossible to make friends.

Lowell started looking for other work, and by November, 1962 Lowell was working for Bob Coubro -- an accountant in Roseburg. Lowell also started selling sewing machines door-to-door on the side. Lowell was making pretty good money with the sewing machines, so when his brother Rex came up from San Francisco [he had left his wife and kids in San Francisco], Lowell introduced him and also got him a job selling sewing machines.

Much to Lowell's horror, Rex absconded with his trunk full of sewing machines as well as all the money he had collected in the sales, and never came back. Lowell also began to discover that Rex had been writing checks around Roseburg that were no good. Because the checks were written to people to whom Rex had been introduced by Lowell, Lowell felt he had the obligation to cover the checks Rex had written, and he and Grace were completely broke. They refused to go on any welfare programs or declare bankruptcy. Lowell and Grace moved to Elkton during the summer of 1963 [shortly after the photo below was taken]. Lowell had bought Grace a dryer, and after the bad checks they couldn't pay for it, so it was repossessed. Grace and Lowell were in deep financial trouble -- and knew it. At one point, the family purchased a 10-lb. bag of pancake flour as the basis for the family's diet. The family was too proud to accept any government assistance for its financial dilemma, and they were determined to pay every dime of every debt they owed, but they were truly in deep financial trouble -- through no fault of their own (other than trusting relatives)

.

Grace knew that if she moved the family to Elkton that at least she could make sure that there was plenty to eat -- the Taylors always had a large garden and other friends would help out as well. Grace would work hard to can and preserve everything she could, and somehow they would make it. So, the Coopers arrived in Elkton in the summer of 1963. The family rented a small house on the hill in town, and David and Laura began attending school at Elkton elementary school in the fall of 1963 -- David in third grade, and Laura in second.

Lowell began looking for work, and in one of his job searches, Lowell drove up the coast highway from Elkton to Reedsport -- 37 miles away, toward that infamous South Coast. Lowell convinced a local CPA [Gaylord Vaughn] into giving him some bookkeeping work. Lowell commuted to that job every day for a year.

That Christmas, the Cooper family joined Grace's family in Central Oregon at Beaver Marsh [near Chemult], at the home of Doris and Conley Elms -- Grace's stepsister. The other Scribner siblings also joined them. [Author note: I remember the A-Frame motel that the Elms' had built alongside the Willamette Highway near Crater Lake; each family stayed in one of the units, and the Elms Family itself lived in a large log house on the property. I also remember the pump organ that Doris kept in the log home.]

Having seen Grace's family at Christmas, during the summer of 1964, Lowell and Grace packed up all of the kids and drove the whole family in their Ford Comet to visit Lowell's parents in Palisade, Nebraska. After the family arrived hom from that trip, they moved to Reedsport to be closer to Lowell's work. Lowell and Grace rented an old 2-story house at 1031 Hawthorne Avenue owned by the McDonald family in the flood-prone section of Reedsport located north of the State Highway Bridge.

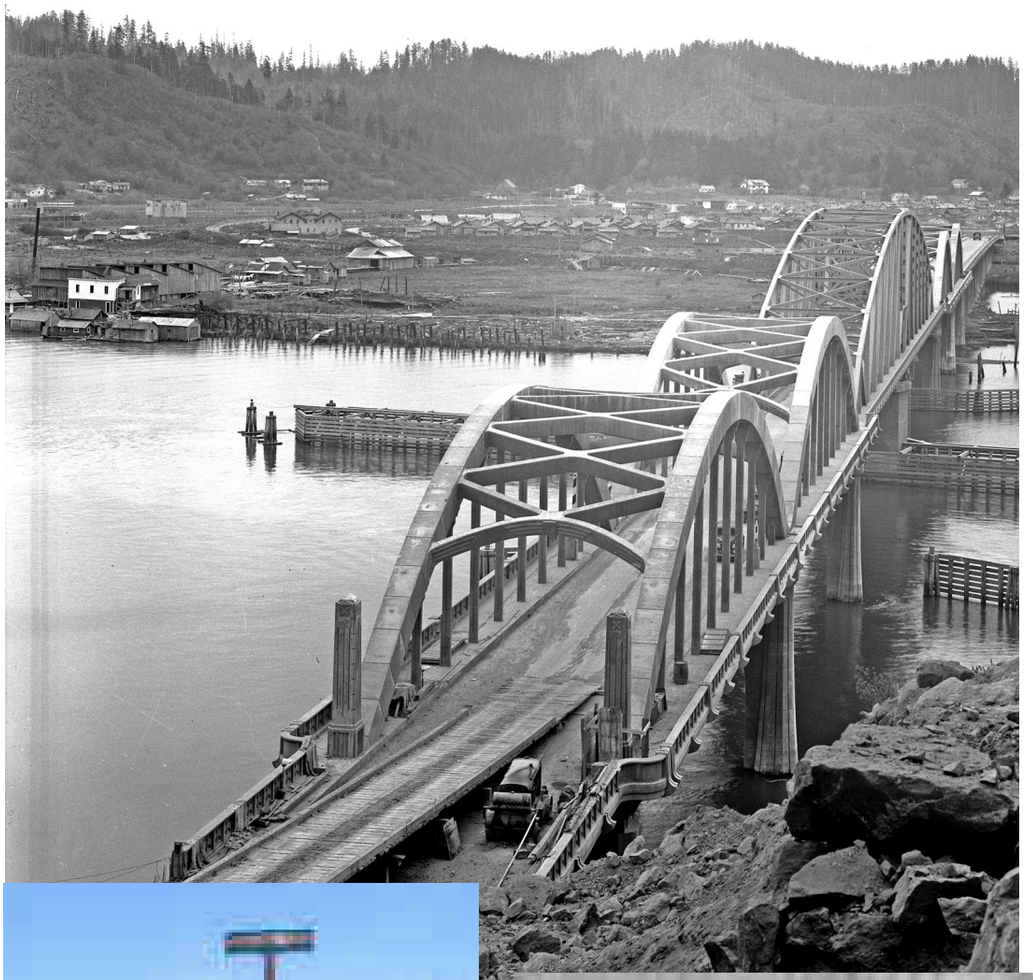
Murphy's law was well known to the Cooper family: the Coopers moved to Reedsport only a few months before a hundred-year flood during Christmas 1964. The weather event began on December 19th through a record-

breaking rain storm, accompanied by unusually warm temperatures. For example, at Government Camp, in the Cascades (elevation 3,900 feet), the 55 inches of snow on the frozen ground on the 20th contained around 5.44 inches of water. Twenty-four hours later, rain had compacted the snow to a depth of 45 inches with an additional 1.57 inches of water. Most people did not worry; rain had fallen on snow packs before. But this time the rain did not stop. In the next 48 hours another 9 inches of rain fell at Government Camp, melting all but 6 inches of the snow. New December record 3- and 4-day precipitation totals were established at many locations, some of them at stations with 75-100 years of record. Many places reported 2 to 3 times the December monthly normal precipitation in a 5-day period. Eventually the snowpack collapsed and immediately, the mass of rain water mixed with melting snow began to move into drainage streams. This, in combination with the ceaseless rains, greatly increased the water level in streams and rivers, with some of them 50 percent higher than any levels measured before. The next day, Dorena Dam could no longer hold back the water and surged over the dam at a depth of 8 feet. Water flowed over the Cottage Grove Dam so forcefully that people living below had to be evacuated and moved to homes and shelters. In one case, 18 children were all brought to a single house; the family living there was not aware that this was happening until they woke up the next morning. Thousands of people had to evacuate their homes.

Just when it seemed that the situation could not get worse, the storm reintensified. Even more heavy rains fell on the 25th through the 29th. The already densely saturated ground could hold no more water; the result was mud and debris slides and even more flooding of streams. Many highways and roads were closed and streams were dammed. In Mapleton, a mud slide buried several buildings and between 25 and 30 cars as well as much of the town. Because the Umpqua River is fed by melting snow from the Cascade Range, most of the water in Douglas County drains into the Umpqua River -- which all flows right past Reedsport and out into Winchester Bay. (See photo to right.) On the lower Umpqua, the town of Reedsport was almost completely covered with 10 feet of water. Homes were flooded, bridges, wood piles, and lawn furniture were carried away, trees were uprooted, and roads were destroyed all over Oregon, southern Washington, most of Idaho, and northern California. Interestingly, many old bridges remained intact during the storm, even when struck by logs and other debris, yet many of the newer ones broke quickly and with relatively little force. The flood also obliterated the existing Reedsport town dike and consumed the entire first story of the Cooper family home.

As an interesting aside, the waters reached the fish hatchery and overflowed the fish troughs along the Umpqua River. Hundreds of thousands of small-mouth bass were introduced into the Umpqua River, and according to Umpqua fishing reports became the most abundant fish in the Umpqua River. Umpqua fishing reports now claim that the small-mouth bass have replaced the chub population of the Umpqua River in Oregon.

Laura: “I have very distinct childhood memories of that flood. All of the kids were home from school when we got the telephone call from dad telling us to tell mom the flood was coming. She send us all outside to the front porch and had us shout to her to tell her what the water level was. (Actually, she probably did that to get us out of her hair as she madly moved precious family things to the upper story of the home to keep them safe from the water. For the rest of her life, she regretted some of the albums and other things that were lost in that flood.) She also quickly stocked the upper story with food and other items that would be necessary for short-term survival. -- I remember subsisting on Peanut Butter and Crackers. We invited our neighbors across the street to join us: the Wright Family had a small one-story home and had two small children. So, Dave & Bonnie Wright, along with their boys Brad & Kip were invited to our home to stay because we had a second story out of the floodwaters. As the floodwaters came in, we would shout to mom and tell her which step had been covered. We shouted “it’s at the first step! It’s at the second step! It was almost like a game for us. Finally, as the water reached the top of the porch, she sent us upstairs. On the second story of our home we had three bedrooms which were normally occupied by the four children (Liz and Joanie shared the largest room, which was open to the stairway. The first night of



Left: View of Reedsport from Umpqua River Bridge showing normal river level; when the water rose, it had nowhere else to go but Reedsport.

Below right: 1964 flood photo.

Below Left: Sign showing high-water mark of Eel River in what used to be downtown Weott (now all that is left is the sign).

Laura Denise Cooper, 4th Grade

The Cooper Kids; Reedsport, Oregon 1965-1966

David Allen Cooper, 5th Grade

Elizabeth Michele Cooper, 2nd Grade

Above: Cooper Family Portrait taken circa 1965 by R. Rochon, Reedsport, OR; [back] Grace [age 29], Laura [age 9], David [age 10], Lowell [age 32]; [front] Liz [age 7] & Joanie [age 4].

the flood, we packed two entire families into those three small bedrooms. I remember the experience: there was floodwater in our house and you could sit on the toilet and dangle your feet in the water... Now as an adult I realize how treacherous that situation was, how dirty the water must have been around the toilet and how dangerous it was for us to be using the electricity upstairs -- but at the time we were blithely naieve because we really had no choice. Eventually, somebody came with a boat and rescued us. I distinctly remember seeing that boat with its bow sticking throug our living room front door! We were all taken to the high school in the upper section of town on dry ground and given tetanous and other shots and then taken to the home of the local Esselstrom family who owned the cable TV company. That home made a big impression on me because they had several television sets in different rooms and seemed "rich" to me. On Christmas morning, we were warned not to expect anything because our presents had been washed away. Nevertheless, on Christmas morning, were were met with the spectacle of brand new bicycles for each of us! Years later I was told that the host family had generously purchased them for us in order to "rescue"

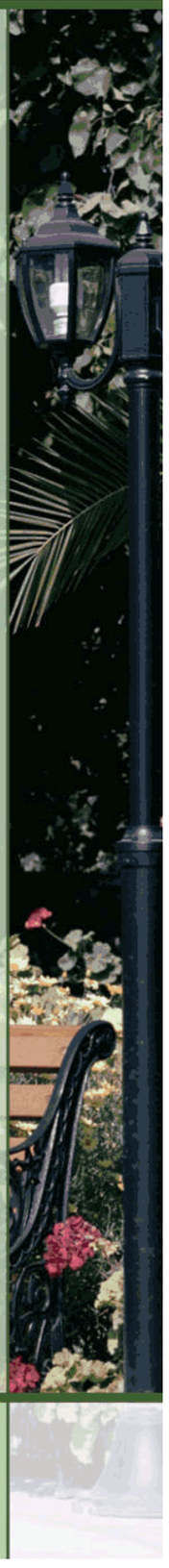
Reedsport, 1966-1967

David Allean Cooper, 6th Grade

Laura Denise Cooper, 6th Grade

Elizabeth Michele Cooper, 3rd grade

Nancy Joan Cooper, Kindergarten



Reedsport: 1967-1968

David Allen Cooper, 7th Grade

Laura Denise Cooper, 6th Grade

Elizabeth Michele Cooper, 4th Grade

Nancy Joan Cooper, 1st Grade

our Christmas. I always loved that blue "Hollywood" Schwinn bike."

What started out as a disaster for the family -- the house had been completely submerged by the Umpqua River, and untold family treasures were lost -- actually turned into a bit of luck. The FEMA disaster loans the family were given allowed Grace and Lowell to get back on their feet financially. As Lowell worked for Mr. Vaughn, he developed solid working relationships with some of his clients. In fact, Lowell was responsible for talking several clients into staying with the business after they threatened to quit, including Sam Wigle, among others. One of Gay Vaughn's clients was George DeCloedt -- the collector. Lowell and Grace became good friends with George; in order to help them, George got hold of the creditors and they worked out payment plans, and all the bills got paid. The Coopers remained loyal friends with the DeCloedt's for years because of the great help George had given them.

After working for Mr. Vaughn for a while, Lowell realized he was doing a lion's share of the hard work, and that Mr. Vaughn was not exactly ethical or "straight" in what he did for his clients. Lowell recalls that he and Gay had been out drinking one night, and Lowell asked him for a raise and had had words. The next morning Lowell arrived -- it was August 1, 1965 -- and Gay handed him a check, which represented his pay for the entire month of August and told him to leave. Lowell told Gay he would be taking some clients with him; Gay said no. Lowell told him to pick up the phone and call some clients, and named names including Sam Wigle and George DeCloedt. Sam Wigle told Gay that "if Cooper was leaving, he was going with him." Others said the same thing. After a while,

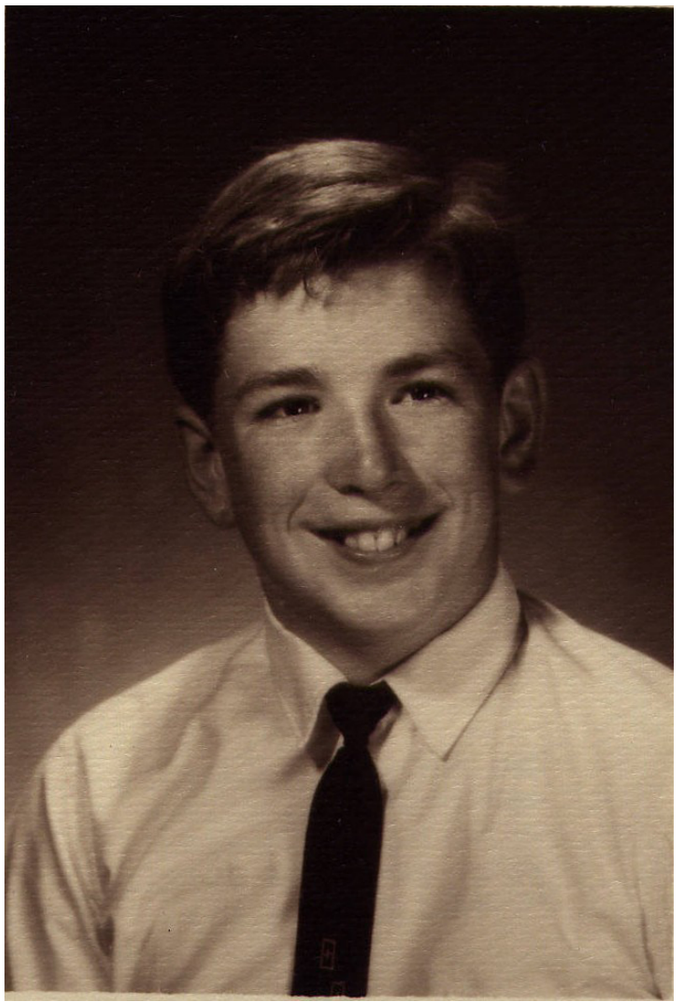
Reedsport: 1968-1969

David Allen Cooper, 8th Grade

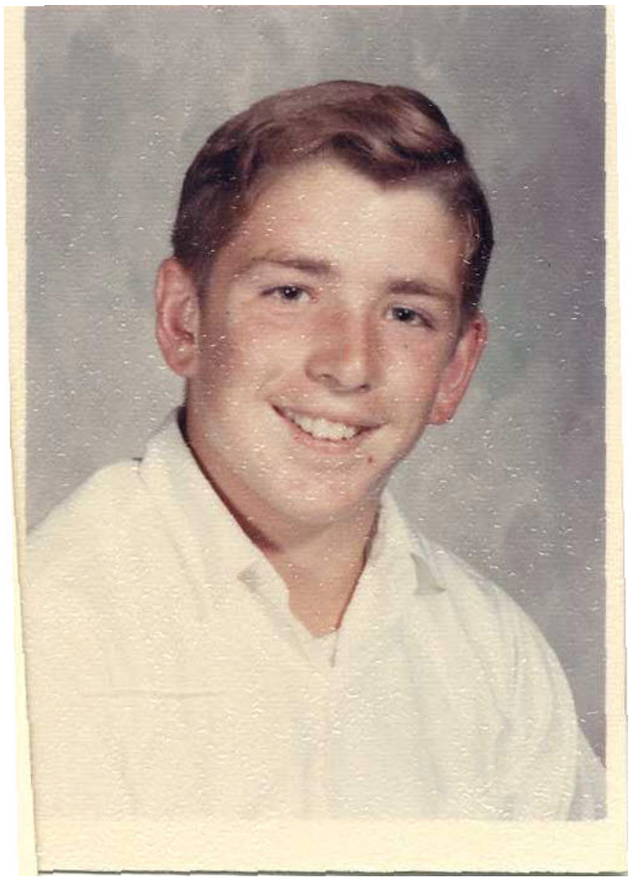
Laura Denise Cooper, 7th Grade

Elizabeth Michele Cooper, 5th Grade

Nancy Joan Cooper, 2nd Grade



David Allen Cooper, Left - 8th Grade Graduation Photograph; Pioneer School; Below - Freshman year, Reedsport High School, Reedsport, Oregon 1969



Gay asked Lowell whose books he wanted to take, and Lowell went through the client list and picked out some clients and took their books with him. That day, Lowell came home and announced to Grace and the family "we're in business." He was going to become Gaylord Vaughn's competitor. Thus, Lowell struck out on his own, with Grace to help him in the office.

The local bank was a branch of the Umpqua National Bank, and the manager was Bill Humphries. One day when Lowell was in the bank, Bill told him that Gay was his friend, and that he was going to run Lowell out of town. Lowell told him he didn't think so. At about this time, the Pacific Security Bank had just opened in Reedsport, and was a small independent bank. Lowell went to the President of the new bank -- Lou Lorenz -- and told him he was going to bring in a lot of clients. For years, Lowell brought all the banking business for his clients to that bank, and encouraged his other clients to swap banks, and had a very good relationship with the bank. For years, Lowell would also continue to remind Bill Humphries that he was "still here." Bill did not like that at all; years later, Bill Humphries lost his job and went to Pacific Security Bank with his hat in his hand looking for a job. Again, Lowell reminded him that he was "still here."

Because of Lowell's knowledge of the methods and people who worked for the Internal Revenue Service,

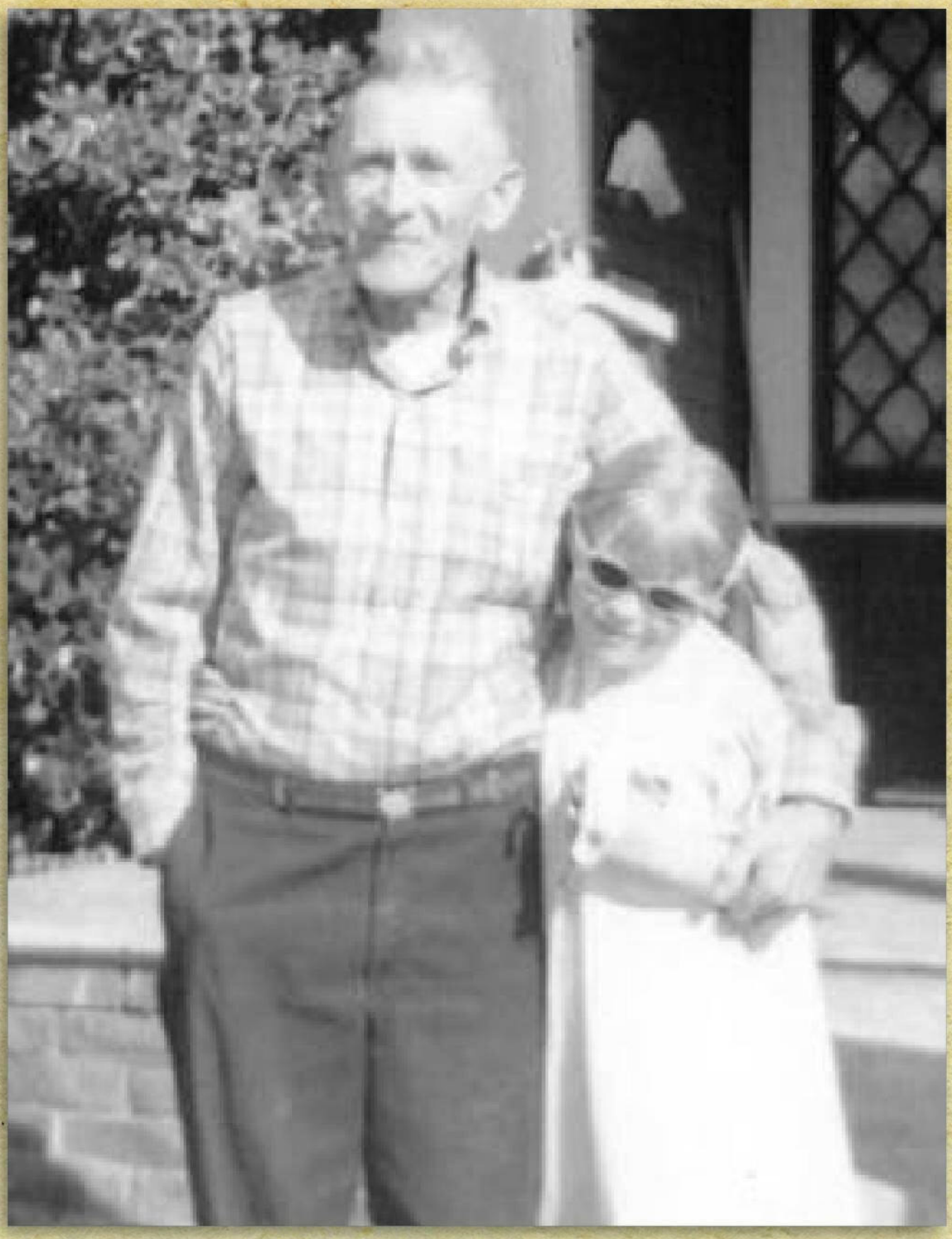
Reedsport: 1969-1970

Elizabeth Michele Cooper, 6th Grade

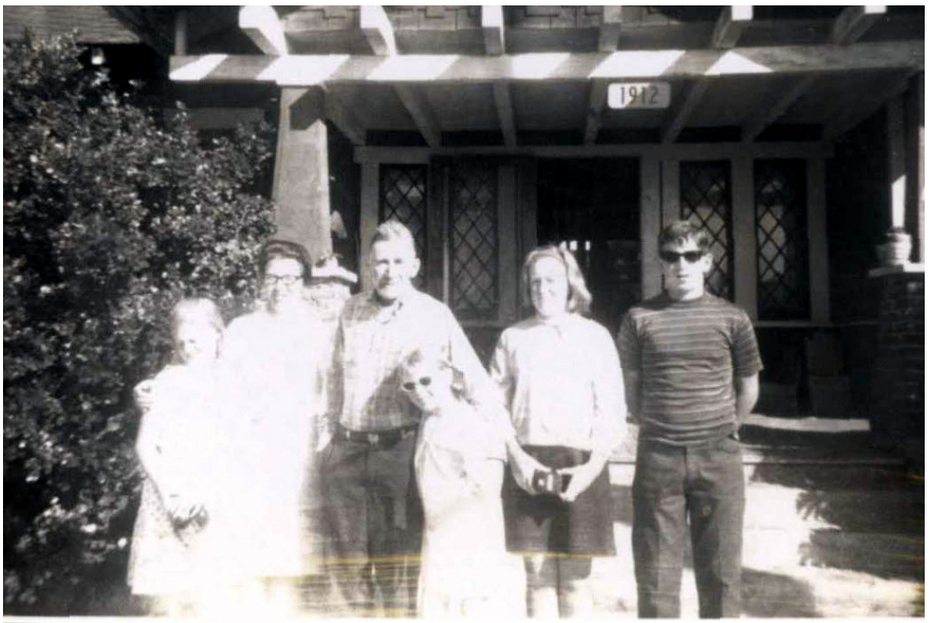
Laura Denise Cooper, 8th Grade

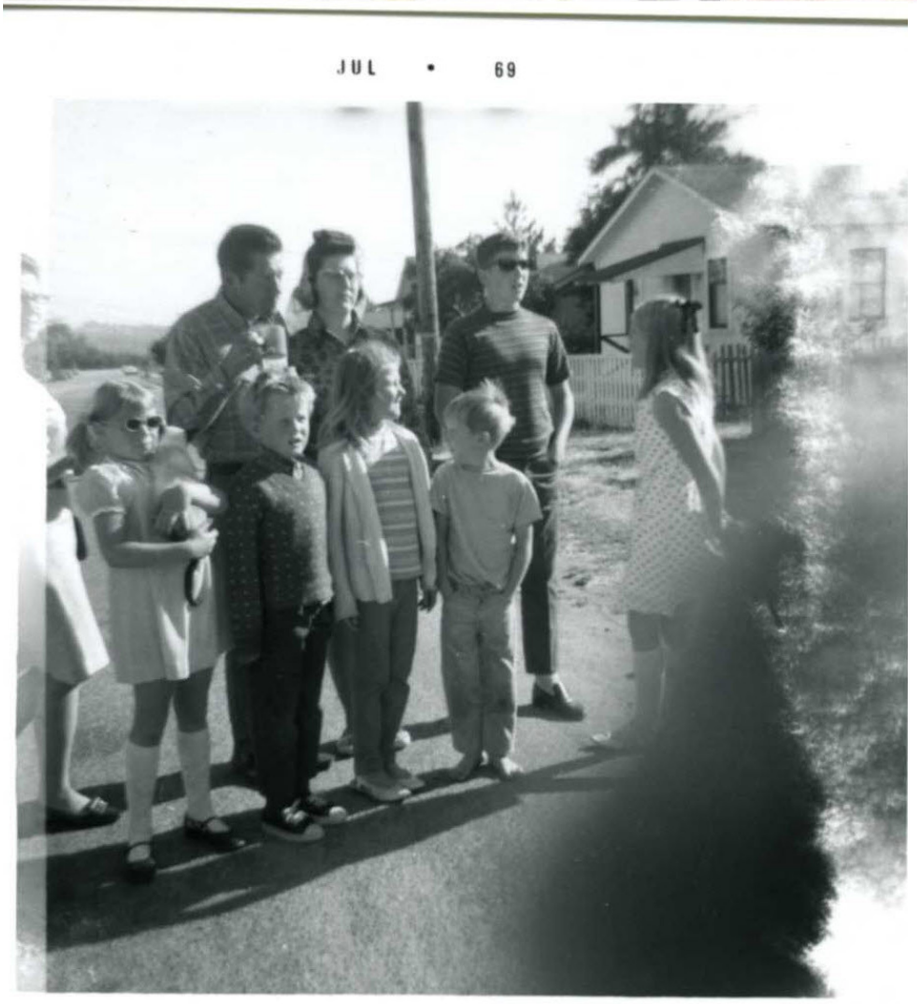
Nancy Joan Cooper, 3rd Grade

Tom Scribner & Joanie Cooper



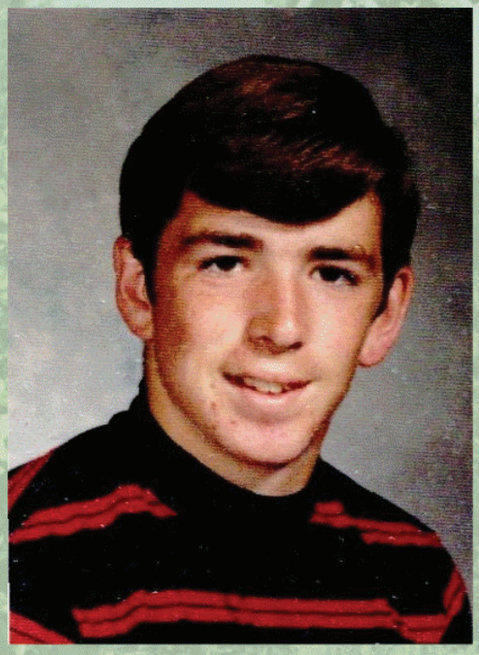
Santa Cruz, Summer 1969





July 1969: The Coopers visit Grandpa Tom Scribner [at 1912 Mission Street in Santa Cruz] and their Scribner Cousins -- the family of Robert N. Scribner; Top from left - Elizabeth [age 11], Grace, Tom, Joanie [age 8], Laura [age 13] & David [age 14]. Below from left: front: Grace, Joanie, William [Bill], Barbara & John Scribner; Liz Cooper; in back, Robert & Pat Scribner, David Cooper.

Reedsport, 1970-1971



David Allen Cooper, RHS Soph

Laura D. Cooper, RHS Frosh

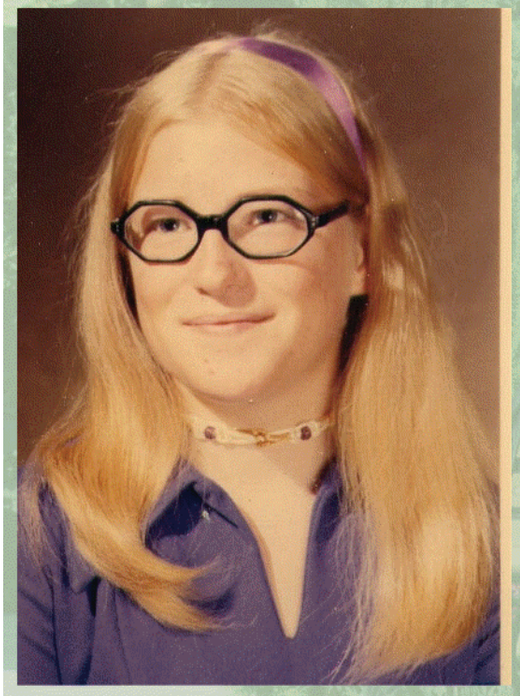
Elizabeth Michele Cooper, 7th Grade

Nancy Joan Cooper, 4th Grade

Reedsport, 1971-1972

David Allen Cooper, RHS Jr

Laura Denise Cooper, RHS Soph



Elizabeth Michele Cooper, 8th Grade

Nancy Joan Cooper, 5th Grade

Grace and Lowell were members of the local Masonic Lodges; Lowell was a Mason and a Shriner; Grace was active in Eastern Star.

he was able to help his clients in some rather extraordinary ways. The owner of the local Shell gas station at one point had his station seized and closed by the IRS; the business was sealed. Lowell managed to convince the IRS agents that the client would meet a payment plan and they agreed to unseal the business -- a highly irregular move, but wrought by the good reputation Lowell had with the agents.

Lowell and Grace together began building an accounting practice from the ground up. The Coopers rented office space in an office building in Reedsport above the Bob Sund real estate agent office. Lowell took the CPA exam many times, but could not pass the auditing portion, and was therefore only eligible for a P.A. designation -- a matter that was a constant source of irritation for him (he regarded himself as a better accountant than most practicing accountants). Grace began to learn accounting from Lowell bit-by-bit, and over the years was able to do more and more of the work. Lowell continued to expand, and eventually enlarged their office space above the Bob Sund office. Their practice was successful, and in 1968 they built their own home in a new subdivision in Reedsport at 409 Westmont Street. In 1976, Lowell suffered a heart attack. In order to hold the family business together,

Mildred [Millie] Waltman, Lowell & Grace Cooper at Winchester Bay beach, circa 1972

Mildred Waltman is Lowell's aunt, the younger sister of Lowell's father Lawrance; Willie is Mildred's friend and traveling companion from Kansas

Grace Cooper at home

Millie & Willie [Swayze] in front of the Cooper's new Cadillac; July 1982, AM of departure

In 1972, Lowell's aunt Mildred [Millie] Waltman came to visit from Kansas with a traveling companion; Mildred was the widow of Sarge Waltman; she was the younger sister of Lowell's father Lawrance Cooper, and had recently retired from a teaching career in El Dorado, Kansas.

Grace dug in and learned everything she could about the practice. The Coopers bought their own office building on Ranch Road, and eventually Lowell took in a business partner (Rodney McCullough) who was already a CPA. With McCullough's instruction and her effort, Grace became a learned accountant and accrued enough credit hours to apply for and receive her own CPA license from the State of Oregon. That license was earned in 1988, shortly before her death -- an accomplishment of some moment since she had never earned a college degree. This license was something for which she and her family were justly proud.

In early 1989, Grace was diagnosed with endometrial carcinoma. The disease quickly spread, and she succumbed to death only six weeks later, at 1:14 A.M. on June 6, 1989, at Lower Umpqua Hospital in Reedsport. She wa interred in the Reedsport Masonic Cemetery, between 2 empty plots (one intended for her daughter Elizabeth at a later date [her husband Jean Marc Ohlmann wishes to be buried in France], and one intended for daughter Laura at a later date; Lowell will be added to the group after cremation).

Reedsport, Oregon
The Cooper Family
August 9, 1986:
Joanie Cooper &
Bill Frakes'
Wedding Day
Leanne, David, Joanie, Bill, Liz, Jean Marc
Katie, Lowell, Travis, Grace, Kevin, Laura, Lydia

Thanksgiving Weekend, 1988

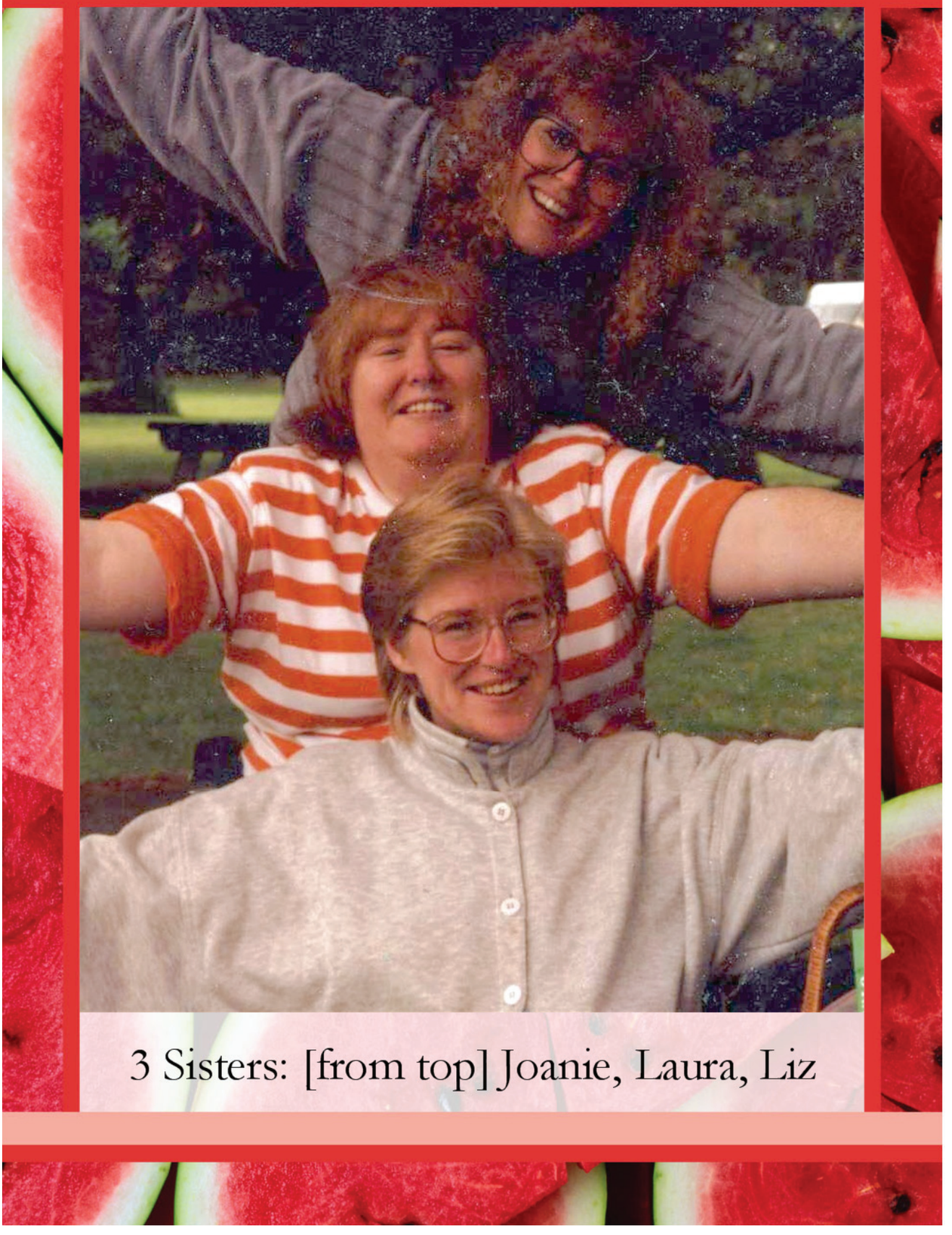
At the Palm Springs Airport
Front [L to R] Grace & Lizzy Frakes; Leanne, Travis, Katie, Liz & Frank;
Jean -Marc & Lydia; Back [L to R] Lowell, David & Kevin

All of Lowell and Grace's children went on to college. David graduated from the University of Oregon (after receiving a golf scholarship his freshman year) with a degree in business/accounting, and established his own accounting practice in Palm Springs, California. He married Leanne Marie Newell, of Joshua Tree, California. Laura graduated from the University of Oregon with a major in general science and secondary teaching certificates in most science subjects, and eventually finished law school with distinction at the University of Washington in Seattle. She lived for a decade in Arlington, Virginia and served as Counsel to the Chairman of the Interstate Commerce Commission, and thereafter practiced law as Outside Counsel for the National Multiple Sclerosis Society nationwide (through the New York office). After retiring due to health issues, she moved home to Eugene, Oregon in 2000, where she still remains. Elizabeth graduated from Oregon State University (formerly Oregon State College) with a degree in electrical engineering, and worked for several private companies on software development projects before she became a database administrator engineer for the City of Portland (Oregon) and then Multnomah County (Oregon). In 2004, she began attending law school at the Northwestern School of Law at Lewis & Clark College in Portland, Oregon, with an eye towards computer patent work upon graduation. She married Jean Marc Ohlmann (who she met at OSU), a french citizen from Alsace, who worked for many years as a mechanical engineer for Northwest Natural Gas in Portland, Oregon. Nancy Joan ("Joanie") began college at OSU, but dropped out. She eventually went to secretarial school and became self-taught about computer applications and networks, and began her own computer firm in the Seattle/Tacoma area. Her career and business progressed so far that eventually she was bought out and rose to the position of Chief Operating

Crabbing In Winchester Bay, Oregon; November 1980

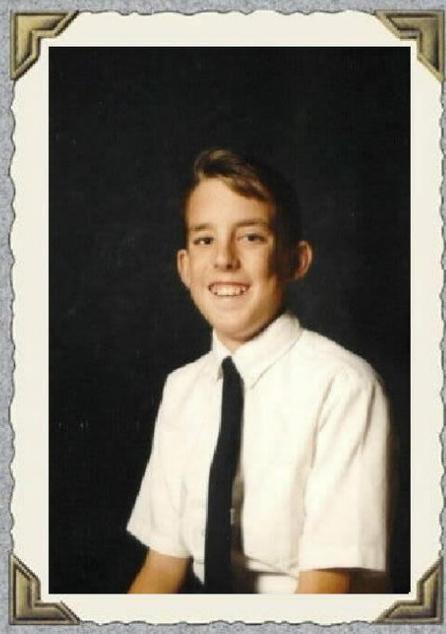
Aboard Lowell's boat. From Left: David & Leanne; Jean Marc Ohlmann; Lowell [in rear]; Joanie & Grace Cooper [Photo taken by Liz Cooper]

July 11, 1992; Umpqua Lighthouse State Park in Winchester Bay



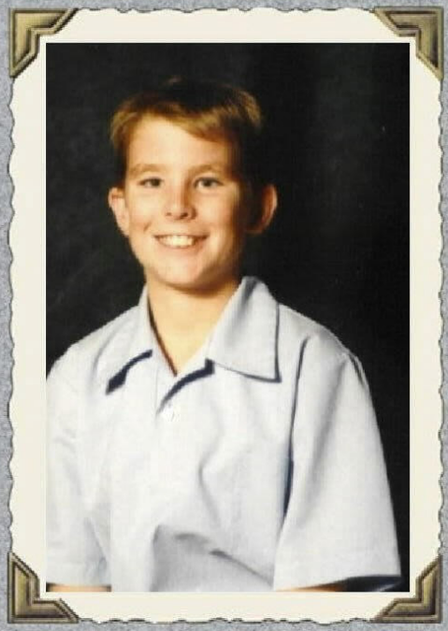
3 Sisters: [from top] Joanie, Laura, Liz

The Cooper Kids
Fall 1995, Our Lady of the Desert School, Yucca Valley, California



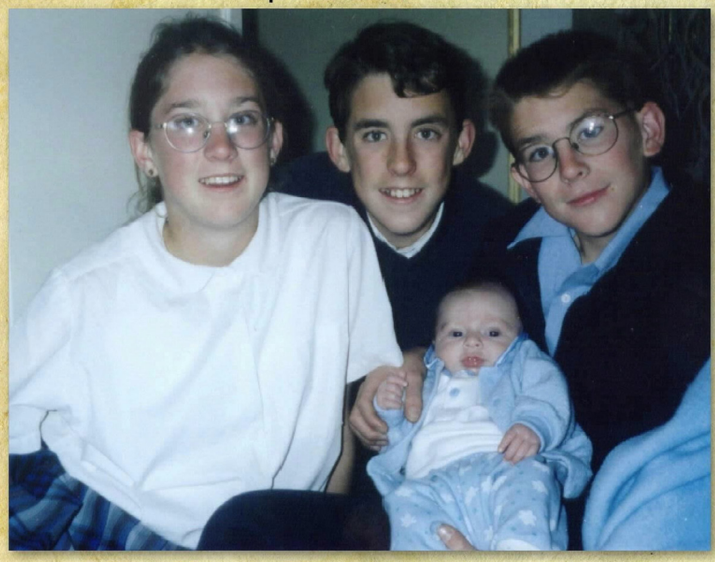
Travis, 9th Grade

Katie, 7th Grade

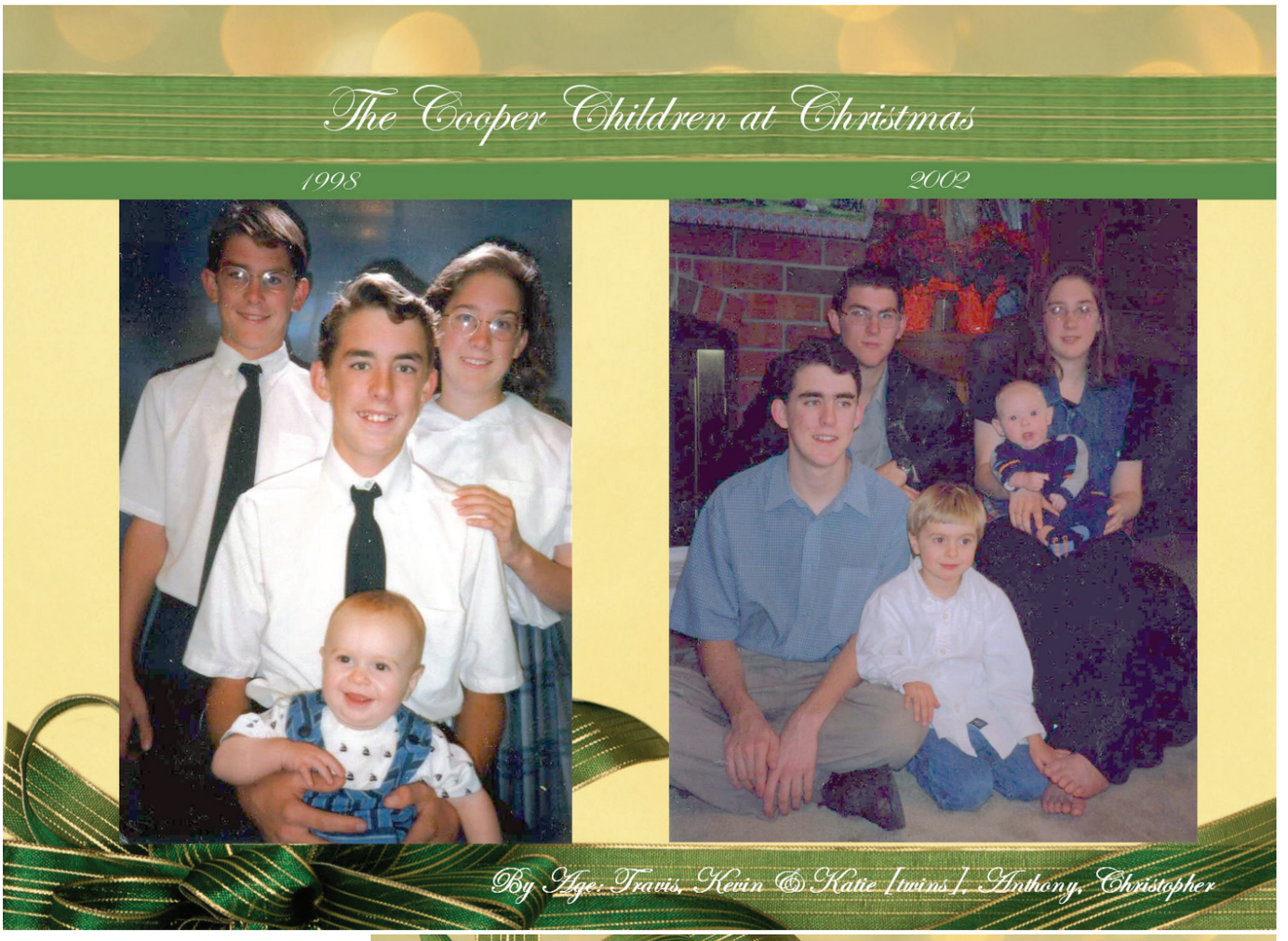


Kevin, 7th Grade

Cooper Kids1998



[L to R] Katie, Travis, Kevin; baby Anthony

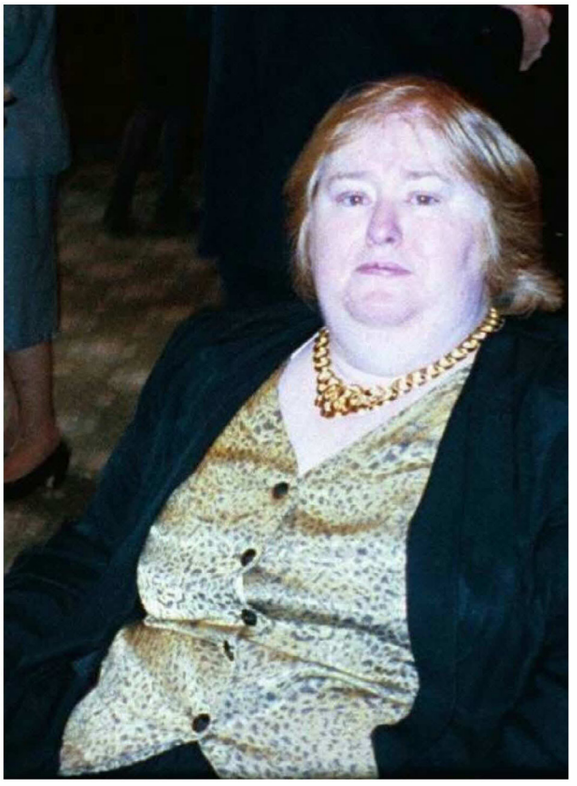

The Cooper Children at Christmas
1998
2002
By Age: Travis, Kevin & Katie [twins], Anthony, Christopher

A Cooper Christmas
2003: [From left] Katie, Christopher, Anthony, Kevin, Travis

Laura Denise Cooper, August 1995

Laura & Lowell Cooper at Reception Following Laura's Admission to the Supreme Court Bar, U.S. Supreme Court

April 6, 1998

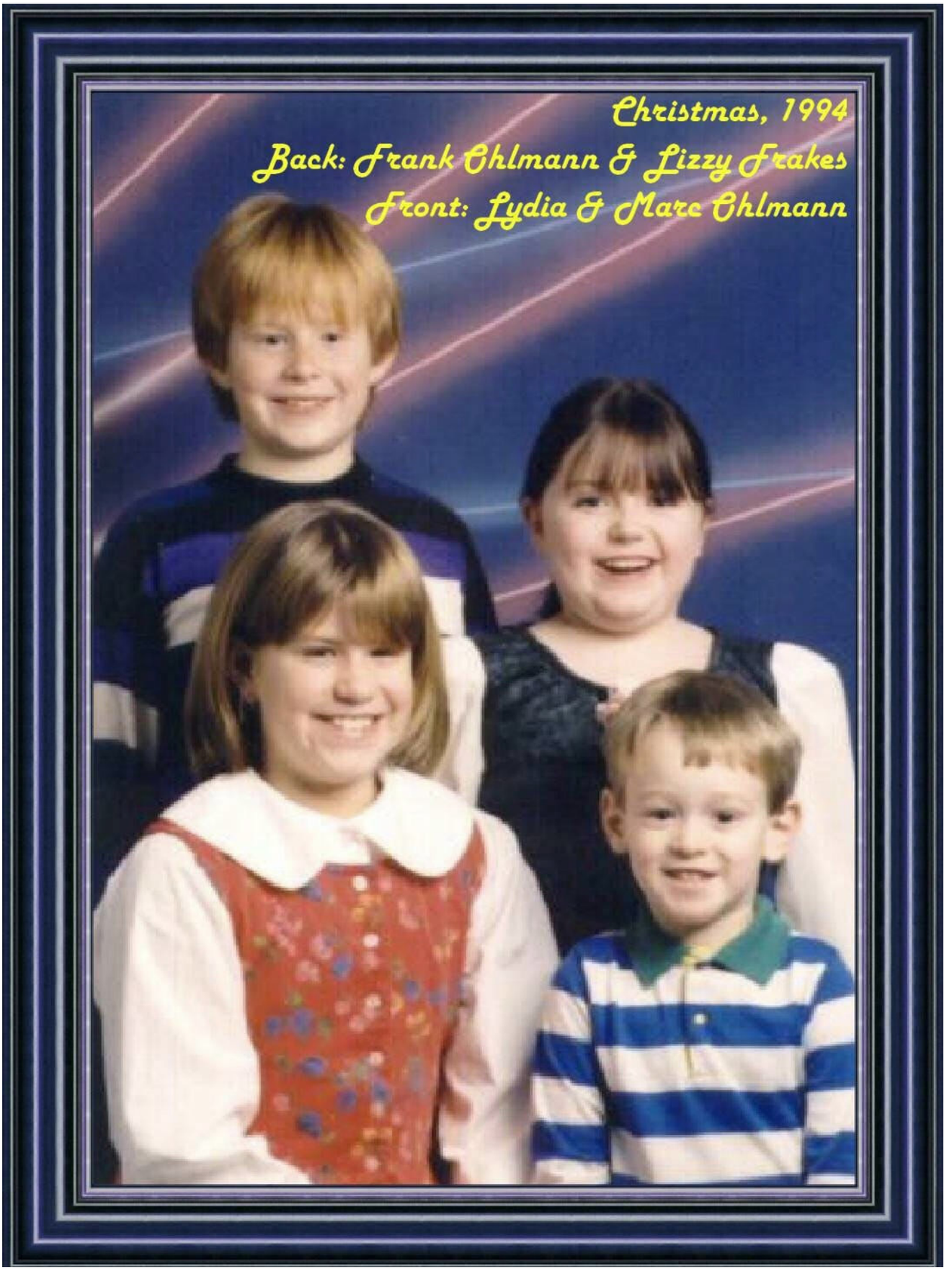


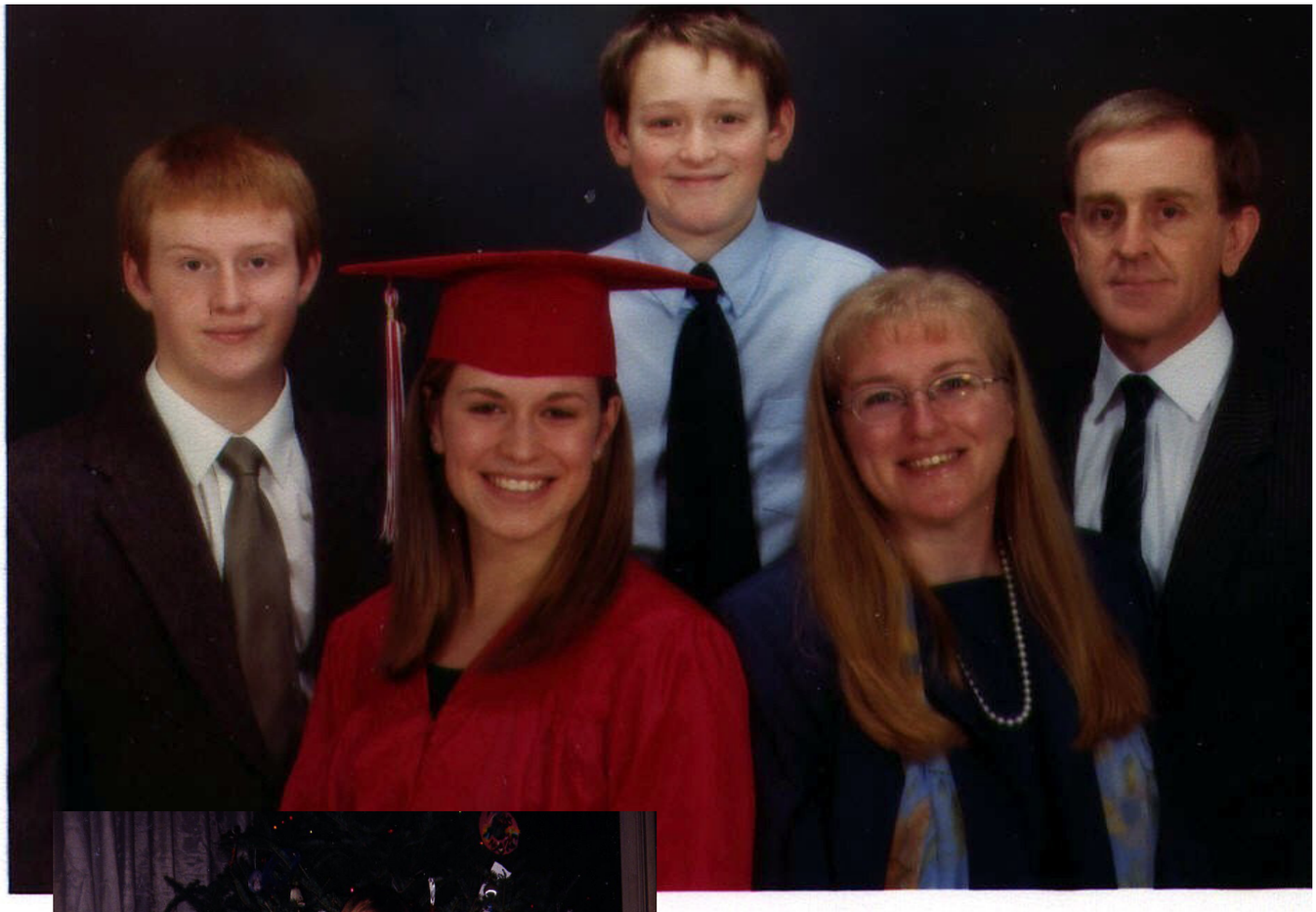
Oath administered in open court by Chief Justice William Renhquist

Justice Ruth Bader Ginsburg

Lydia Ohlmann & mother Elizabeth {Cooper} Ohlmann

July 1985; Paris, France


Christmas, 1994
Back: Frank Ohlmann & Lizzy Frakes
Front: Lydia & Marc Ohlmann



LYDIA, FRANK, MARC,
LIZ & JEAN MARC

2003

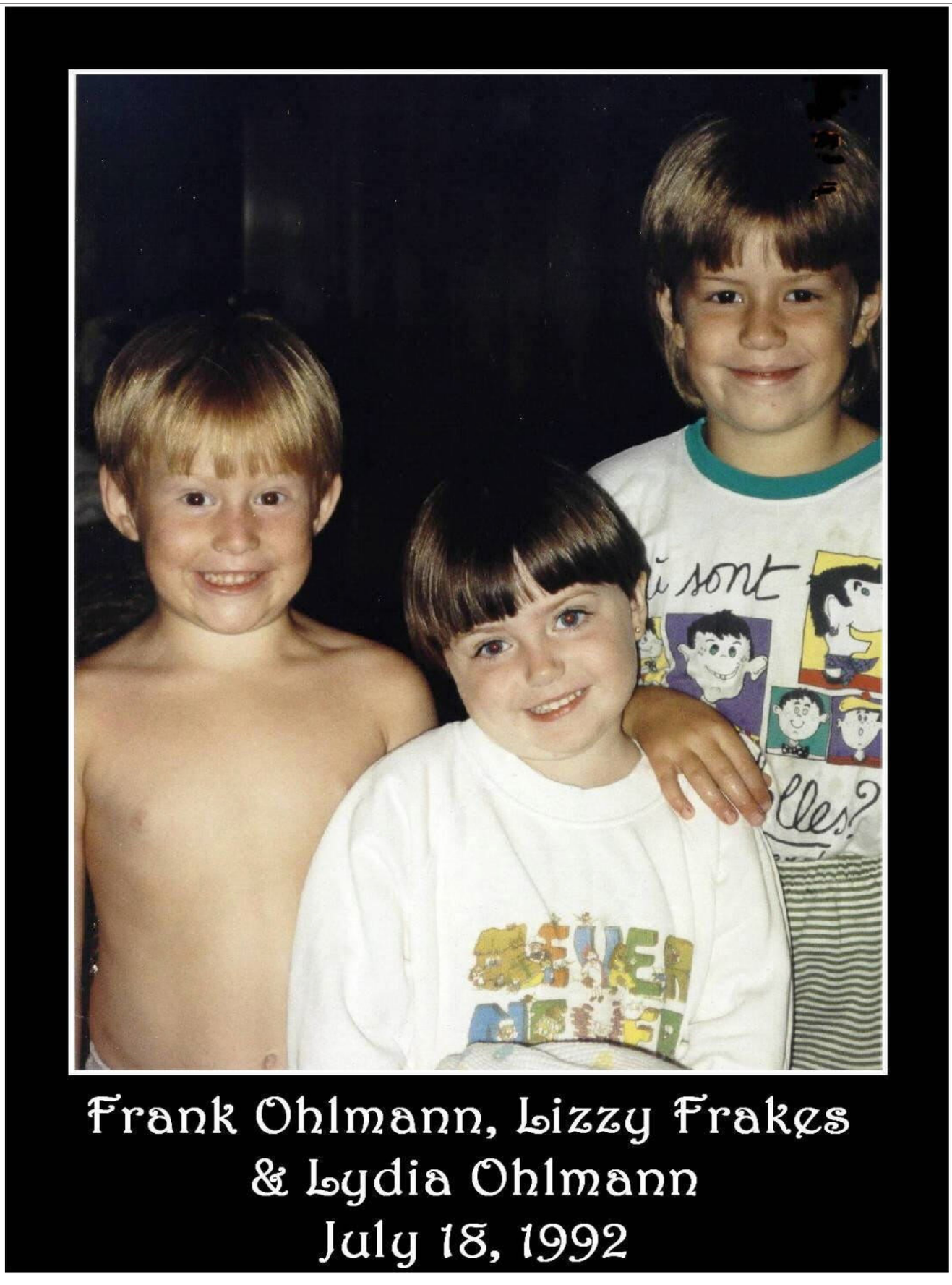
THE OHLMANNS

Elizabeth ["Lizzy"] Frakes

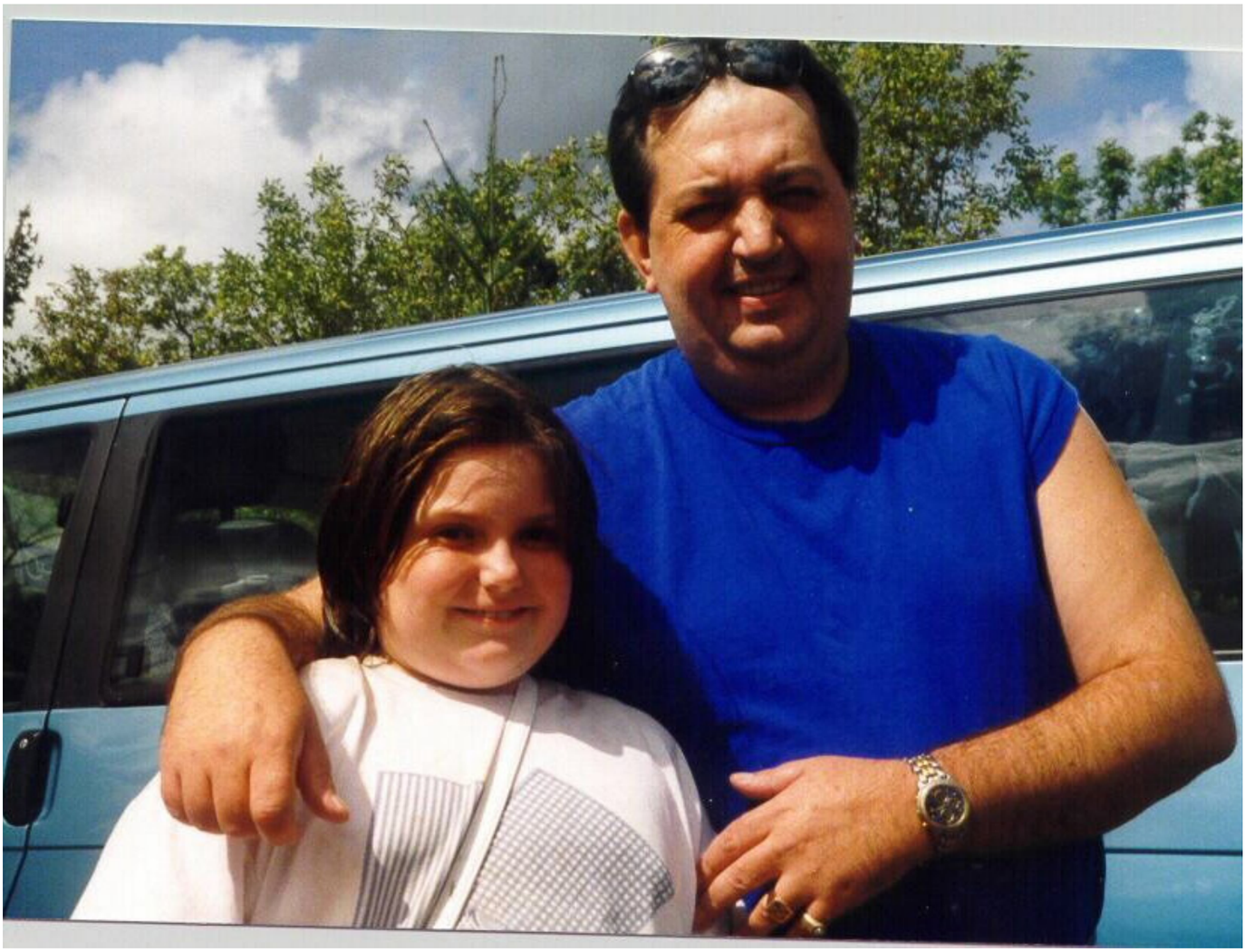
Fall 1994

Liz Ohlmann, Joanie Mann & baby Catherine Mann

March 1997, Portland, Oregon



Frank Ohlmann, Lizzy Frakes
& Lydia Ohlmann
July 18, 1992



Mary and Catherine Mann,
December 2003

The Scribner "Uncles": TJ, Bob, Ben

"The Uncles" at the Steele Family Reunion, 2005

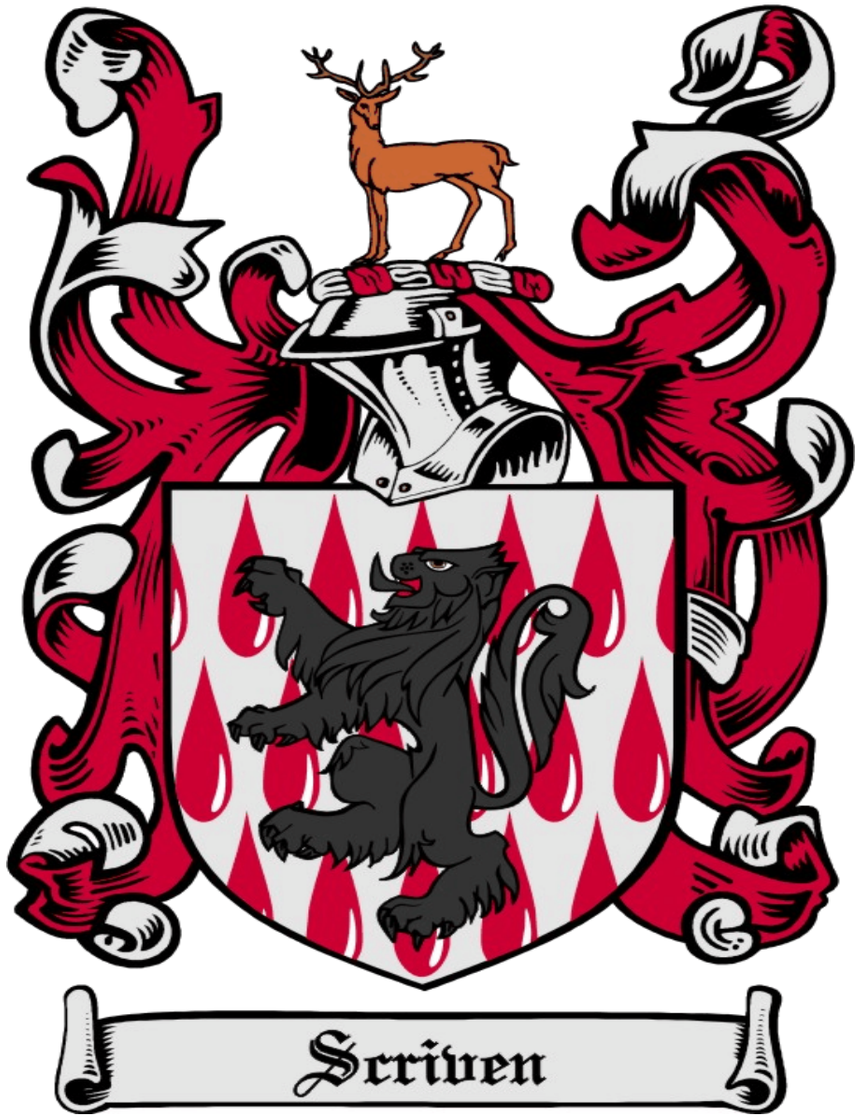
TJ, Bobby [Pat Burns' brother, the presiding official], Barbara, and Ben; September, 2003 at Barb and Chris Anderson's Wedding, Olympia, WA

June 2000 Laura Cooper & Martin Fenimore wedding, Eugene, OR

Part 2: Our Scribners Come to America

Like many of our other ancestors, our Scribner forebears originated in the British Isles. And, like many of the others from that place, our Scribners were motivated to leave their homes as a result of the events surrounding the English Civil War of the early 1600s. However, unlike our other expatriate ancestors of the British Isles, our Scribners were noblemen of Title and property who were firm supporters of the monarchy.

Our official Scriven family Crest & Armorial Bearings



The Scriven Family can be traced back hundreds of years and begins with the rise of the English monarchy. After the Norman Conquest of England and the victory at the Battle of Hastings, the new King of England began subdividing his territory to provide "tributes" or support for his army and his wealth. The land was first divided into Counties, and then into Manor Estates. These transactions were described in what is called the "Domesday" Book. One of the Manor Estates created shortly after the Battle of Hastings was Frodesley Manor, in the County of "Salop" [now Shropshire] along the border of Wales. The Domesday holder of Frodesley Manor was Siward, a man distantly related to the Viking Earl of Northumbria. Within a few generations, that Manor Estate would become possessed by the Hunald family.

Our recorded family history begins about the year 1400 during the reign of King Richard II when Reginald Scriven was a prominent man in Shrewsbury, a town within central Shropshire. Reginald was the son of Richard Scriven and Jane Acton [who had been born in Acton Scot, Shropshire]. Richard was the son of David [or Walter] Scriven and Joyce Cadogan. David [Walter] is the earliest Scriven of whom we have knowledge. Using sources available, we estimate he lived in the late 1200s-early 1300s, during the reign of the Plantagenet-Angevin line of English Monarchs, including Henry III [1216-1272], Edward I Longshanks [1272-1307], or Edward II [1307-1327].

Reginald Scriven married Helen Hunald, the daughter of Simon Hunald, the Lord of the Manor at Frodesley.

The County of Salop along the Wales Border

Location of Frodesley Manor within Shropshire

The Hunald family had held possession of the Manor from the early 1200s. Simon had no son or other male heir; by the terms of legal succession, the Title could not be held by Helen herself. However, her husband could hold it in right of her. Thus, in about 1406, Reginald Scriven came into possession of Frodesley Manor, becoming Lord of the Manor in right of his wife, Helen when Reginald's father-in-law, Simon Hunald, died.

The Title of Frodesley Manor thereafter remained in the Scriven family for over 250 years. Because of legal importance of the Lord's genealogy, we are able to trace the succession of the Title through the family with official Shropshire County records.

The Shropshire Records and Research Centre in Shrewsbury (an agency of the Shropshire County Council) has in its possession two Scriven Family Pedigrees that were compiled several years after the Visitation of Shropshire in 1623. An included narrative describes the derivation of the family name: "This family derived its name from the original profession of its progenitor, that of a scrivener or writer, to which was generally added the practice of finding safe persons or places with whom or on which to invest money." It continues: "The earliest person of the name . . . is Reginald Scryveyn who in 45 E 3, Nov. 25, 1371, appears as Bailiff of Shrewsbury in conjunction with Richard Bruton." It is interesting to note how the dates of these transactions are shown, as certain days of the week following particular religious observances. One example of this follows: "Peter de Upton of Salop bound to Reginald d Scriveyn of Salop, L4.0 Sund. after f. of Transl. of S Thomas the martyr, 17 R 2." (This transaction occurred on the Sunday following the Feast marking the Translation of Thomas the Martyr, in the 17th year of the reign of King Richard II). 13 July 1393 is shown in a marginal note. Because of the legal importance of the family in determining the successor to the position of Lord of Frodesley Manor, the Shropshire Records contain a written lineage.

.~ Reginald Scriven died in about 1428. The Lordship was inherited by his son John Scriven.

~ John married Joanna Hunald. Their son John Scriven was born about 1391. When father John died sometime before 1437, son John assumed the Lordship.

Left: All Saints Church in Berrington, Shropshire, England

Below: - the carving of 'Old Scriven' in the church in Berrington, Shropshire

~ John Scriven married Marion Salter in 1414. They had a son named Robert Scriven in about 1417. When John died in about 1466, Robert assumed the title.

~ Robert married a woman named Alice [or Elizabeth] Corbet. They had at least 6 children, but only 2 were males, and the oldest child (Robert, a male) did not survive his father. Thus, the second son, Thomas Scriven, born in 1477, assumed the Lordship upon the death of his father in about 1496.

~ Thomas Scriven married Eleanor Elizabeth Croft, and they had at least 4 children. Thomas Scriven, Jr. was the youngest of these, born in about 1522, but all of his older surviving siblings were female. Thomas did have an older brother named Franciscus, but he died in Ireland prior to his father's death in England in 1533. Thus, when the elder Thomas died, the younger Thomas assumed the Lordship.

~ The elder Thomas was Lord of Frodesley Manor from 1496-1533; he was also Sheriff of Shropshire County in 1497, 1512, and 1527.

~ The younger Thomas married Elizabeth Leighton in about 1546, during the reign of Queen Elizabeth I. Thomas died on November 22, 1587, passing the title to his eldest surviving son, Edward, born January 28, 1548/49. This Thomas was Lord of Frodesley Manor from 1533-1587. There is a monument to Thomas and Elizabeth in the Church of St. Andrew and St. Mary in Condover (a few miles from Frodesley).

~Edward Scriven married Anna Agnes Boterell on November 5, 1580 in Acton Boterell, Shropshire. Anna had been born in November 1568, so she was only 12 at the time of her marriage! On April 15, 1584, she gave birth to Thomas Scriven, the father of our emigrant ancestor. Thomas became the Lord of Frodesley Manor on August 17, 1631 upon the death of his father Edward.

~ Thomas Scriven is known to have married twice: first, to Elizabeth Bromley on October 6, 1604; second, to Margaret Corbett on October 1, 1616. The birth of John Scriven is recorded on page 51 of Part 1 of the Parish Register for Wem, Shropshire County, England. The original entry reads : "1623, Oct. 27. John, s. of Thomas [Skeinen?], sawyer bap." The question about Thomas' last name is answered on page xvi. of Part 2 (one of the pages where corrections are noted): "Page 51, Line 18. For 'Skeinen,' read 'Skriven.'" In that Wem Register, the mothers' names are not listed. However, we strongly infer from his prior marriage that Margaret Corbett was the mother of John Scriven [confirmed by at least one Corbett family researcher].

OUR CORBETT FAMILY

When Sir Thomas Scriven married Margaret Corbett in 1616 in Grinshill, Shropshire, England, he married a members of one of the most prominent, Titled families in Shropshire. Margaret was the daughter of Sir Vincent Corbet, First Baronet MP for Shropshire, created by King James I. King James I erected the hereditary Order of Baronets in England on 22 May 1611, for the settlement of Ireland. He offered the dignity to 200 gentlemen of good birth, with a clear estate of £1,000 a year, on condition that each one should pay a sum equivalent to three years' pay to 30 soldiers at 8d per day per man into the King's Exchequer. This Corbet family were lineal descendents of the keeper of Moreton Corbett castle, a large Estate in Shropshire, near Wem (and of course, near Frodesley Manor).

Sir Vincent Corbet's father was Andrew Corbet. Andrew began the Elizabethan modifications by altering the gatehouse and perimeter wall in the mid 16th Century, but his son, Robert (Margaret's uncle), was responsible for the impressive ruin that stands today. Robert was a favourite of Queen Elizabeth I, a courtier and diplomat of the highest influence, and as such he travelled extensively throughout Europe. At the time the new classical

The first Frodesley Manor (pronounced Frawdsley), home of the Scrivens, in Frodesley, Shropshire, England: land surrounding the old manor, now a sheep ranch

Exterior of the first Frodesley Manor, in the process of being renovated into a new residence, which presented the opportunity to see the original interior structure!

architecture, modelled on the buildings of ancient Rome, was becoming popular, and Robert Corbet wanted to bring it back home to Shropshire. So, using engravings of architectural details, an impressive new house, built along a single south range and incorporating the much-adapted 13th Century building, was constructed. Unfortunately, Robert Corbet was never to see it completed. He died from the plague in 1583, not long after starting the project and just four years after the death of his father. Robert's brothers Richard and Vincent (Margaret's father) picked up where he left off and completed the building. Progress must have been slow because carpenters were still fitting out the house and making furniture for it when Vincent died in 1623. Vincent is also at the centre of the ghost story associated with the castle - the story of the Puritan's Curse.

The dove coop attached to the back of Frodelsey Manor (a good source of meat in the winter).

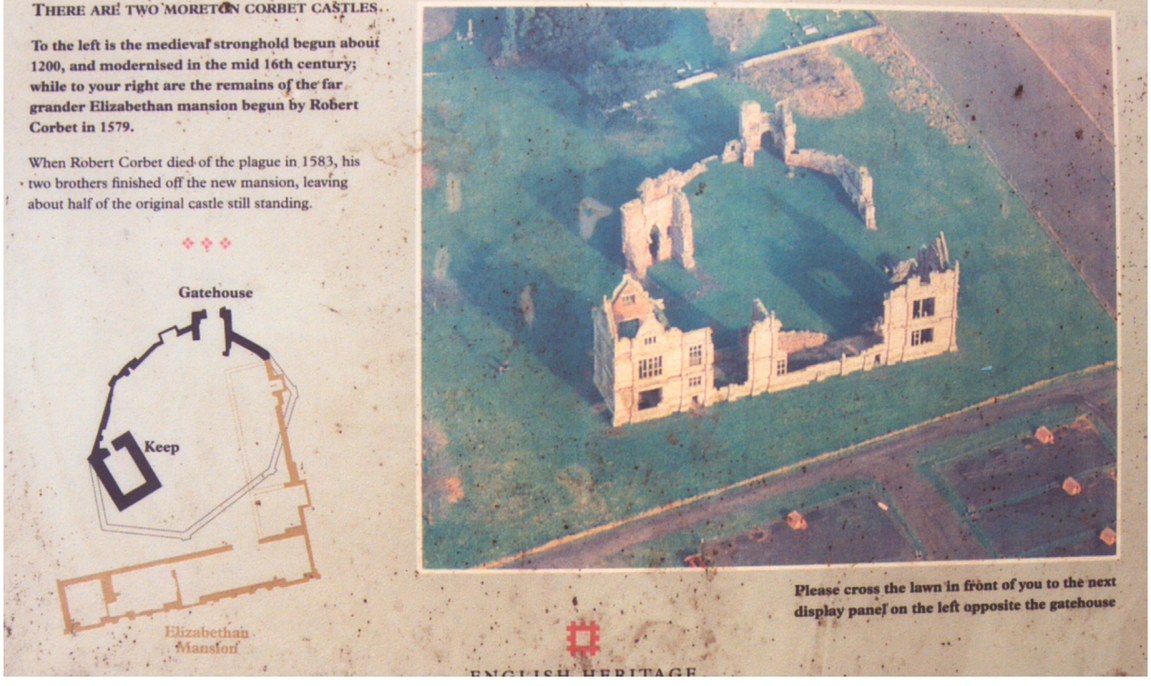
Inside the main hall. The residence consists of an entry hall, main hall and an attached dove coop on the back.

Above: to the left of center in the main hall of the manor. Below: Rafters to the left of center in the main hall of the

The exterior of the Church of St. Mary and St. Andrew in Condover, Shropshire, England. Below: - The altar at the church showing the tomb of Sir Thomas Scriven (1584-1644) and Margaret Corbett (bef 1579-1659) to the right.

Carved stone crest over the tomb in the church in Condover, Shropshire.

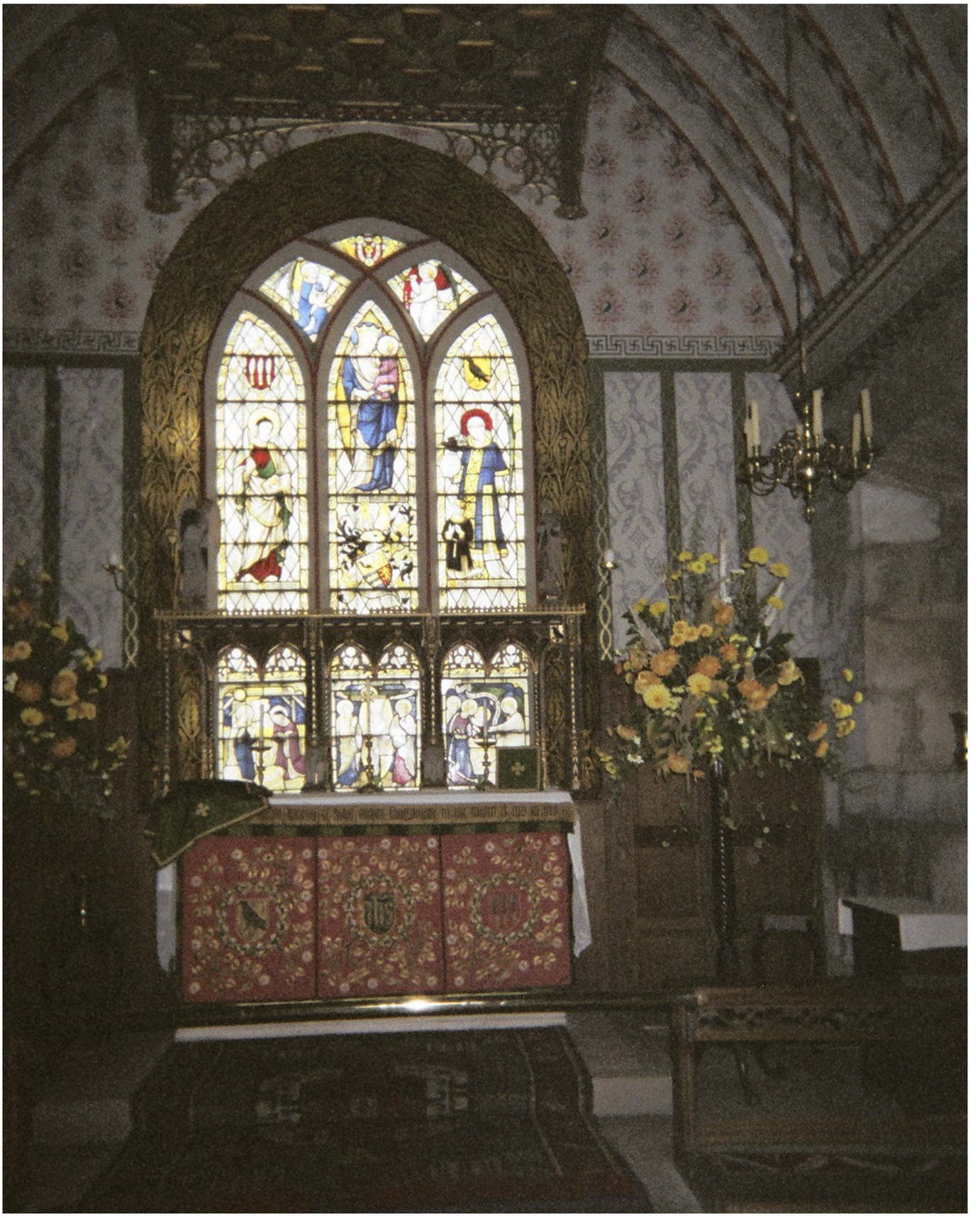
Close-up of the tomb of Sir Thomas Scriven (1584-1644) and Margaret Corbett (bef 1579-1659) in Condover, Shropshire.



Moreton-Corbett Castle, Wem, Shropshire, England: View from the field showing both the old and new castles.

Scriven-Tomb-Plaque - The bronze plaque behind the tomb of Sir Thomas Scriven (1584-1644) and Margaret Corbett (bef 1579-1659) in Condover, Shropshire.

St. Bartholomew's Church, next to Moreton-Corbett Castle, Wem, Shropshire, England; Right - altar with stained glass at the Church of St. Bartholomew's ; Below: tomb of Tomb of Sir Robert Corbett (ca 1475 - 1513) and Elizabeth Vernon (d. 1563) in St. Bartholomew's Church, Wem, Shropshire, showing Robert in the front. These are our ancestors - the family of Margaret Corbett, who married Sir Thomas Scriven, parents of John, the immigrant.

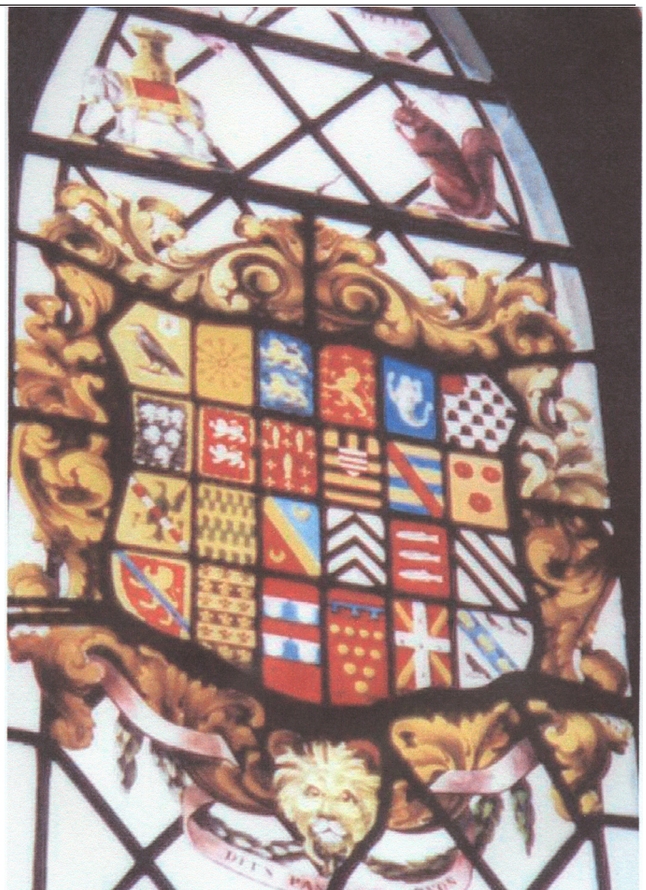


Above: Tomb of Richard Corbett (d. 1566) and Margaret Wortley in St. Bartholomew's Church in Wem, Shropshire - this was the brother of Margaret Corbett's ancestor, and the son of Sir Robert Corbett, right.

Left: Detail of the lower part of the tomb of Richard Corbett showing the coat of arms with elephants!

Right: View of Tomb of Sir Robert Corbett (ca 1475 - 1513) and Elizabeth Vernon (d. 1563) in St. Bartholomew's Church, Wem, Shropshire, showing Elizabeth in the front. [Andrew's grandparents]

CORBETT Family Crest



Detail of the stained glass window at St. Bartholomew's Church in Wem, Shropshire, showing the Corbett coats-of-arms.

Fear of the curse apparently stopped him and his son Andrew from ever living at Moreton Corbet. Andrew's widow Elizabeth moved back there in 1638 - just before the English Civil War. The Corbets were strongly Royalist, and members of the family fought for the cause at Whitchurch and Nantwich, as well as garrisoning Ercall Hall in High Ercall, which was besieged by Parliamentary forces. [And, remember, Margaret's husband Sir Thomas Scriven died from his wounds received while defending the Royalists besieged at the Battle of Wem.] And before long the Roundheads were 'knocking on the door' at Moreton Corbet. The house was well-defended with a garrison of 110 men, yet fell to a mere 10 Parliamentarians. The house was badly damaged in the fighting, but repaired later. The Corbets continued to live there until the mid 18th Century.

After Robert's death, the work was continued by Sir Vincent Corbet during the reign of King James I - when persecuting Puritans was considered the thing to do. Although Sir Vincent was not a puritan he did not like to see them treated harshly and so he took in a puritan called Paul Holmyard who was his neighbour. But as the puritan's ideals became more fanatical he told Holmyard to go from his property as he felt he could no longer protect him. Holmyard survived for some time in the local woods by eating whatever he could. Eventually he risked coming into the open and made his way to Morton Corbet where, upon his meeting Sir Vincent, he cursed the family:

Moreton-Corbet Castle

The "older" section was a medieval stronghold begun about 1200 and was modernized in the 1600s. The "newer" section of the castle was constructed during the Elizabethan era begun by Robert Corbett in 1579; he died of the plague in 1583, and was entombed at St. Bartholomew's in Wem, and his two brothers completed the Elizabethan mansion.

"Woe unto thee, hard hearted man, the lord has hardened thy heart as he hardened the heart of the Pharaoh, to thine own destruction. Rejoice not in thy riches, not in monuments of thy pride, for neither thou, nor thy children, nor thy children's children shall inhabit these halls. They shall be given up to desolation; snakes, vipers and unclean beasts shall make it their refuge, and thy home shall be full of doleful creatures.."

The curse was fulfilled - at least insofar as Vincent and his son, Andrew, never lived at the house because they were so afraid of the curse. The legend is that on a moonlit night the bedraggled figure of Paul Holmyard stalks the empty walls making sure no building goes on.

ENGLISH CIVIL WAR AND EMIGRATION

Sir Thomas Scriven had been born during the reign of Queen Elizabeth I, who died childless in 1603. After Elizabeth's death, James I -- Queen Elizabeth's cousin -- arrived in London and succeeded her. The installation of James as Monarch ended the work of the Protestant Reformation; thus, a few years after his succession, a small group of religious separatists [better known as Pilgrims] left England for the New World -- both to escape religious persecution and to complete the work of the Reformation that had been curtailed in England by the installation of James as Monarch. In 1620, those Pilgrims landed at Plymouth Rock in Massachusetts Colony. In March 1625 -- less than two years after John's birth, James I, King of England, died.

King James I of England

James' last years as ruler had been marked by continual dissension, and quarreling over many issues with the elected Parliament. England was on the brink of war with Spain, and the kingdom's finances were shattered. It was hoped that the new King [James' son, Charles I , who was 25 when he became King] would ease the tensions and turn England toward better and brighter days. But, it was not to be. Within two years of his ascending to the throne, Charles was on very bad terms with Parliament. Charles believed in the divine right of Kings -- that his authority came from God and not Parliament -- and thus he needed no Parliament approval to govern. He and Parliament quarrelled continuously about who had the authority to raise taxes and muster armies. In response, Charles dissolved one Parliament after another (1625, 1627, 1628, 1629) and simply ruled on his own authority. The making of peace with France in 1629 and with Spain in 1630 provided but a brief respite from armed conflict. In 1641, quarrels with Scotland and uprisings in Ireland led England to prepare for military action.

King Charles I of England

In addition to creating political instability, Charles also increased the already-boiling religious tensions that existed in the realm by ordering controversial changes to the Church of England. Charles and the Archbishop ordered that the move toward simplicity brought about by the reformation was to be reversed, and the churches were to be decorated again. Moreover, he ordered that sermons not be confined to the Bible. A new English prayer book was introduced in 1637, and when Charles demanded that it be used in Scottish churches, riots broke out. Scots were more anti-Catholic than the English, and many of them were puritans. The Presbyterian Scots then organized an army and occupied the Northern English Counties. Charles' choice of a bride -- the Catholic Henrietta Maria of France -- only stiffened the public's opposition.

By 1640, the dissension was at a breaking point. Charles was under pressure to come to some resolution with Parliament, and since it was not dismissed outright as others had been earlier, this Parliament became known as the "Long Parliament." During that session, Members of Parliament asserted firmly that troops could only be raised to oppose the unrest under Officers approved by Parliament. King Charles vehemently disagreed, and set about to raise his own army to quell the unrest. As sides began to form, the King was generally supported by the nobility, the landed gentry (including the Scrivens of Frodesley), and the Catholics. The Parliament was supported by the merchants, the middle class and the lower orders of the great towns. Thus, the struggle for power began, pitting the Parliament and their army against the King and his army in an all-out Civil War. On August 22, 1642, the King raised his own standard at Nottingham, and people were forced to choose sides. [1]

As members of the titled and landed upper class gentry, political necessity dictated the Scrivens' support for their tributary -- e.g., the Monarch King Charles I. In fact, Thomas Scriven was Knighted by King Charles I on September 29, 1642 after he had distinguished himself in the King's army -- barely a month after the King had raised his standard, . Thus, in 1643, we find Sir Thomas Scriven, a colonel in the King's army leading men in battle on behalf of the Royalists in the English Civil War. He was described as "Sir Thomas Scriven, knight, colonel of one regiment of foote of the trained bands of the county of Salop, and governor of Whytchurch in the said county." On 26 May 1643 he received orders from Lt. General Arthur Lord Capell to raise troops, and be prepared to defend Salop from her enemies. Sir Thomas was seriously wounded in an unsuccessful attack on Wem in October 1643 [still known as the "Battle of Wem"], and died from his wounds on 21 January 1643/44.

Thomas' eldest surviving son was John Scriven. John was entitled to assume the Title of Lord of Frodesley Manor upon his father's death, but John did not immediately assume the Title, nor did he leave England. It is more

1 Nottingham Castle was the highest tower available for display of the flag, or standard. By doing so, Charles was following a feudal custom of unfurling a standard around which his adherents might rally their forces. Thereafter, orders were then given to each regiment to fight against all the King's enemies not displaying the standard. In essence, Charles forced the point -- people were required to "declare" their allegiance by choosing which flag to display.

likely that with the ongoing war, the wisdom of assuming a Titled position was in doubt, and John waited for the war to be resolved to determine his next move. If that was what in fact happened, then almost certainly the single event that lead to John Scriven's decision to leave England was the execution of King Charles I in January 1649 and the concomitant royalist defeat in that war. It is quite plausible that John -- legally entitled to assume the family Title and position -- would face serious and perhaps even life-threatening retribution for his family's loyalty to the losing side of the Civil War.[2]

What we do know is that John never assumed the Title; instead, the successor Lord of Frodesley Manor was his younger brother Richard, the son of Thomas and Margaret, born June 7, 1625. This aberration in succession was undoubtedly necessitated by the events of the English Civil War, the loss of which caused John to seek asylum elsewhere.

Charles I addresses the Long Parliament

2 We know that John had a sword in his possession in the colonies from the account of the inventory of his property taken at his death. This sword was reputed to have belonged to his fallen Knighted father. In fact, possession of a sword was rather unusual (an average citizen would have a musket [as John had], but not usually a sword).

Depictions of the English Civil War -- Above: English Royalists at march; Below: Parliamentarians in battle.

But where? Although impelled to leave by the same fabric of historic events as our other ancestors from Great Britain -- the social unrest leading to the English Civil War -- the Scribners were *not* motivated to leave in order to seek religous liberty. Instead, our Scrivens were people with purely political troubles -- John the Immigrant's father had been a Knighted Colonel leading men in Battle on behalf of the defeated Charles, and had suffered a mortal wound in the conflict. John would have become the head of the Scriven family after his father Thomas' death; it would have been quite plasible that John would seek out a place in the colonies where he could find safety in anonymity and make a fresh start. That theory is also supported by John's family's name change in the colonies from "Scriven" to "Scribner." John Scriven adopted a surname that would not associate him with his noble lineage. The New England colonies were tightly-knit and interconnected groups of people; some were undoubtedly from Shropshire, and the Scriven nobility was certainly known to those individuals. Consequently, as long as John bore the name of Scriven, he would forever be associated with his noble kin in England and the oppressive policies of the King who had compelled so many to leave England..

A by-product of that name, of course, was that by any strict test of religious conformity, John Scriven would never have passed muster -- his family had supported King Charles I, who had been the principal enemy of both the separatists Pilgrims as well as the Puritans who founded Massachusetts. Thus, John was not a suitable candidate for the Rhode Island Pilgrim Colony of Plymouth, nor likely any of the strict Puritan settlements in the Massachusetts Colony. Fortunately for John, by 1647 there was another choice: New Hampshire.

By 1647, John himself could have taken a fidelity oath; thus, New Hampshire under its relaxed admission policies presented John with an opportunity to escape the perils of his family's upheaval in England. Wurt's MAGNA CHARTA, 7 records that John traveled "from Kent, England, to Hampton, Massachusetts, 1652" (page 2072). While the reasons for John's departure are a matter of informed speculation on our part, what we do know is that John emigrated to the Colonies and arrived at some time before his marriage in New Hampshire in 1655 to a woman named Mary whose maiden surname is unknown.[3] John's children were all known by the surname of

3 Some researchers have speculated that Mary was Mary Hilton -- a daughter of Edward Hilton of Dover . However, that assumption has been shown to be incorrect. Edward Hilton had two daughters, neither of whom was named Mary. One of the daughters, Susannah, mar-

"Scribner" -- although the reason for the spelling change has never been firmly established, again, our informed speculation is that John was trying to escape the consequences of his family's defeat during the English Civil War, and his well-known Titled surname would have otherwise made that impossible.[4]

Part 3: Scribners in America -- from New Hampshire to Michigan

Although historical records place John's first residence in Hampton, he thereafter moved from Hampton to Dover and was accepted as an inhabitant of Dover on 5 April 1662. John Scriven and his family settled in an area just to the northeast of Dover Town known as "Cocheco," where he had a small farm of 20 acres, "said land being at Cochecha near the east side of the plantation of Richard Otis" (from the deed to John's land, when it was sold by his son, John, to Peter Coffin of Dover in 1685, see PROVINCE DEEDS 20:334). It was in September of 1662 that he paid his first taxes (John Scales, COLONIAL ERA HISTORY OF DOVER, NEW HAMPSHIRE [1923. Reprint. Bowie, MD: Heritage Books, Inc., 1977], 242). According to the Inventory of his possessions following his death, John owned a hay barn with 20 acres of land, a few animals (2 oxen, 4 cows, 1 calf, 3 sheep, 1 lamb, 1 mare, a yearling colt and 6 hogs), farm implements and household goods (Inventory of John Scriven's Property, dated 8 October 1675). Interestingly, the inventory also listed 1 musket and sword.

John and Mary Scriven's oldest son -- our ancestor John Scribner, Sr.-- was born in Cochecho, Dover, Strafford County, New Hampshire in 1657. John and his three siblings [including Edward, b. abt. 1662, impressed into service for the English Navy and never heard from again; Elizabeth, b. 1668, married Samuel Eastman, and was the amcestor of the famious Daniel Webster; and Thomas B., b. 25 Dec 1672, married Sarah Clifford and Hannah Welch, and lived out his life in New Hampshire] grew up during the time of one of the most costly struggles the early Colonies ever faced, King Philip's War (1675-1676). Native American Indian tribes had formed a confederation

ried Christopher Palmer. The other daughter, Sobriety, married Henry Moulton. See Noyes, Libby & Davis, Genealogical Dictionary Of Maine and New Hampshire, at 332. One historian, Rev. J. Woodbury Scribner, states that "[t]he Widow Mary lived on for 25 years after the death of her husband." See Sinnett, The History Of The Scribner Families In America: With A Careful History of Maine Scribner Families & Allied Families, at 18. Wurt's MAGNA CHARTA, 7 indicates that Mary died in 1695 (page 2072). One of their sons, Edward, was impressed into the English Navy in 1679 (Noyes, 615). No further information about Edward is known. Their other children were John (b. 1657), Elizabeth (b. 1668), and Thomas (b. 25 December 1672).

4 In fact, at least one prominent resident in the Hampton, New Hampshire area was known to have emigrated from Shrewsbury, Shropshire, England (in the vicinity of Frodesley Manor): Capt. Thomas Wiggin -- one of the early leaders of the original Dover settlement. Capt. Wiggin's son Andrew married Hannah Bradstreet, the daughter of Gov. Simon Bradstreet and his wife Anne Dudley (who was herself the daughter of Gov. Thomas Dudley -- one of the original Massachusetts Bay Company officers). It was highly unlikely that John "Scriven" would be able to keep his true connection to the Titled Gentry of England and his political heritage under wraps. John "Scribner" would have a much greater chance of acceptance by the other New Englanders.

under the leadership of King Philip (also known as Pometacon), chief of the Wapanoags. During this war, one-half of the towns in New England were attacked, and 12 of those towns were completely destroyed. The Colonists banded together and organized a common army of local militia (the very earliest predecessor of the U.S. Army) to defend against the attacks.

In about 1688, John married Elizabeth Cloyes; Elizabeth was the daughter of John Cloyes, Jr. and Mary Long.[5] The Cloyes family would become deeply embroiled in witchcraft allegations in Salem, Massachusetts [*see infra*]. John and his family were still in Dover in 1710 when on 5 July 1710 Captain Nicholas Gilman [another of our relatives] led a scouting party in which John Scribner appeared on the muster rolls. The indians had still been hovering around the frontiers so scounting was necessary, and the garrisons had to be guarded with extra care. The Company was militia, composed of members from the local communities.

In 1723, however, the Indians massacred many of the people at Cochecho; this event caused John and many others from that area to relocated to the safer community of Exeter, New Hampshire. Although John worked as a blacksmith, in 1723, John and six others (including his son, John, Jr.) purchased land in Exeter from Clement Moody, Jr., which land the seven buyers divided between themselves in 1725. John and his son John Jr. are mentioned as part-purchasers of King's Falls Saw Mill in Exeter on 7 August 1723, along with Nathaniel Glidden, Henry Wadleigh, Daniel Ladd and others. This began an enduring tradition of work in the lumbering industry for the Scribners that continues in some branches of the family to this day.

John and Elizabeth's third son was named Edward.[6] The threat of indian attacks was a continuing reality even after Edward's father John moved his family to Exeter in 1689. As did his brothers and many of the men of Exeter in those early Colonial days, Edward fought Indians as a soldier serving under Capt. Gilman. When Edward's father John moved the family to Exeter, John Gilman was already there. John Gilman was an early Massachusetts Bay Colonist who had constructed a waterpower site and sawmill in Exeter. John Gilman was the son of Edward Gilman of Hingham, Norfolkshire, England, and had an older sister named Sarah who had married Deacon John Leavitt (the grandfather of Abigail Leavitt through his son Nehemiah.) [See Section 1, Part 4]. The year after Edward's father John was given his first land grant in Exeter, John Gilman built a fortified house to protect the valuable sawmill and waterpower sites he owned from hostiles. Undoubtedly, the Gilman Garrison House protected many members of The Gilman, Leavitt, and related families during those trying times, including our Scribners. (The house still stands to this day, and the interior is pictured *infra.* The walls were constructed of massive sawn logs and a pulley above the main entrance was used to operate a reinforced door.)

By the mid-1700's pre-Revolutionary period, the Massachusetts government was actively encouraging settlement in Maine. Frontier settlements were thought to create a barrier against an enemy during times of war and improved the economy of the colony as a whole as new natural resources were harvested, trade increased, and land values accelerated. In the normal process of settlement, the government aproved a petition from a group of proprietors for a grant of land. Government approval would have to fit within authority provided by the crown; the approval would also be conditioned on a certain number of people settling on the grant within a limited number of years; those settlers would also have to construct dwellings of a specific minimum size and clear a stipulated number of acres.

---

5 Mary Long was the daughter of Deacon Robert Long and his wife Alice Short. Deacon Robert Long was born in 1621 in England [his place of origin has not been determined], and died 27 Dec 1690, aged 69 at Newbury, Mass of smallpox. He is said to have been in Charlestown, 1637-1642, and he was in Newbury by 1645. He married Alice Short, (dau of Henry Short 1647 in Newbury MA) from Coventry, Wiltshire, England, and there are indications that he had first married a Stevens. Alice was born abt 1620 in Coventry, emigrated with her father, possibly aboard the *Mary and John*, and died 17 January 1690/91 in Newbury MA. Deacon Robert Long took oath of allegiance 1678. Occupation: weaver.

6 Like his father John, Edward was a blacksmith, and was also known to be a "man of sterling qualities."

By 1760, the time was also ripe for settlement. Following the conquest of Canada and the subsequent elimination of their French rivals, the English settlers in the colonies had finally achieved a sense of security which neither they nor their ancestors had ever known in the colonies. The settlers were finally able to live in security and develop their destinies untroubled by dynastic warsin Europe or fearful of natives (who were now deprived of their former allies).

However, what should have been a time of great prosperity was threatened by an English crown anxious to recoup its expenses through additional taxation of colonists. Thus, on 10 January 1765, the Stamp Act was born, and what little economic comfort may have existed for our ancestors rapidly disappeared. When the Stamp Act passed in 1765, all of Edward and Abigail's children were living a hand-to-mouth existencein the heavily-taxed New Hampshire colony. They naturally started looking to the northern wilderness for new opportunities.

The Scribner and other white settlers in the area were poor; they had been lured by the existence of vast timber resources and the customary tradition of homestead land grants. The prospect of a cheap or free homestead, coupled with the great suitability of the area to lumbering (a business with which the Scriberns had been familiarized in Exeter, New Hampshire) and the troubling economic climate in the lower colonies provided the incentive necessary for the Scribners and others to reloate to the Phillipstown wilderness area of Maine.

The fifth child of Edward Scribner and Abigail [Leavitt] Scribner was their second child named John Scribner, born August 18, 1732, in Exeter. He was married in Rockingham County, New Hampshire to an as-yet unidentified woman in about 1760. [John's eldest son was given the name of Thomas Parker Scribner, and there is no known "Parker" connection, so it is possible that John's spouse was a Parker or had a close connection to a Parker.] John was the first Scribner to settle in the area, moving there between 1769-1770 from New Hampshire to engage in lumbering. John and his family settled near "Waterborough Old Corner." According to "Maine Place Names and the Peopling Of Its Towns [York and Cumberland Counties") by A. H. Chadbourne (1957): "The first permanent settlement was by John Smith in 1768 . . . (He) was joined by seven other families during the next two years: John Scribner, Robert Harvey, Alexander Jellison, Wm. Deering, Scammon Hodgdon, Wm. Philpot, and Wm. Nason. These men came from Berwick, Scarborough and Somersworth, New Hampshire, to engage in lumbering." Similarly, According to THE HISTORY OF YORK COUNTY, MAINE (Philadelphia: Everts & Peck,1880), page 388: "The first settler was John Smith, who located near Waterborough Old Corner, in 1768. During the next two years, he was joined by seven other families: John Scribner, Robert Harvey, Alexander Jellison, Wm. Deering, Scammon Hodgdon, Wm. Philpot, and Wm. Nason. These men came from Berwick, Scarborough, and Somersworth, N.H., to engage in lumbering."

Excerpt From "History of Waterboro" [Compiled by Willis Lord, 1987] "The first settler was Captain John Smith, who was born in Kittery, December 12, 1744, and resided here from 1768 until his death. Within two years seven families joined him. William Philpot came to the area from Somersworth, N.H., in 1769. He served in the Revolutionary War and after the war came back to Waterboro. He and his wife gave property to the Shakers and went there to live. His son William settled on a ridge east of Waterboro Center which is frequently called Warren's or Robert's Ridge. Alexander Jellerson and his son George came to Massabesick in October of 1769 from Doughty's Falls, now North Berwick. He settled about one half mile southeasterly of the present day East Waterboro village. Son George settled not far from his father on what is known as the Mast Camp Road (Route 202 & 4). In this area many tall pines were harvested for the King's ships. JOHN SCRIBNER settled on the north side of Federal St. just over the Waterboro line from Alfred. Robert Harvey, it is said, settled part of town on the road west of the present Route # 5. This road today is known as the Clark's Bridge Road. William Deering moved to Waterboro in 1770. They were the first to clear land on what is today known as Deering Ridge."

Interior of the Gilman Garrison House in Exeter, Rockingham County, New Hampshire

What the settlers were not aware of was that in addition to its tyrannical tax practices, the English crown found it in its best interests to withold authority for settlements in Maine, and the Proprietors of Phillipstown took advantage of the English attitude to delay granting title. Thus, the settlers would find themselves in a state of legal limbo -- with no basis for claiming title to their property, no security for their improvements, and no buyers for their unsecured claims, their investments of years of labor were threatened and the security of their families undermined. The settlers were still taxed on the land as if it were their own holdings. This was an intolerable situation that would eventually create a substantial incentive for the Maine settlers to take up arms against the British Crown in the American Revolution.

On 6 December 1781, the Proprietors still had not granted title to the settlers. John Scribner joined his brothers Edward, Daniel, and Samuel as well as Daniel's son Daniel Jr. and 17 other men in a petition to the Phillipstown Proprietors to purchase the homesteads they had established per the various terms of the settlement agreement. The text of that petition:

> Wherease the subscribers have taken up and are in possession of Lands in the Town of Massabesic, so called and country adjacent belonging to and claimed by the proprietors under the will of Bridge Phillips, some time since deceased, and wherease said Proprietors are desirous of settling the country and quieting the Minds of the present Possessors of Lands belonging to said Proprietors. . . . and are so inclined to dispose of one hundred acres to each Settler, and whereas the Quantity of Lands taken possession of cannot be ascertained until surveyed and measured, - We, the Subscribers Possessors thereof do hereby engage to have the Land by us at present held, surveyed and measured at our own Expence under the direction and with the approval so that regular deeds may be made our payment for said Lands agreed upon between us and the Proprietors. The price to be 4 shillings [Pound] Money in Gold or Silver for each acres of the 100 disposed to them.

In 1784, some of the inhabitants of Massabesic Plantation who still did not have title were facing extraordinary taxation levels on land that they didn't even own. That year, those inhabitants petitioned the Legislature for a remedy for their unjust tax burdens:

To the Honorable Senate & House of Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts in General Court assembled, 1784: The Petition of the Inhabitants of the Plantation of Massabesic in the County of York humbly shows that about fifteen Years ago your Petitioners (most of whom were then and still are very poor) settled the Plantation under and Apprehension that the Lands therein belonged to Government & would be given them or sold to them at a very moderate price but your Petitioners now find that the said Lands are private property & so are under the Necessity of purchasing the same at a considerable Expence or of losing their Labour done thereon The Taxes demanded of them in the Course of a Number of Years past far exceeded their Ability even on supposition the Lands were their own but when your Petitioners consider that the Lands belong to others the Taxes appear to be intolerable and if Government should insist upon payment your Petitioners will be obliged to evacuate the Plantation for all the property thereon is not equal to the Taxes. Such have been the Circumstances of your Petitioners as to render them unable to pay Taxes & they flatter themselves that when Government consider that the Lands do not belong to your petitioners that they in some measure may be considered as excusable in their Omissions but be that as it may, it is absolutely impossible that your Petitioners should pay the aggregate sum of Taxes when they are obliged to advance Money for the purpose of purchasing their poor Farms. At this Time the Proprietors of the Lands are calling upon your Petitioners to pay them as much Money for the Lands as they are worth & at the same Time Government is calling upon them to pay as much or more in Taxes than the whole Value of the Lands including their personal Estate. The Sheriff of the County has an Execution against them, on the whole they are reduced to deplorable circumstances & stand in need of the gracious & merciful interposition of Government.

The area previously known as "Phillipstown" was officially named the Plantation of Massabesic" by Resolve of the General Court of Massachusetts on 12 February 1785, and its boundaries were thus

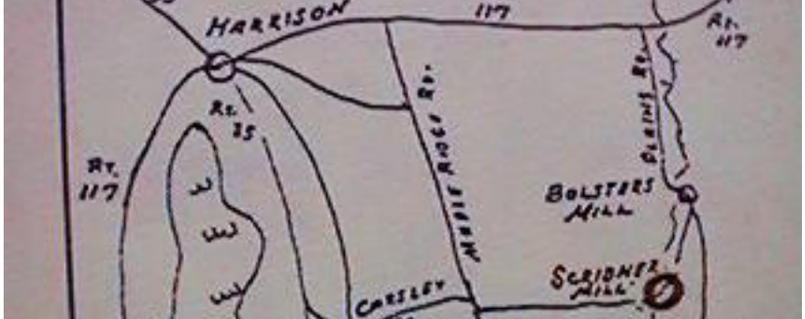
fixed. In 1787, the Massachusetts General Court approved a plan for incorporation for the Town of Waterborough on what was formerly the Massabesic Plantation. Thus was born Waterborough (today spelled "Waterboro"), a small town in York County, Maine in which the Scribners settled.

Edward had seven children, five of whom lived to maturity [not Abigail or the first John]. The entire family were among the first pioneers of Waterborough. Eventually all the surviving children settled nearby in Otisfield or Harrison, Maine except the 2nd John and Samuel who both stayed in Waterborough.Several localities still bear their name, including "Scribners Mill" an old water mill site in Harrison, Maine (which today is actively being preserved as an historic site).

Along with his brothers Daniel ("Captain Daniel"), and Samuel, John Scribner served in the Continental Army during the Revolutionary War. John Scribner died in Waterborough, York, Maine.

Thomas Parker Scribner, born in 1763 in Exeter, Rockingham County, New Hampshire, was the eldest child of John Scribner, the second named John born to Edward Scribner, Sr. and Abigail Leavitt. Thomas married Esther Jellison in Waterborough on May 20, 1789. Both Thomas and Esther's families had moved to Waterborough to engage in lumbering as part of the first permanent settlement. Esther had been born in Waterborough to Job Jellison and Susannah, nee Kinket, on July 26, 1752. Thomas and Esther's family is documented in an article in the New England Historial and Genealogical Register that compiled the early vital records of Waterborough, Maine in four parts: Part one is published at "Vital Records of Waterboro, Maine," NEHGR Vol. 91, p. 115. The remaining three part are published in Volume 90, pages 225-254 & pages 314-337, and Volume 91, pages 15-35 & pages 113-126.

At least part of Thomas' family relocated to Brighton, Somerset County, Maine between 1823 [the year son Robert was married to first wife Nancy Ham in Waterborough] and 1827 [the year grandson John C. Scribner was born to son Aaron and his wife Rhoda Carll in Brighton]. Parkman, Somerset County is where Thomas' cousin Daniel [his uncle Daniels' son] had earlier relocated. Thomas' sons Aaron and Robert were both enumerated as heads of households in the 1830 federal census in Brighton, Somerset County, Maine. [In that census, Robert's age must be misreported as between 15-19 rather than within the correct range including 27 years; other than this, Robert's enumerated family group record re flects the cocrrect information to include his new wife Eliza Shorey as well as his father Thomas Parker and sister Susan [who never married]. Due to the absence of Thomas' first wife Esther in this census, we can likely conclude that she deceased between the two census in 1820 and 1830. However, the two sisters Sally and Mary [of whom we know little] are not accounted for in this enumeration.] We know that Thomas Parker Scribner was also in Brighton before November 1930 because he married Deborah MacFarland there in that month. Esther therefore could have died either in Waterborough or in Brighton.

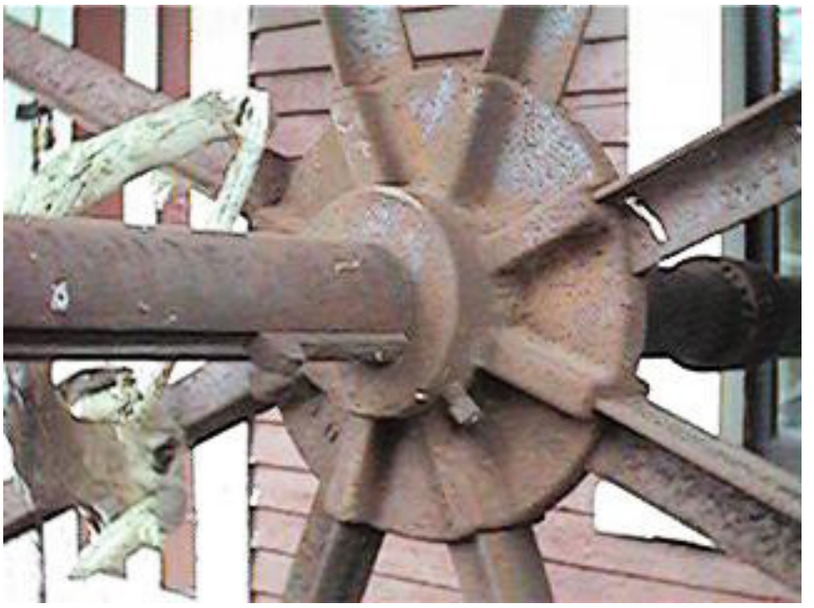


A Map Showing the Location of Scribner's Mill in Harrison, Maine

Thomas remarried twice while living in Brighton after Esther's death and before his own in

1849; first, to Deborah [Widow McFarland], then to Judith [Widow Libby]. Thomas' second wife, Deborah, had been married twice before marrying him at age 72! Her first husband had been Solomon McFarland, whom she married 14 October 1776 in Bristol, Lincoln County. Solomon served for 8 months and 9 days in the Revolutionary War, mainly during the hostilities at Castine. Much of the valuable information about Deborah is included in Solomon's Revolutionary War Pension File. They had three children, but all had died before 12 March 1839, the date of Deborah's Widow's Declaration, included in that Pension File. That Declaration was made before the Judge of Probate of Essex County, Massachusetts, David A. White. Solomon had died in 1785 in Essex County. In 1789, Deborah married John Welch of Georgetown, Maine. Her only surviving child, Deborah (Welch) Bushey, has a supporting Statement, which she made on 17 October 1846, included in the McFarland Pension File. John Welch died 12 March 1830 in Georgetown, about 8 months before Deborah married Thomas.

According to the "Early Vital Records of Waterborough, Maine," NEHGR, 90 (Boston, MA: The New England Historic Genealogical Society, 1937): [note 826], page 115, Aaron Scribner was born 3 March 1799 in Waterborough, Maine -- the fifth child of Thomas Parker Scribner and Esther Jellison. Aaron met his wife Rhoda Carll (11th and youngest child of John Carll; the same article cites Rhoda's birth in Waterborough, Maine as 16 February 1798), married her in approximately 1824 (probably in either York or Somerset Counties, Maine), and had four sons (John, Enoch, Charles William, and Thomas P.) while living in Brighton, Somerset County, Maine. Aaron Scribner appears at Brighton, Somerset County, Maine in the 1830 Census (National Archives M19, Roll 51, page 259). This entry indicates that Aaron's family group consisted of 3 free white males under age 5 [John C., Enoch W., and Charles W.]; one free white male age 30-40 [Aaron]; and one free white female age 30-40 [Rhoda].



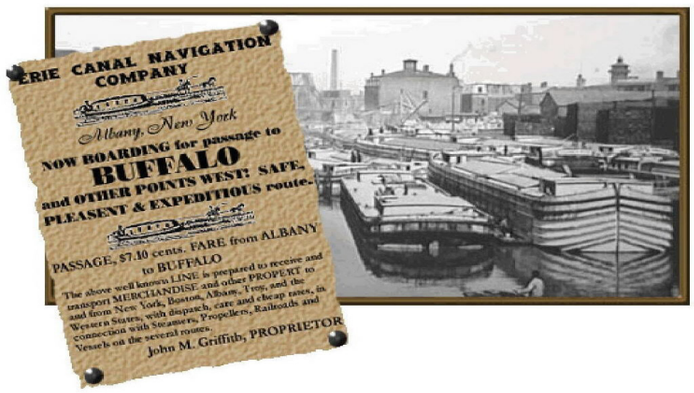
One of the Wheel Hubs from Scribner's Mill in Harrison, Maine

The American Revolutionary War ended in 1783 with the Treaty of Paris. Under the Terms, Great Britain surrendered the Old Northwest to the United States and Virginia and other states ceded their claims to the Old Northwest to the federal government. In 1787 this was organized as the Northwest Territory, which included pretty much everything outside of the original 13 colonies that belonged to the United States. In 1800 Illinois was included in the Indiana Territory and in 1809 was organized as the Illinois Territory which included all of Illinois, most of Wisconsin and large parts of Michigan and Minnesota. Although the United States had expanded to include the Great Lakes area, the territory

was geographically difficult to access because of a lack of waterways to the interior.

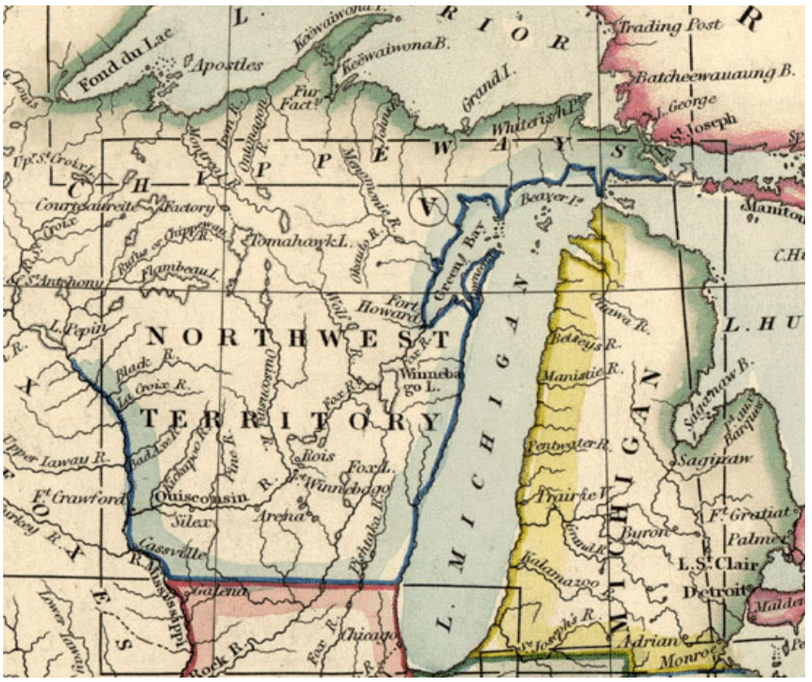
. In the 1820's, however, the Erie Canal was built in New York, linking Lake Erie up the canal to the Hudson River at Albany; a single continuous waterway for shipping was therefore made available from the ports on the Great Lakes (providing access to the interior of the North American Continent) directly to the port at New York City at the sheltered bay at the mouth of the Hudson River. This canal provided an explosion in commerce and corresponding migration to the Great Lakes region.

In 1813, Joseph Eastman Hibbard relocated from Cornish, York County, Maine to Oak Orchard on Wood Creek, near Verona, Oneida County, New York. [While it is unlikely it was known to Aaron Scribner, borh Joseph and his wife Dorothy Eastman Hibbard were Scribner relatives by virtue of being of the same Eastman line into which Elizabeth Scriven had married in the Scriven's first generation in America in the mid-1600s.] Only four years after Joseph had moved to Oneida County -- in 1817 -- construction on the Erie Canal began, and it was close to the location in which Joseph had settled.



The canal was finally completed in 1826, and when done comprised 367 miles from the Hudson River to Lake Erie. It was 40 feet wide at the top, 36 feet at the bottom. four feet deep, allowing for packet and freight boats 60 feet long, 12 feet wide, carrying 50 tons drawn by mules alongside.

The opening of the Erie canal was the impetus for the family of Aaron Scribner to relocate from the north woods of Maine and into the interior, because finally there was transportation available for the lumber that his family had by tradition produced. Joseph Hibbard lived close to the Erie Canal and two of his sons were canal boatmen, Joseph was also a member of Aaron Scribner's extended family: Joseph's daughter Sally had married Enoch J. Morrell, a brother to Mary Morrell; Mary was the mother of Rhoda J. Carll, and the mother-in-law of Aaron Scribner. Thus, Sally was Rhoda Scribner's aunt, and Mary Morrell's sister-in-law. Mary had been widowed in 1833, after which time she came to live with her youngest daughter Rhoda and her



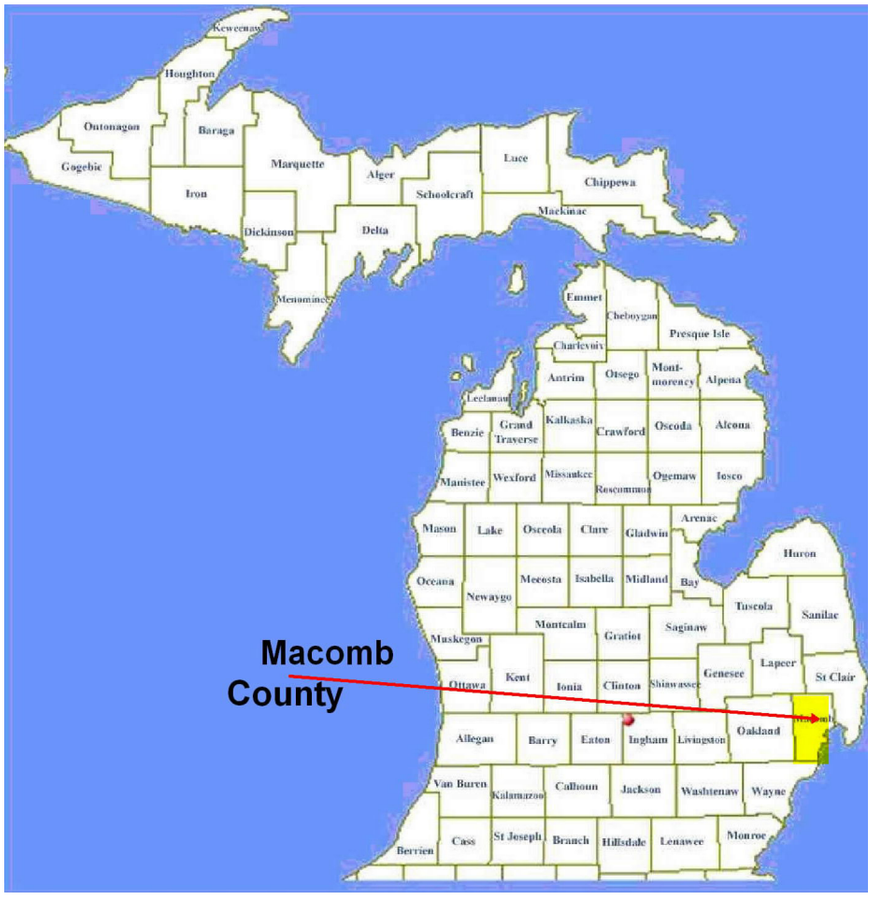
husband Aaron Scribner. So, naturally, when the family relocated along with Mary, one of the places in the Canal region they considered was the home of Mary's relation that already lived and was employed on the canal.

The Scribner's had parented four boys while in Maine: John C. Enoch, Charles W. and Thomas P. We know that both Charles and Thomas were born while the family lived in Brighton, Somerset County, Maine. Charles was born in April or May 1830 -- before the family had been enumerated in the 1830 census in Brighton; Thomas was born 3 October, 1832.

By 1837, Aaron and his family, along with his mother-in-law Mary Morrell, had moved into the Erie Canal region close to Joseph Hibbard, and were living in Verona, Oneida County, New York, when Mary filed affidavits to receive her Revolutionary War widow's pension. While the family was still living in Verona, Sarah Jane was born in July 1839. Sometime after Sarah's birth in July 1839 and before the next June of 1840, the family moved even further into the Great Lakes region -- to Painesville, Concord Township, Lake County, Ohio sometime between February 11, 1839 [the date Mary filed her pension application] and June 1840 [before the census enumeration, at which time Aaron and family were enumerated as residents in Concord, Lake County, Ohio]. Aaron Scribner appears in the census records with correlating family information at Ohio, Lake County, Township of Concord in the 1840 Census Records (National Archives, M704, Reel 407, page 85; Ancestry Image #335 of 377). Rhoda's mother Mary (Morrell) Carll traveled with them from New York to Ohio; she appears on the 1840 Revolutionary War Pensioner Census in Ohio, Lake County in Aaron Scribner's household [See "The Pension Lists of 1792-1795," compiled by Murtie June Clark; published by Genealogical Publishing Company; available online at Genealogy Library.com). The Revolutionary War Pension Application that Mary filed based on the service of her deceased husband John Carll is published at "Abstracts of Revolutionary War Pension Applications," National Genealogical Society Quarterly, Volume 33, page 24. Mary died in Painesville, Lake County, Ohio, in 1841 (adjacent to Concord Township at that time).

Aaron's family may not have been the only Scribners to pursue opportunities in the midwest. Aaron's older brother Peletiah Scribner had fought in the War of 1812, and received a bounty land grant for his service. On 6 July 1818, he received title to 160 acres of land in Richfield Township, Adams County, Illinois, and was an early migrant from Maine to the region. He received the actual bounty paperwork in Zanesville, Ohio. There also exists a marriage record for a "Sally" Scribner to a man named James Fox recorded in Lake County, Ohio on November 19, 1843. Aaron had a younger sister known as "Sally."

Aaron's youngest son Samuel did not appear in the 1840 census because he was born during the residence at Concord, Ohio in 1841 (the year after the census). After Samuel was born and also after his mother-in-law Mary died in December 1841, Aaron moved his family to Michigan (within the Illinois territory); this move must have occurred between 1842-1850.



As the region developed and more land became available for settlement, a wave of settlers moved into the Michigan Territory. Sometime between 1840 and 1850, the Scribner family also moved to Michigan, and Aaron took up farming north of Detroit in Sterling Township, Macomb County, Michigan. The Scribner's immediate neighbor who had also settled further into the region from New York was Frederick G. Hetchler, a Pennsylvania Dutch German descendant. Frederick Hetchler is known to have moved his family from Elba Township, Genesee County, New York, to Erin Township, Macomb County, Michigan in the fall of 1845. At some point after this time, Frederick acquired the land in Sterling Township on which he built a new home for his wife and family. If their neighbor's settlement lends any evidence about the time of the Scribner's settlement, we may surmise that Aaron Scribner probably moved to Sterling Township between 1846-1849. [The location of that home today is at 14711 Clinton River Road, Sterling Heights, Michigan 48313-5616, and is owned by John & Colleen Pawl.] Since Aaron lived next door, we may locate his home location from this address. Aaron died April 10, 1854 in Warren, Macomb County, Michigan; Rhoda's death is as-yet undocumented.

The 1850 entry for Aaron's family group appears in Michigan, Macomb County, Township of Sterling. That census lists his occupation, and that of his son Charles as farmer. There are other entries in Sterling Township, Macomb County for Aaron's sons John C. and Enoch W. next door to each other. In Enoch's entry, his brother Thomas P. and Enoch's wife "Emily" also appear, thus completing the census data for the entire Aaron Scribner family group for that year. John C. appears with his new wife "Francis" (Françoise) and young son Elbridge Scribner.

The 1860 census entry for Enoch Scribner's household contains a woman named Sarah (his wife) age 28, Robert (his son), age 8, Ellen (his daughter), age 6, Frederick (his son), age 1, and Lemuel Sackett, age 30, born in New York [after Enoch's death, his wife would marry Robert S. Campbell - previously married to Frances M. Sackett, brother of Lemuel Sackett].

Both Charles and his sister Sarah met and married next-door neighbors while the family was living on the farm in Macomb County. Sarah married William Stapleton -- who was enumerated in the 1850 census living only two entries apart from the Scribner family in Sterling township; he was living alone with his mother -- who had been born in 1797 in Scotland. [William's father had been born in Ireland and apparently died before the 1850 census.]. The family on the other side of the Scribner was the Frederick G. Hetchler family; Minerva Ann Hetsler -- one of the children in that family married Charles William Scribner [One of four of Sarah's older brothers who had been

born in Maine]. By 1860, Charles and Minerva and William and Sarah were married and living side-by-side in their parent's former homes in Sterling Township -- now the city of Utica. Another family in the same location was John C. Scribner -- the eldest Scribner sibling -- and his wife Françoise Léonide Robertjeanne Scribner. Two other Scribner siblings -- Enoch and Thomas -- were living in nearby Clinton Township in the same County with their new wives and families. [Only the whereabouts of sibling Samuel B. Scribner remains unknown in the 1860 enumeration.]

Charles' wife Minerva Hetsler was the oldest daughter of Frederick G. Hetchler, Aaron's next-door-neighbor and his second wife Mary [or "Mehitable] Benedict.[7] [The name spelling had changed from "Hetzler" the "Hetchler" to "Hetsler" during the last century in America.] Frederick was a descendent of Johann Balthasar Hetzler, an emigrant from Wurrtemburg, German who settled in the Lancaster County area of Pennsylvania as part of the large 'Pennsylvania Dutch" community. His ancestors eventually moved from Pennsylvania to Western New York. Frederick was born about 1810 in Kenia Township, Genessee County, New York, and was a farmer. Frederick lived for a while in lower Ontario, where he married Julia Ann Benedict, and had three children including at least two sons -- Jefferson and Charles. Frederick then returned his family to New York and took up residence at Elba, Gennessee County, New York. Frederick's wife Julia died either in Canada or New York. While in Genesee County, Frederick remarried to a woman named Mary who was born in February 1825 in Canada or New York, and Minerva was the first of four children born of this second marriage. Minerva was born (May 30 [? - per Muriel Steele Smith]) 1841, probably in Elba, Genesee County, New York. Frederick moved his family from Genessee County, New York to Macomb County, Michigan about September 1845. Frederick died in 1855. [Two books about the Hetchler Family are in the Mount Clemens (Michigan) Public Library.]

The Stapletons remained in Sterling Township until sometime in the 1870s when they relocated to an adjoining county and were enumerated in Troy, Oakland County, Michigan in 1880. By 1900, they had established their permanent home in Imlay Township, Lapeer County, Michigan -- another adjacent county. The Stapletons were the parents of one boy and two girls, but lost one girl as a child. The surviving children were Francis W. [Frank] and Martha J. [Mattie].

Part 4: Civil War, Tragedy, and West Coast Migration

According to census entries, Charles William Scribner was a farmer and carpenter. During the Civil War, he enlisted as a private in Co. F, 22nd Regiment, Michigan Infantry, joining the Army for a 3-year enlistment on 21 January 1864 at Utica. Charles was 33 at the time, with blue eyes, auburn hair, standing 5' 8 1/2" tall. While at training camp in Grand Rapids, Charles contracted the measles. Despite the illness, he proceeded with his company as far as Indianapolis, Indiana, where he became worse and had to be taken to a hospital. Charles died in that Indiana hospital only 30 days after joining the Army. One published source asserts that Charles is buried at Indianapolis.[8]

No specific location of burial was specified in that source. Countervailing evidence of the place of Charles' burial comes from 2 affidavits contained in the Civil War Pension File of Peter Steele,[9] which state that the affiants

7 Mary Benedict was the daughter of Reuben Benedict and his wife Nancy Smith; they had come from Rochester, Monroe County, New York; however, Reuben's father James Benedict was a Canadian, hailing from Prince Edward Island. James' wife Ann Barager was also Canadian; little more is known about the Benedict family, and Nancy's Smith family has not yet been identified. Because Frederick Hetchler's first wife was named Julianne Benedict, there is some suspicion that the two wives may have been related -- but this has not been proven yet.

8 Col. George H. Turner [comp.], RECORD OF SERVICE OF MICHIGAN VOLUNTEERS IN THE CIVIL WAR, 1861-1865, 22 [Kalamazoo, MI: Published by Authority of the Senate and House of Representatives of the Michigan Legislature, under the direction of Brig. Gen. Geo. H. Brown, Adjutant General, by Ihling Bros. & Everard Stationers, Printers and Publishers, 1903], 128.

9 Affidavits of Thomas P. Scribner, Source Serial #0505 & Mary [Steele] Hetsler, Source Serial #0498.

both attended the funeral of Charles W. Scribner on 3 March 1864 in Detroit, and positively identified his remains at that time. Based on those affidavits, it is reasonable to conclude that Charles must have been buried in Michigan sometime after his memorial service, which was held on 3 March 1864 in Detroit. Most likely, Charles is buried in a national cemetery somewhere in the Detroit, Michigan area with other civil war-era soldiers. It is simply inconceivable that Charles' body would be removed to Detroit for a funeral and then moved back to the distant location for burial.

Charles left behind his widow and two young sons, including our ancestor Charles William Scribner [who went by "William C. Scribner"] and his brother Thomas Jefferson Scribner [who also switched his name and went by "Jefferson T. Scribner"]. Minerva re-married after Charles' death. Her second husband was Peter Steele whom she married 25 January 1866 at Utica. They had seven children. Peter Steele was a brother to Catherine Steele, the wife of Charles' brother, Thomas; he was also brother to Mary Steele, who later married Minerva's half-brother Charles Hetsler. [The families would become even more intertwined later when Charles and Minerva's son, William C. married Peter Steele's sister, Caroline; and when Peter's brother Richard Steele, Jr. married Charles' niece, Ellen --daughter of Charles' brother Enoch]. In addition to intermarriages between these three families, there is an even more complicated and vast extended family in the north Detroit area that included Nortons, Jeans, Wentworths, Harringtons and others.

Peter Steele before his marriage had served in the Civil War, in Co. G, 5th Regiment, Michigan Infantry. That outfit fought at Gettysburg and other important battles, and was honored by being in the firing line at Appomattox Courthouse when General Robert E. Lee surrendered to General Ulysses S. Grant, ending the war. Peter was wounded in the line of duty at the Battle of Petersburg when he sustained a gunshot wound to the left thigh. He remained disabled throughout his adult life; he walked with a limp and was in a considerable amount of pain. He eventually died from an abscess related to that wound. Although Peter and Minerva produced at least seven children, only two are known to have lived to adulthood -- Lewis and Peter (although one other child -- Frederick -- was known to have also been alive at the time of Peter's death and may have also lived to adulthood but is otherwise unknown). The bitter cold winters of Michigan made it difficult to raise healthy children, and death records show that at least two of the Steele children died of cholera.

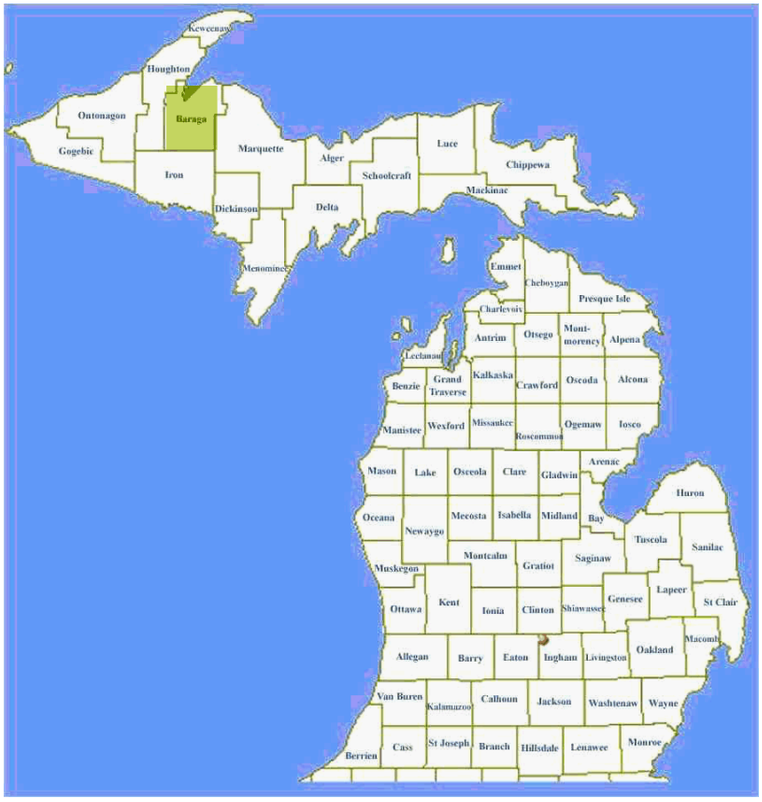
Muriel Steele describes in her family history compilation the circumstances for Peter and Clinton Steele's relocation to the West Coast. She attributes this account to her Aunt Carrie -- also known as Caroline Steele Scribner. Minerva [aka "Mary"] was a fun-loving person, but Peter was "a devil to be with" -- likely due to his miserably painful chronic condition resulting from the gunshot wound. He became very jealous of Mary, and in a particularly angry exchange in about 1881 he told her that he would take the baby [Clinton -- who was only 2 years old] and go so far away that she would never see him again. He thereafter did just that. One day in about 1884, he took young Clinton, got on a train, and came to Portland, Oregon where he bought land and took up residence in Lents, Multnomah County, Oregon. Clinton was only 6 years old when he left.

Minerva -- Clinton's mother -- died in August 1890. Shortly thereafter, Peter realized that he was dying from complications due to his gunshot wound and that Clinton would be orphaned and essentially alone (since he had

become isolated from his large extended family when Peter moved him). Peter placed an ad in the local Portland newspaper seeking foster parents for the young Clinton. John and Mary Jewell -- residents of Clark County, Washington and otherwise strangers -- answered the ad. The families came to an agreement and guardianship papers were signed; Clinton was to retain his father's name, be treated as a son, and at his majority he was to receive a sum of money or a team and rig. In all other respects, Clinton was thereafter legally a bound boy. Peter died in February 1891. His estate was probated in Clackamas County, Oregon.

Charles William Scribner, also known as "William C. Scribner" was the oldest of the two young sons left behind when Charles Scribner died in the Civil War. Along with his younger brother, he lived with his mother and her second husband Peter Steele and half-siblings for many years in Bay City, Michigan. He began sawmill work at age 11 in 1871 alongside his step-father. While he was working in Saginaw, Michigan, he was running a double edger machine when his partner quit to join Custer's 7th Cavalry [a very bad decision, indeed!].

In Bay City in 1881, William married Caroline -- the younger sister of his step-father Peter. By 1900, he had established a homestead in Baraga Township, Baraga County, Michigan. The family would spend many years in Baraga; that is the location where my grandfather, Thomas Jefferson Scribner, was born. [It would also be the location chosen for Tom's sister Grace's burial in 1922.] Baraga is the location that the older Scribner children regarded as "home."



However, by 1911, hard times had fallen again, and William and Caroline had relocated to Gemmell, Koochiching County, Minnesota (about 60 miles south of International Falls). In both the 1910 and 1920 census entries, the family was located in Cloquet City, Carlton County, Minnesota. By 1922, he moved from Cloquet, Minnesota, to Bend, Oregon.

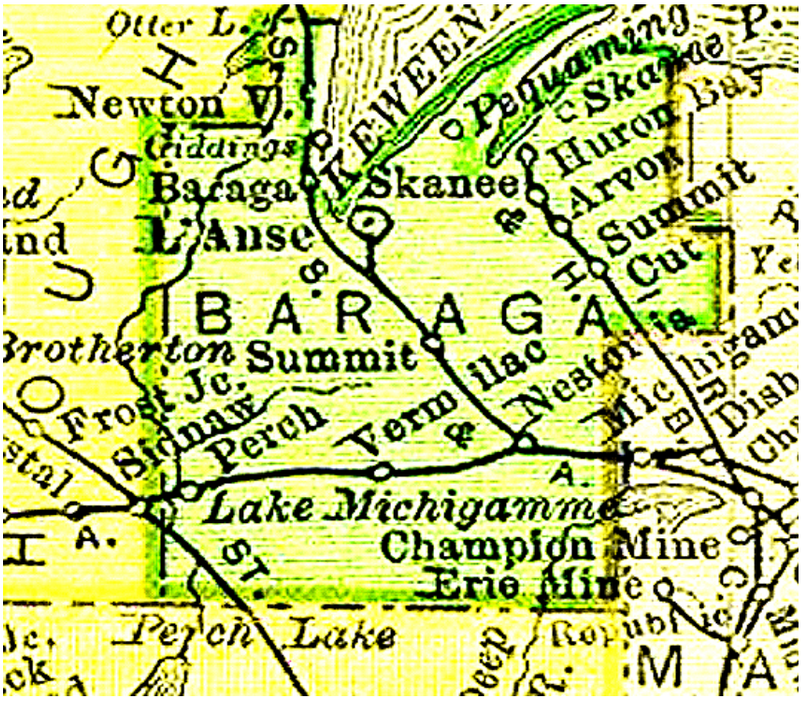
William C. Scribner's obituary notice in "The Redmond Spokesman" (Redmond, OR), 29 June 1944, states his date of death, that he had a widow named Ella, and four sons who survived him: Charles, Tom, Phil and Aaron. The obituary states that he moved to Bend from Cloquet, Carlton County, Minnesota, where he had moved after living in Saginaw (Saginaw County) and Bay City (Bay County), Michigan. He worked in sawmills for 50 years. After arriving in Bend, he went to work as a tail sawyer for the Shevlin-Hixon Company. With the exception of two years (which he spent in Carson, Skamania County, Washington), he worked for that same company until 1944.

His obituary indicates the reason for his moving through the years: "When the pine was exhausted in Saginaw and Bay City, Michigan, he migrated to Minnesota, and from there came to Oregon." A business card for William while he lived in Bend, Oregon states his birthdate [Nov. 5, 1860], his address: 444 DeKalb Ave., Bend, Oregon, and his occupation as a "Dealer in Specialties."

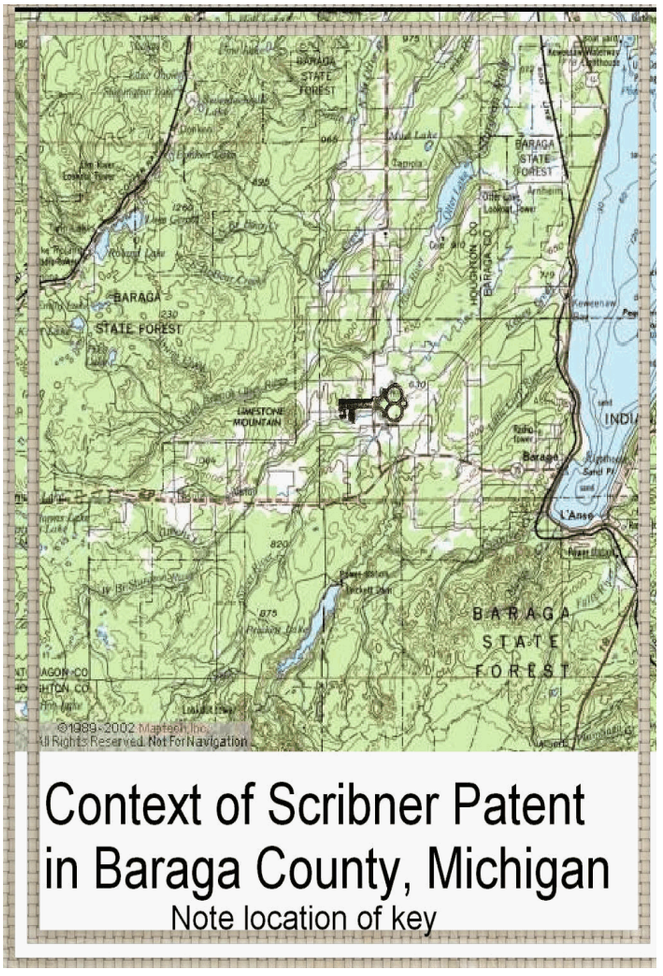
Tom was born in 1899 on the upper peninsula of Michigan in the town of Baraga, on a small bay on Lake Superior in the copper country of Michigan. Tom was the grandson of a Michigan Civil War Volunteer Infantryman who had died during the war, and the son of a Bay City-Saginaw area lumberjack who had worked as an edgerman his whole life, and in the tradition of his Scribner forebears, followed the lumber industry booms. The civil war had financially devastated Tom's father's family, and they were

Michigan Map: Baraga County, Upper Peninsula

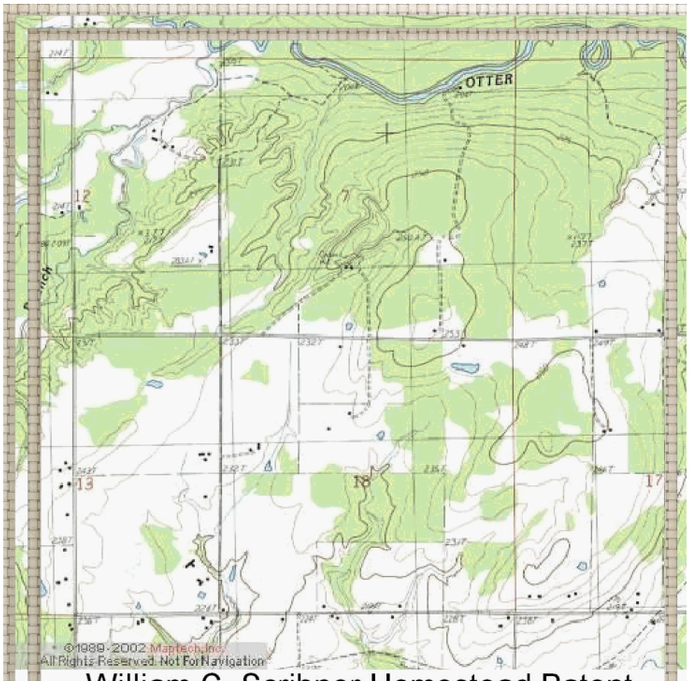
1895 MAP OF BARAGA COUNTY, MICHIGAN



always struggling to make ends meet. Earlier generations of Scribners (including the relative who invented the Scribner Log Scale) had moved from the great northern woods of New Hampshire into new settlements in Maine in the mid-1700s, then into northern Maine and then to the Lake states interior after the opening of the Erie canal in the 1820s. After the Pine was exhausted in Saginaw and Bay City, Michgan in the late 1800s, Tom's own Scribner famiily first moved to the upper Michigan peninsula, and then to the northen woods of Minnesota at Cloquet, Gemmell, and International Falls. International Falls was across the river from Fort Frances, Ontario, Canada. At Fort Frances there was a Shevlin-Hixon mill where Tom's brother Charles Nathaniel Scribner had worked as a sawyer until he joined the Canadian Expeditionary Force and was sent to Europe -- only to be put



Context of Scribner Patent in Baraga County, Michigan
Note location of key



William C. Scribner Homestead Patent
July 30, 1900; 160 Acres
South of Otter River. West of Pelkie, Michigan;
Sections 7 & 18 of Twp 51N, Range 34W
in Baraga County, Michigan

Tom and older brother Willie Scribner

to work as a sawyer in a mill in France -- but for far less pay! .By the 1920s, even Tom's father had moved to the west coast to follow the timber booms.

In the 1920 census enumeration Tom was listed as a boarder in Tacoma, Washington, staying with Clara Lucas. Sometime between that 1920 census and 1922, Thomas joined the U.S. Army; by 1922 Tom was assigned to the 35th U.S. Infantry, Co. G, at Schofield Barracks in Honolulu, Hawaii. [Tom said that when the tides came in they would flood the barracks!]

Tom's oldest sibling, Grace Beatrice Scribner, had been working in New York City as the Assistant Secretary for the Methodist Federation for Social Service. From 1906-1910, Grace had attended the Chicago Training School for City, Home and Foreign Missions. Her education piqued an interest in mission service and provided her a basis for understanding the concept of the class struggle and the politics of the far left -- which she enthusiastically shared with her younger brother Tom. Tom idolized Grace; Grace sent money home whenever she could; Grace also encouraged Tom to leave their parents' home in Cloquet, Minnesota to Washington state; they had family there, she reminded him -- the Clinton Steele family lived in Battle Ground, in Clark County, just north of Portland. Grace had been concerned for Tom's health -- he was a "scrawny" boy and she was concerned he might contract Tuberculosis.

Tragically, Grace died suddenly in New York City after being struck by an automobile in a street accident in April 1922. Tom would never completely recover from Grace's death. Although Tom was promoted to Sergeant on 14 August 1922, his family was struggling to cope with his sister's death. Tom was separated from his family by distance and duty; but his grief eventually overcame him and he deserted from the Army. Tom was captured and thereafter spent 1 year in Leavenworth Prison. [Members of the Steele family state that his politics were radicalized when he was in prison, and he came out of prison an avowed Communist. My theory is that it is more likely Grace's death itself that created the change in Tom; the driver was never held to account for the accident to Tom's family.]

In any event, no matter the genesis, Tom chose to be a communist. He idealized the theories of communism; he envisioned no rich -- no poor -- a "workers commonwealth." Despite historical events that stand as a stark challenge to those ideas, Tom adhered to those sentiments to the end of his life in the 1980s.

Tom Scribner was one of the last living veterans of the Industrial Workers of the World, who numbered more than 150,000 members and many more sympathizers at the height of their influence in 1919. The Wobblies, who led the movement of the migrant workers of the west, preached of the "one big union" and "one big strike" that

William C. & Caroline Scribner, About 1914

Postcard to Tom [known as "Jeff" to family]

The Scribner Family: Charles N. Caroline, William C., Grace; [Front] Aaron T., Willie

William C. Scribner in Sawmill [Tom's father]

they believed would bring economic and social equality. Young Scribner's heroes included IWW balladeer Joe Hill, executed before a Utah firing squad; Eugene Debs, who urged workers to refuse service in World War I and ran for president from his prison cell; Elizabeth Gurley Flynn, who helped lead a mass strike of women textile workers in Lawrence, Massachusetts, and Big Bill Haywood, who shot it out with company gunmen in the mine wars of the Rockies. The following section is Tom's own description of his life, culled from various publications, manuscripts and other writings.

William C. Scribner

Part 5: The Autobiography of Tom Scribner

I first got involved with the IWW in 1907, long before I even went to work. I was eight years old, selling Collier's, Country Gentlemen, The Saturday Evening Post and the Saturday Blade in the logging camps near my home in Gremmel [sic], Minnesota. After a while, the Wobblies in the camps were asking, "hey kid, why don't you bring us the Industrial Workers, solidarity and the Masses (IWW and socialist papers)? We'll buy them." Not knowing about them, Tom's older sister Grace, who was an associate of Dr. Harry F. Ward of Union Theological Seminary sent the family subscriptions to the "Solidarity" "The Appeal to Reason" and the "Masses" magazine so Tom became acquainted with the Socialist Philosophy and the concept of a Class struggle at an early age. So he asked his dad. "God almighty no," he said. "them's red publications. You don't want to go selling them." "My old man -- worked as an edgerman all his life -- wasn't for socialism, but then he wasn't against it either. so after a while I was selling them anyway.

Sgt. Tom Scribner, U.S. Army, Scholfield Barracks, Honolulu, Hawaii 1921

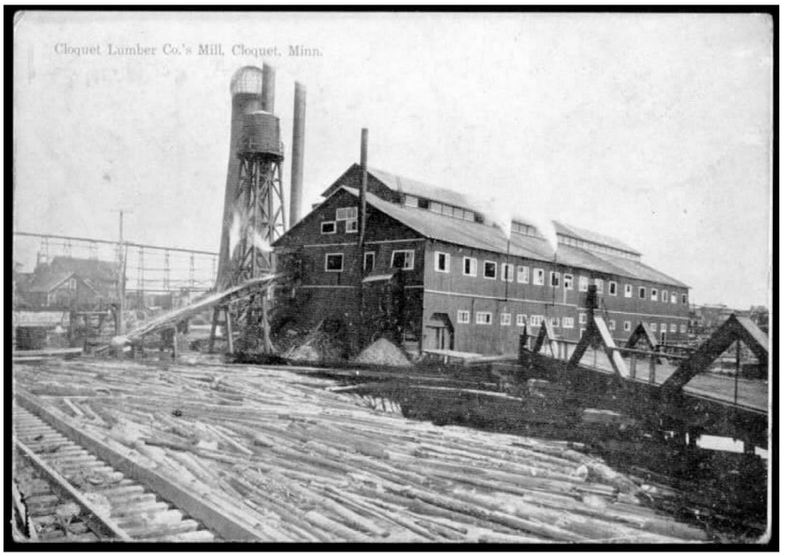
My dad had been in the Knights of Labor, but he didn't like the IWW. He said they were too goddamn radical. Those were the words he used. He said he would never accept the idea that the working class and the employing class had nothing in common. But he knew damn well it was true. In 1912 he took me to a political rally at the Bijou Theater in Duluth, Minnesota. The main speakers were Eugene Victor Debs ad Big Bill Haywood. Daniel DeLeon was there, too. It was a campaign to elect Eugene V. Debs president of the United States on the Socialist ticket. My father warned me, "Remember, he's a great speaker, an influential speaker, a good orator, but what he's talking about is

Cloquet Lumber Company Mill, 1902

just a dream. It can't happen. It'd be a good thing if it could happen, but it can't." At that time Haywood was still in the Socialist Party and a backer of Debs, whereas most of the Wobblies weren't. The other wing, the anarchists and syndicalists, didn't believe in any kind of political action. They said Debs was just another politician and wouldn't back him. The political wing did, and when the split came, the political wing mainly went into the Communist movement..

Seven years later in 1914,

I was old enough to go to work in the woods for the Weyerhauser Timber Company near Cloquet, Minnesota. Although I had only finished 7th grade, I preferred working in the woods and sending home money to the chores my old man would have given me had I stayed home -- clearing land. I guess about the first thing I did when I hit camp was look up the "walking delegate." He "packed the rigging," as they used to say -- and I joined the IWW. He was surprised, of course, guess no one that young had ever just walked up to him and asked to join before. But I remember what he said. "O.K. kid, that's what we've got to have, every working man in the country." So -- I gladly joined the I.W.W. (Wobblies) and remained with them until they had practically vanished from the scene. 'Course my father didn't like it one bit.



I got my first job in vaudeville and my first job in logging in the same year -- 1914. That was also the year I joined the IWW in the Minnesota woods. Four years before that, when I was just eleven, I saw someone playing a musical saw on a stage in Duluth and I fell in love with the sound and decided I would learn to play it. For two years there I played in vaudeville in the summer and worked in the woods in the winter. Then I left to go to Everett, Washington. All the lumberjacks were going west. They all said the same thing: there's lots of work out west and timber there will last forever. Well, forever is just about over now. Anyways, I just played saw on and off through the years in circus bands, vaudeville bands, dance bands. I worked solo sometimes, but the saw is not really a solo instrument. It's best accompanied by a piano. I also played with guitarists and banjo pickers. The working saw had its origin as a musical instrument about the time of the founding of the republic. It didn't go into decline until around 1921, when the Hawaiian steel guitar came in.

In the camps in those days we lived 150 men in a bunkhouse, ate in a dining room with tin plates nailed to

the table. To wash dishes, they'd just take a wet rag and come down the line, swabbing out each plate. We worked ten hour days, six days a week. On Sundays, we'd boil our clothes and just mope around camp. It was over 100 miles to town, there was just nowhere to go. I started as a swamper for one dollar a day. My job was to go ahead of the horse and cut the brush back to make way for the logging sled -- a two runner affair called a "go-devil." We worked all winter like that hauling logs to the river, stacking them thirty feet high on a log-deck called a "roll-away." Come spring, we'd cut the wire holding it all together and the deck would come crashing down onto the ice. The log drive would be on . . . 150 miles to the mill at Cloquet. We'd ride them down, of course -- as it was the only practical way to do it. The river was moving slowly, except for sections of rapids. Those would be the bad ones. The logs would bump a rock on the bottom, hang up and go crossways -- we'd have to keep rolling tem off the damn rocks and breaking jams. We'd use a cant hook with a four-foot handle, throw it over the log like a wrench on a nut. Falling was common, of course. Most of the greenhorns would take a dip in that icy water at least once a day. But not the old experienced river pigs, they'd hardly ever go in. Once in the water, you can't crawl up on the side of a log, 'cause it would keep rolling with you. so you'd have to go to the end -- and that's where the danger is. If another log comes up behind you... well you're a gone goose. They would kill up to 20 men on a river drive -- 20 out of 150. One that got hurt would be taken into town on a sleigh. The dead ones we'd plant on the river bank. Put a little cross up there and hang their cork shoes on it. But another river pig coming along would see those boots and take 'em.

Jefferson ["Jeff"] Scribner

1919, Age 20; Photographer - Pope, Hawthorne St., Portland, Or

My generation of "timber beasts" was the one historically slated to see the city of Cloquet, Minn. lose its title as "lumber capitol" of the U.S. by 1914 to Everett, Wash. By 1916, work was fading fast, and all the lumberjacks were going west as lake states men were in great demand. So I followed the procession and headed for Everett, Washington -- right at the top of the country figuring to work my way down. I came out with a partner in 1916 -- encouraged by my older sister Grace because tuberculosis was prevailing in the Upper Minnesota and Michigan Peninsular areas, and Grace was afraid I would contract it (because I was so scrawny),. We had money from working the drive so we came "on the cushions" -- paid our way on the Great Northern [Railroad] from Duluth, Minnesota. We wore our mackinaws and our shagged-off wool pants and rubbers. And we had our turkeys, a grainsack for our gear -- put a spud in one corner, tie a rope around it and sling it over your shoulder. So we got off the train at Everett, cold sober, bothering no one and two policemen walked up to us. They looked us over for a moment and asked, "Where you boys going?" My partner spoke up. "Downtown, nothing illegal about that, is there?" "No," says the cops. "But we got other ideas for you. Why don't you come on down with us to the station house?" They searched us there, and found our IWW books -- which was a ticket to get beat up. Next morning they marched us to the edge of town. "Seattle's that way," they said. "Just keep on walking." But we paid no attention.

We had arrived in a town that was under martial law. Weeks earlier, the local police had begun arresting IWW's for speaking on the street. There had been a general strike of the Shingle Weavers A.F.L. and the I.W.W. at the time and free speech had been banned. Well, the minute the organization heard about that, Wobblies began pouring into Everett to continue the campaign. Wobblies came from near and far just to "speak on the street." Of course they had to be arrested for such a heinous crime so the jails were full. In Seattle, the IWW chartered a ferry, the Verona, to take several hundred more members to Everett. But the local townspeople got alarmed, the Chamber of Commerce told them that thousands of us were coming to tear their town apart. So they got the National Guard out on the docks with machine guns. And as the tug came into port and began tying up at the pier in Everett, one trigger-happy soldier cut loose, then all of them began firing into the boatload of unarmed Wobblies -- killing six and

wounding more than 100. We called it the "Everett Massacre," but the history books refer to it as "the Verona affair." Well -- it took this, and a lot more just to restore freedom of speech, supposedly guaranteed by the constitution! So much for relying on the constitution for your rights. The only sure way is to rely on your own organized might. Old Tom Jefferson said, "eternal vigilance is the price of liberty."

Violence, particularly organized vigilante action against us, was very common. I remember another incident in 1919 in Centralia, Washington. The American Legion got a permit to parade down the main street, but instead went through a side alley where our hall was located. They were carrying lynch ropes, clubs, rifles and pistols. One of them shouted, "Let's go in and get the red bastards!" So they broke ranks and headed for the hall. Then a few Wobblies came out the front door -- and we had Winchester rifles too. But the legion wouldn't stop, so the Wobb's levered right into them -- killing four and wounding a bunch more. That night the lights mysteriously went out all over Centralia, and a group of vigilantes broke into the jail where the police had taken the IWW's. They got one man, Wesley Everett -- took him in a car where they worked him over with knives -- then drove to the Centralia River bridge. With the headlights shining on the bridge, they threw a rope over the railing and hung him there. Then they cut him down and hung Everett again -- riddling his body with rifle fire. There were a lot of vigilantes in the Northwest, mostly small businessmen. They would find a Wobbly and string him up, just like they were lynching Negroes in the South. They called us "UTEs" -- undesirable, transient elements. We were the footloose ones, the boomers, we moved around more. They make a gypsy out of you in lumber; there's always a mill going up and another shutting down. So you move, you find a new master. And when there's no work at all we'd get "dirt moving jobs" -- building roads. Lots of us would get into longshoring, construction, farm work -- any outdoor job. They'd all pay about the same, but I would always get back into logging. Work is work -- it's all the same to me. But I like the woods -- they're interesting, every day is different.

I was blacklisted in 1916 and that held until 1935, when the Wagner Act illegalized blacklists. At least it was supposed to. They still used them, but it had to be underground after that. If I worked in camps before that time, I'd

be John Steele or John Boke or whatever; any name would do. I heard about the Bolshevik Revolution in a logging camp near what is now Valsetz, Oregon. It was 1917. Terrific arguments started every night in the bunkhouse. The chairman of the IWW would get up and open the meeting. He'd bang a work shoe on the table to get attention and say something like, "Gather round here, fellow workers. We've got a goddamn revolution to talk about." That chairman happened to be one of the pro-political faction, so he'd say, "The Russkies beat us to it and we've got to re-examine what we're doing and see where we're short. The fact is that they've done the trick and we're still talking." Then someone from the opposite side would grab him by the shirt and say, "Sit down, you Big Hoosier, you don't know what you're talking about." It was fast and furious. Generally, it'd break up with fist fights. I was only eighteen then and I'll tell you I was shy of those slab-sided lumberjacks. In those days I believed in the Debs dream, a socialist world without war or police. I still think it's going to take several generations to breed greed out of people. The only way that can be done is by changing the methods of production. The methods of production determine human nature in any country. You have a capitalist method in this country, and there's more at stake here than anywhere else. As a result you have the most savage ruling class in the world.

That savagery was obvious in the lumber camps. There were lots of accidents. In those days we clearcut -- skinned it, took everything off. "Cut out and get out," we used to say. That wasn't right, but that don't mean that I agree with the Sierra Club and those environmentalists -- they're a bunch of nuts. I am all in accord with saving the timber -- but not an old dead tree that's over-ripe and should be out of there. Their idea is not to touch anything. And that would leave an over-ripe tree -- dead or dying (and trees rot from the top down). Then lightning comes along, strikes it and throws fire everywhere. One thing the environmentalists don't understand is that timber is a crop -- when it's ripe you harvest it. Nature does that -- just takes a hell of a lot longer. But I'll grant you, years ago they slaughtered right and left. The loggers had no power over it -- just cut what they told you or go down the line.

Anytime you work in the woods, it's dangerous. We handled the heaviest stuff in the world -- timber. Got

any idea how much a tree weighs? And there we'd be, handling it with a steel donkey, slapping it about like it was a match. They killed a lot of men in the old days before we were organized. I worked for one camp that killed fifty-two men in one year. They also had the record for loading the most lumber in an eight-hour day -- sixty carloads of logs. But it took a man a week to do it.

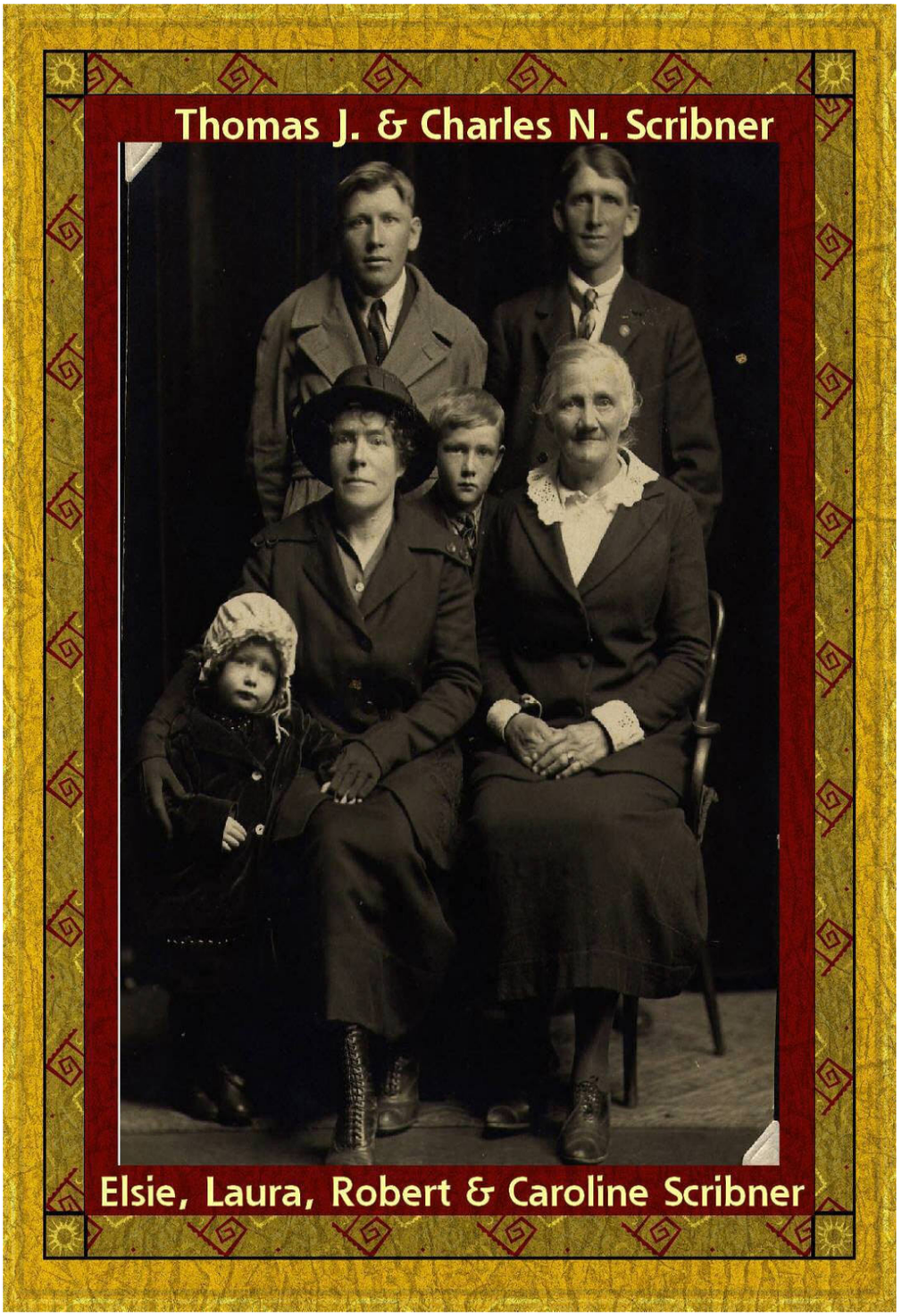
I had seven major accidents which sent me to the hospital with broken arms, legs, and ribs. I also had a finger cut off in a rig. I fell headfirst toward the saw and had the choice to take it on the head or throw up a hand. I was in the hospital seven times in logging accidents. But the worst one I ever had was when a log rolled down a hill on me. Knocked me flat, rolled up chest high -- breaking four ribs and squeezed all my insides out my tail end. Laid out there for three hours till the others found me. Even then they had to get a log jack to get that thing off me. Now that was a bad one, let me tell you. My insides fell out of my tail end and hung way down to the tops of my cork shoes. Twenty years later I saw the nurse who took care of me. She was surprised to see me still alive and still working in a saw mill. She said the doctor had to stuff my intestines back in like they were rope, curling them and shoving them back up inside of me. After that log fell on me, I really did't have the strength to work in the woods any more, so I became a pond monkey... taking it easy on the log pond. 'Course to a lot of guys, that's damn hard work, but like I tell them, there aren't any mountains on a log pond. You got to have balance on that job, 'cause you're working on sme pretty small logs nowadays. Seems like the older I got, the smaller they got. It would always seem to me they would consider the direction of the average wind when building a pond. But they always seem to make them backwards, and the wind's forever blowing away from the mill. I've never seen it any other way.

Well, the Wobblies were concerned with safety issues. They led the fight against the brake block, which was particularly dangerous. It was outlawed. In the camps, the company was always

figuring ways to use loggers against each other. They'd have a "bucking and falling board," with every name on it, and how many thousand feet each had produced. Naturally, it would keep all of us working against each other -- and for the same money. But when it came to laying off -- they'd go down the list. You had to work like hell to keep toward the top. It was always pushed on me to organize. the men would say, "let the kid do the talking, he's pretty well educated." That's a laugh -- all I had was eighth grade schooling. In my time, working class kids were lucky to finish grade school -- that's as far as their folks could afford to send them. Workers were notoriously poorly educated. Nowadays, working class kids go to college like everybody else -- where they get both educated and miseducated.

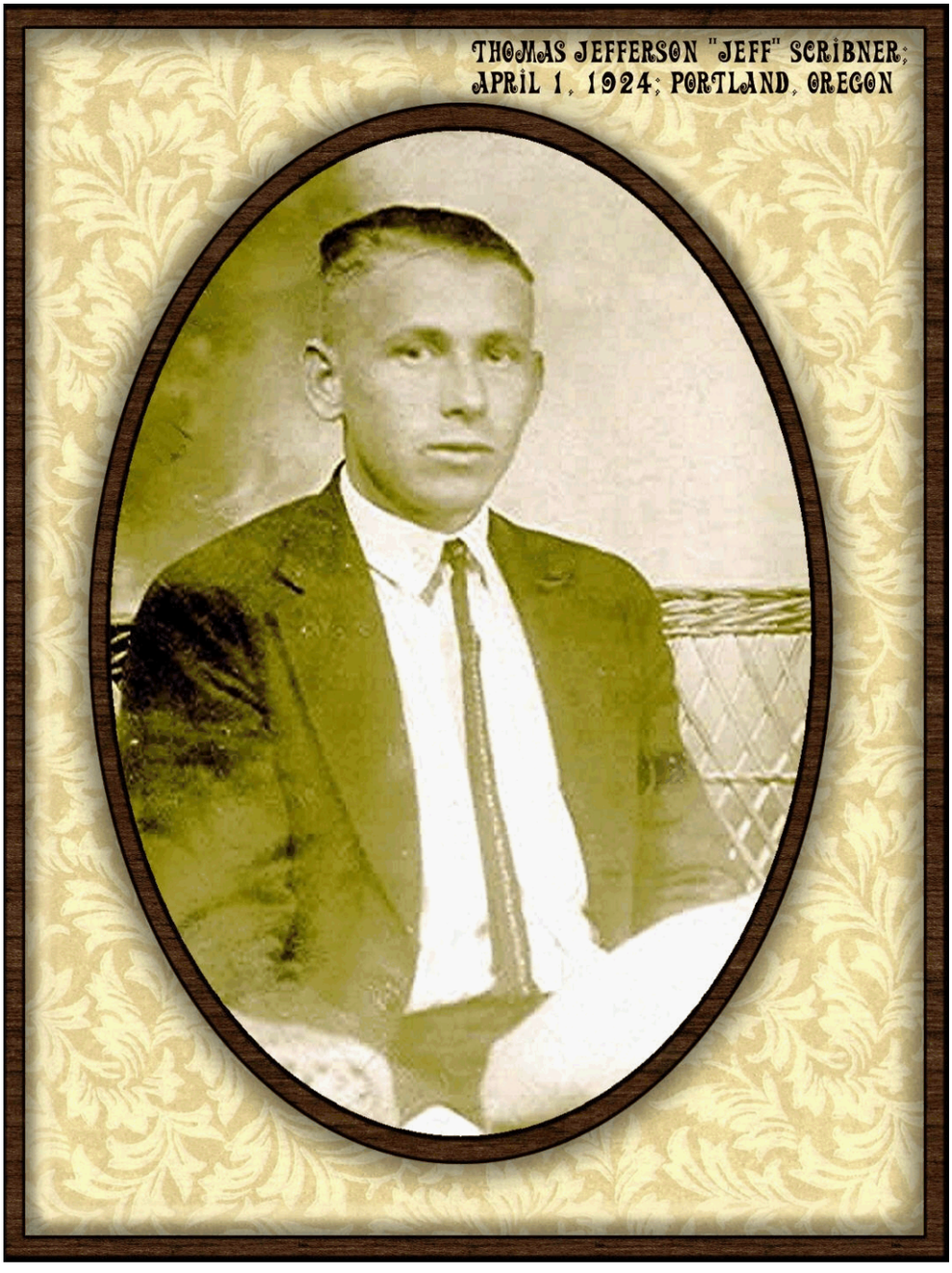
Conditions varied from camp to camp, but nothing would have changed if not for union activity. Still, nothing came easy. In 1919 we had a coast wide strike over the issue of showerbaths and blankets. Up to that time, we had to drag our blankets with us from camp to camp -- walking through towns like a bunch of packmules. Men were carrying lice from one camp to the next. We would no sooner get a bunkhouse cleaned up, and here would

Tom & brother Charles N. Scribner; Charles N's wife Laura and children Elsie and Robert; also Tom & Charles' mother Caroline; estimated date 1920.

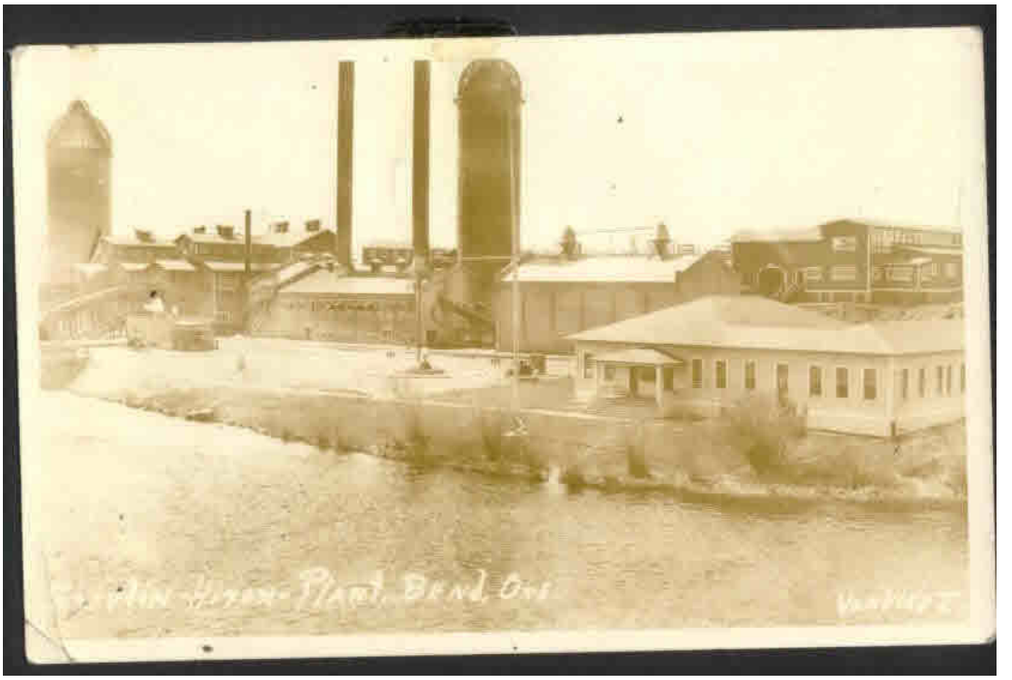


come some logger with bad blankets. So we demanded that the company furnish clean bedding, twice a week like any civilized place. Naturally, they resisted it like hell -- and we refused to go to work. The companies started advertising for men. "Must have blankets," they said. So we got together five man committees which met every train, bus and boat. Anytime we saw a lumberjack come into town with blankets -- we'd pin his arms back, take 'em and burn 'em. You should have seen the faces on some of those guys. Finally we won -- and the companies had to hire a bedmaker, too. The food used to be pretty bad til we had two or three strikes about that. Later it became a tradition that you could get the best meal in the world in a logging camp. 'Course today, lumberjacks drive to work like everybody else. They want families, everybody wants to live at home. You couldn't afford to have a family in those days -- times made it that way.

There was a group in the IWW that we called the sabcats and the blackcats and names like that. They believed in wrecking machinery. We used to argue with them saying, 'You guys are crazy. You're blowing up and destroying equipment we'll have to rebuild when we take over. We want to organize these workers, and take over the means of production, not destroy them.'



Your people of today think corruption is a new phenomenon in unions, but the leaders of labor have always served as lieutenants of the capitalist class within the ranks of the workers. You pay a union officer seventy-five thousand or more a years, and he's going to look after his own best interests and those of the stockholds of the companies he's involved with. As far as the AF of L goes, in the old days, they told us: a fair day's wage for a fair day's work. The IWW countered: organize the working class to take over the means of production and create a new society in the shell of the old. The AF of L wanted no



part of that proposition, I can tell you. We used to call Gompers, "old Sell'em Out Sam."

In my estimation, the best tactic that came out of the IWW was slowing production. That brought bosses to their knees quicker than anything else. General strikes were effective, too. We had an important one in 1917 that spread up and down the Pacific Coast. I was in Seattle then and we would get calls for help. Twenty-five of us would load into cars and go strenghen a picket line in some other town. We were roving pickets. In that area, it was more or less a movement of single men. The big demand we won was the eight-hour day. The Knights of Labor had failed to get it and so had the AF of L. Oh, the owners tried to stop us any way they could. They created a spruce division in the army. They'd draft a logger, maybe he was a bucker or a faller, and they'd put him in the woods to work alongside a man who was getting civilian pay. The civilian was drawing ten to fifteen dollars a day and the poor devil from the army was getting thirty dollars a month.

The reaction to the IWW was mixed. Some workers wanted to hang on to the old, fearful of any change because one crumb was better than none at all -- the conservative element which you've always got. But others were more interested in getting out and doing something. I remember how disgusted I would get sometimes. The camp always had a table with magazines and reading material. So I would come in from town with Wobbly papers and lay them down. Then the stiffs would come in -- and look very carefully around till they found a Police Gazette. It was disgusting.

There were camps that were 100% Wobbly -- from the foreman on down. A new man would come into camp -- not knowing, of course. And the bullbuck would come up to him. "I'll bet you're one of those IWW's." "Oh no," the logger would say, "Not me -- I'd never join that outfit.""Well, then get out of here," the bullbuck would growl. "This camp's organized." But then they had what was called "4-L camps" -- The Loyal Legion of Loggers and Lumbermen. They were organized by the companies and the government to insure production during the war. We'd call them "long, lean, lousy lumberjacks." I worked in them too. And like you'd expect, the pay was worse and so were the conditions. I got run out of some camps too. One company was a particularly hard nut to crack -- only had three IWW's there at the time. So I thought I would try it. But the "bull of the woods" run me off with a double bitted axe. "We ain't going to have no red bastards in this camp," he yelled. Later, however, we had it organized.

The next lumber capitol after Everett was Tacoma, Wash., and then in rapid succession Grays Harbor Wash. area, Portland, Eugene, and Roseburg, Ore. By the time of the Russian Revolution in November 1917, I was 18 years old and was setting chokers in the logging camp of the Siletz Lumber and Logging Co. near Independence, Oregon (now a town called Valsetz). People were starting to take more of an interest in organizing after that

Revolution was announced, and that was about the time that the Wobblies were at their peak. People will ask how we signed men into the IWW. Well, in those days, we'd put it to them cold. We were a revolutionary organization of labor, dedicated to the taking over of the means of production and building a new society within the shell of the old. We didn't pull any punches. We couldn't offer much in those days. Nothing we used to say, but a chance to fight for better conditions of labor. There's two kinds of unions, those that are operated as business and others that are run for the benefit of the members. One thing that must be said for the IWW is that it was a clean organization. There was only one paid officer in the whole outfit -- the General Secretary. And all he got was four bits an hour, same as on the job. We had no war chest, no money in reserve. when we had a strike, all we could do was solicit funds. And the dues were very low. You paid the traveling organizer when he came around camp. He'd ask, "Fellow worker, are your dues stamped up?" And you'd show him your book and say, "while you're at it, stamp me ahead a few months." We had no piecards, no paid officials -- none of that stuff.

When we hit town, the best bet was to go down to the private employment office. All the jobs would be written down -- one chokersetter, one sawyer, one edgerman. We would have to buy the jobs, cost one day's pay. Then we'd go through another hurdle -- the loggers hiring hall -- set up by the employers. You'd give them your name and they would run down a card index file. If they found you they'd say, "sorry, can't send you out." Blacklisted! 'Course it didn't stop us, 'cause we'd go out on a phony name. They didn't have Social Security or identification in those days. I had a regular name -- but I didnt dare go out on it. So I would have a whole list of other "working" names to use.

By 1927 I was a scaler in a sawmill on the Columbia River at St. Helens, Oregon. I didn't get married till 1927. When I finally did, I got a lot of kidding about it from friends. But I figured I had as much right to starve a wife and a bunch of kids as the next man (nearly did, too). [LCF Note: Because Tom and Dixie were first cousins, the consanguinity laws of Washington did not allow them to get married. So, instead they were married in Portland, Oregon, just across the Columbia River from Washington State.] Dixie and I first lived in St. Helens, Columbia County, Oregon.

In 1937 I heard about some pine outfits starting up in central Washington, around Chelan, Wash. I threw the cork shoes and my working gear in the old model T and took off for Chelan. Having been a "pine cat" I soon had a job cutting logs and piling brush for a small pine outfit north of Chelan near Pateros, Wash. And, by my leaving, the wife and kids could draw my rations on welfare until I got a payday. A ration was $1.20 per week, per person. After two months work, I was able to move the family over there. So, in 1937, I moved the family to Methow, on the edge of Okanagan National Forest in Okanagan County.

During my second year there, my wife died from strep throat. At that time I had three boys, aged three to

9 and a baby girl aged two. Hired a housekeeper. Next it was rumored that a bunch of local women were seeking a court order to turn the kids over to custody of the court. Bundled the kids up, took them to Seattle, and put them into a childrens home so I could get them out if -- and when. The women figured I couldn't raise the kids alone, but I thought differently. The REAL reason on the part of the women was that I had tried to organize the camp into the C.I.O Woodworders union. "Ben" (Herbert Benjamin) (who had a disabled arm) went to an orthopedic hospital in Seattle. Robert and "TJ" went to Washington Children's Home, also in Seattle. Grace lived with a relative for a little over a year.

I hung around Seattle cutting wood, putting wood and coal into basements, clearing vacant lots for realtors etc., logging when I could until 1939. Went to Bend, Ore, "home" where Dad was employed as edgerman. NO work there so went to Sisters, 22 miles north of Bend, Oregon.. Arrived in time to see two men load the dogger out of the mill. He got his arm slashed on the hook dog, so I got the dogging job. He came back in ten days, so I got the pond monkey job. I met Mary Martin in White Salmon (just over the border from Hood River, Oregon), Washington. Hired her as my live-in housekeeper. Married Mary in 1940 in Madras, and returned to Sisters. In Sisters in the spring of 1940, I sent for my kids. Worked in Sisters four years and in 1943 they moved the mill to Redmond, Ore. I had bought a lot and built a shack at Sisters so I sold that and moved to Redmond to build again.

Settled down to work in the new mill at Redmond, and the boys had elected me the V. Pres. of the local, as well as shop steward, or "Jaw Smith" as the Wobblies would say. The following might be called "mill town politics". The war was on by that time and the C.I.O.had a policy of creating a P.A.C. in all locals. The policy of the Communist party was similar so I made the motion in our Redmond local to set up a P.A.C. and it passed. Following the union meeting, the new P.A.C. met and decided to visit the A.F.L. carpenters and we got ten minutes on the floor and we told them we wanted a member of carpenters to file for a city council job as building inspector. They agreed and elected a three man committee to meet with us. Next nght we repeated the process at the A.F.L. painters. Next move was to try and get the Grange to go along, but they voted it down. So--we organized a local of Farmers Union, (still in business by 1966). Most of the Farmers union members were also grange member so they easily brought the Grange into our "Redmond Union Council." The Union council put up four candidates for election to city council and we elected them all. Later on the State Council of Carpenters ordered Redmond local to stop co-operating with C.I.O. as did the painters. However it was too late as the election was over, and we had won. While we tried to keep the union council alive, it died off after the A.F.L. pull-out, but many rank and filers gave continuing support to our efforts as they had learned about "unity from below." During the economic slump before the Korean war, Redmond got new sidewalks, curbs, and several other projects because of the progressive nature of its city Gov't.

Thomas J. Scribner

Dixie E. Steele

Married

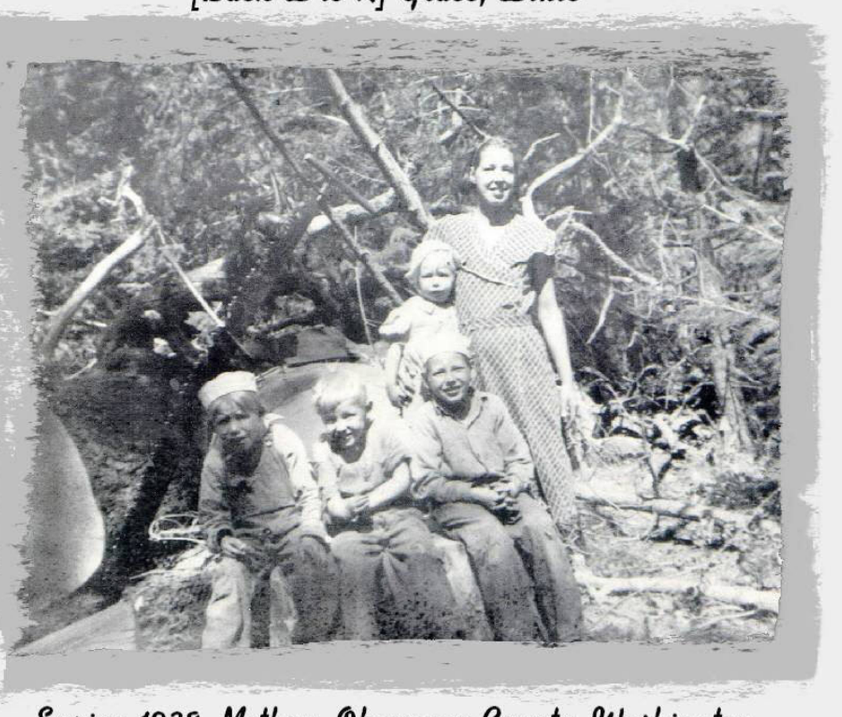
September ninth, Nineteen hundred twenty-seven

Portland, Oregon

at home in

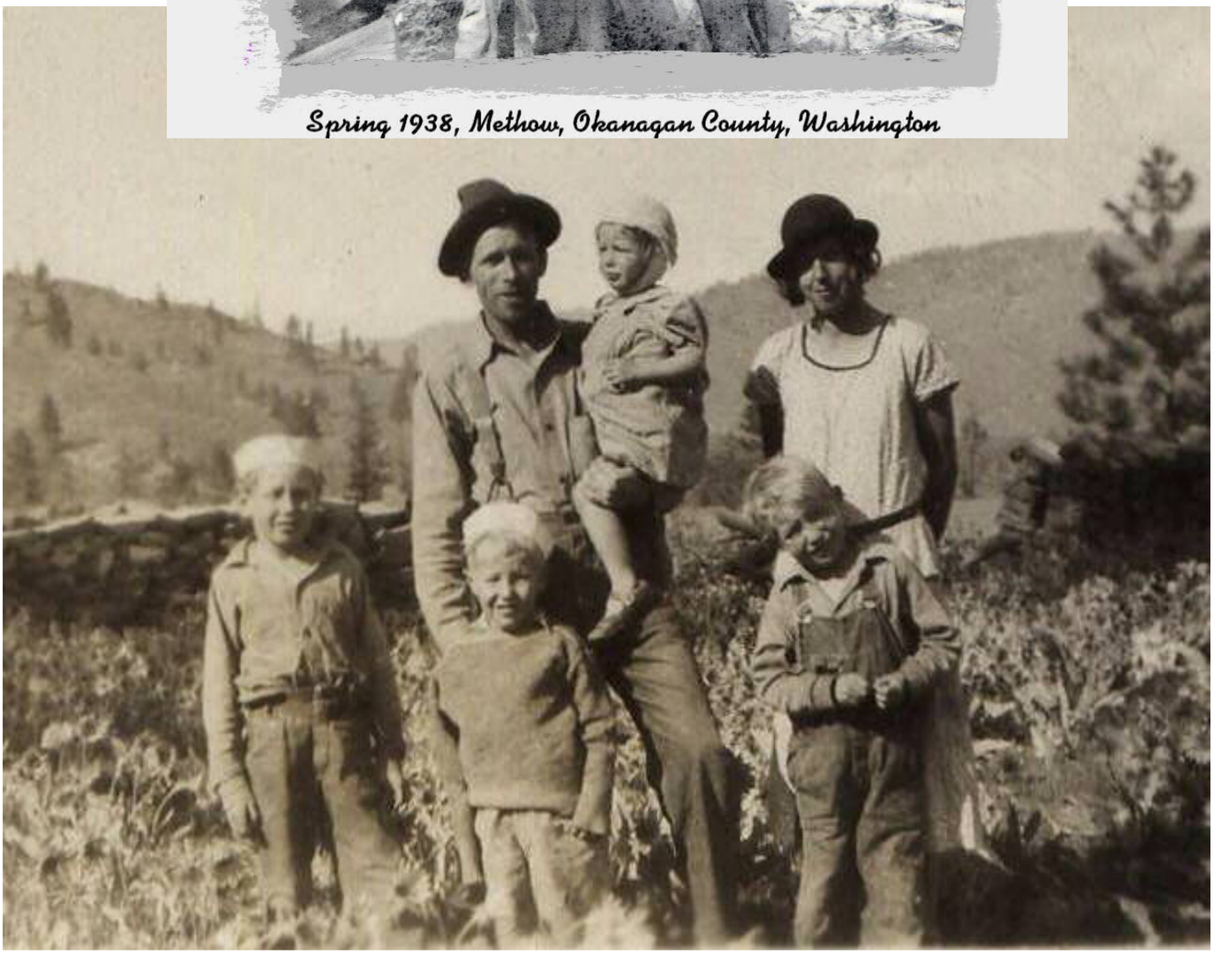
St. Helens, Ore.

[Back L to R] Grace, Dixie

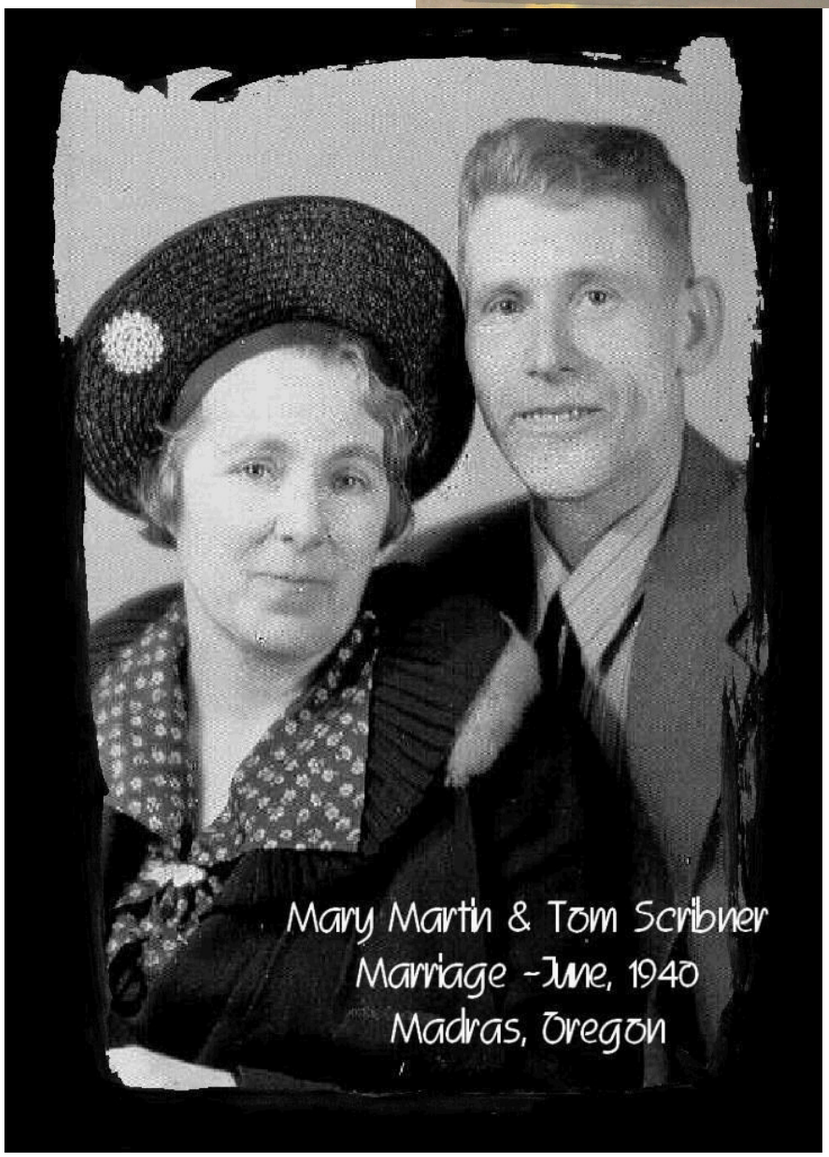


[Front L to R] Bob, Ben, TJ

Spring 1938, Methow, Okanagan County, Washington



I was known as "the only Communist in town," and was a leader of progressive bloc in the C.I.O. so naturally, some one turned me in to the International Board of the Union. One night our local was visited by the whole International Board. They had come down to purge the local of "communists" in official jobs in the union. After a lot of red baiting speeches by board members I got the floor and offered to resign. The local by a roaring voice vote



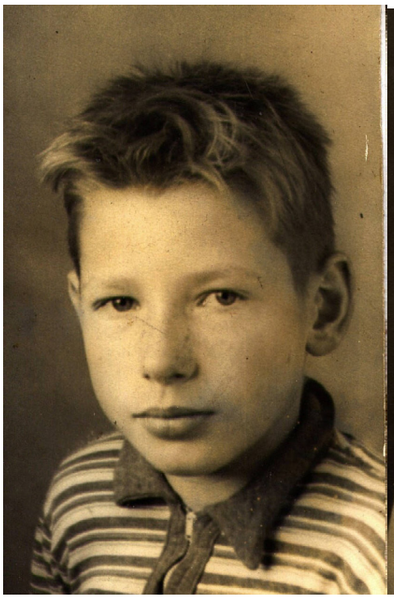
shouted the idea down and insisted I remain an officer, and this I did until I quit 2 years later. Before I had quit I was elected delegate to International Convention of I.W.A. at Vancouver, B.C. then as delegate to State C.I.O convention at Roseburg, Oregon.

After seven years in the sawmills at Redmond-Sisters Ore., and at the end of World War II, my son TJ went out on his own; we decided to work together on a portable sawmill. I started up a portable mill of my own, and took a contract to build another mill at La Pine, Ore. I got the mill to sign a contract with the union. I had shut the mill construction down in order to hear a union organizer. Lost the mill building contract, and moved my portable to Chemult, Ore. Went bankrupt. Started up a lath mill in my spare time while working on the river for Shevlin Hixon Co. at Bend, Ore. Moved lath mill to Elkton, Ore. and set up to saw handle squares and lath from sawmill waste. Three years of this and the mill burned down, so, back on a log pond at Burney, Calif. They shut down. Went to Arcata, Calif. -- shut down -- thence in 1956-57 worked on a log pond as a pond monkey at Piercey, California with my son Bob at Dimmick's Lumber Company; then in 1957

Carl Martin, Jr., Mary Martin's
son by her former marriage

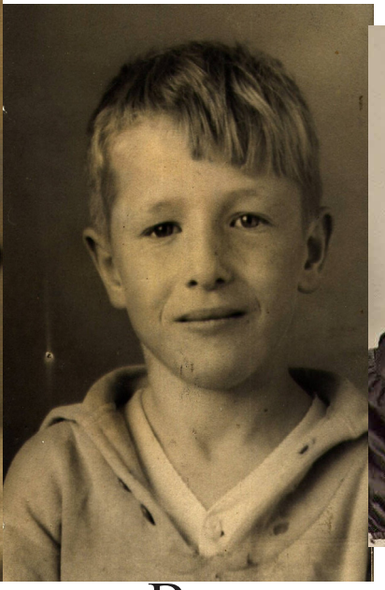
to Fort Seward, California, a small lumber town in Southern Humboldt County, California. Last lumber capitol was the Eureka, Arcata area. I saw them all with the exception of Saginaw, Bay City, Mich. and Bangor, Maine.

Then came the big lumber slump in 1957-58. Came October of 1957 with the mills still shut down with thousands of workers unemployed. Many had exhausted their unemployment benefits and were being told at the welfare "no help for able bodied unemployed." I had been denied unemployment comp. because of their wrong ruling "quit without good cause," and with the help of two lumber unions I had reversed the ruling and won the case. This esbalished a precedent for labor on what constitutes "good cause." So, on my first pay on unemployment comp I got a check for $250 and went to an office supply store and bought a used mimeo, an old 1917 A.B. Dick [Note: Tom kept this his whole life]. Also bought stencils, paper, typewriter, corrective fluid, and ink, and then I thought I would by God show 'em. When I showed up at Fort Seward with all that gear my son Ben, who had been employed there said "My God, Dad what you gonna do with all that stuff?" "Well, Ben, I'm gonna start a S.O.B. of a newspaper THATS what I'm gonna do." That was the start of the lumberjack news which ran for 7 years. [Family members remember that Tom worked on a log pond at Lake Tahoe in 1959, and also on the log pond at Round Valley – just outside of Ukiah, California.]



TJ

Bob



Ben

Grace

After Fort Seward and Eureka, I moved to Davenport in the mid-1960s. In 1965 I was laid off my last job at the reluctance of the insurance carriers to cover older workers. After that, Iived in Santa Cruz with my wife Mary. I continued in logging until 1967; that's about fifty-three years total.

In the course of 53 years lumber work I've done everything but climb. Have been River pig, rafter, boom man, loader, choker setter, bucker, faller, setter, sawyer, dogger, edgerman and trimmer man. After some 53 years work in lumber industry, I was retired as too old to work, in 1967 at age 68. Now this forced retirement caused me to attempt a come-back on an old skill I had acquired in 1910 -- playing a musical saw. Advancing musical saw technology had left the poor old musical saw far behind. Well, I failed to bring the saw back but did manage to reach the top -- again on that great old time dance band instrument. I'm still playing it. I'm pretty near eighty years old, so I ain't got a lot of strength left. Mostly I play for labor rallies, picket lines, and protest meetings of one kind or another.

The IWW did achieve some victories -- to their eternal credit. We got the eight hour day, clean camp conditions, clean sheets, limit of men in a bunkhouse, electric lights -- the kind of conveniences we never dreamed of before. But by 1919, the organization was deeply divided -- whether or not to take political actions and support the Russian Revolution. A lot of Wobblies wouldn't even support Eugene Debs. They said he was just another politician -- even though he was one of their own. They hardly understood that everything they had been doing was political activity. A lot of people think the IWW was destroyed by terror. But that wasn't true. Every time we were attacked, we grew. It disintegrated because of political divisions. I stayed in til 1923, when I couldn't even find anyone to pay dues to. By 1924 I was out. Today I have no earthly use for the IWW. After the IWW I joined

the American Communist Party. I stayed until the middle 1940's. I would say that pursuing the IWW line now would be an exercise in futility, because half of the battle is won: the building of industrial unions. Now that we have them, let's repair them. But in the old days the IWW was the most relevant union, the most militant. We got results. And we had fun. We had little two-by-four-inch stickers gummed on the back that you wet and put up. One read, "Trust in the Lord and sleep in the street." Another was "Jesus saves the willing slaves." People were afraid of us, because they figured we were a bunch of roughnecks. "I Won't Works," "I Want Whisky," and all that. One thing was true: we wouldn't work unless we got decent treatment.

Here in Santa Cruz, some people are erecting a statute of me playing the musical saw. There's been quite a hassle about it in the city council and in the papers, but they finally got permission to put it up in the mall opposite the town clock. Ordinarily, a statute would show a man on a horse with a sword drawn ready to kill some s.o.b. Mine shows a man playing a musical saw. That bronze is supposed to last five thousand years. I can just visualize someone in the future asking: "What is that man doing?" Well, he's playing a musical saw." "What's a saw?" "That's something you cut wood with." 'What's wood?'

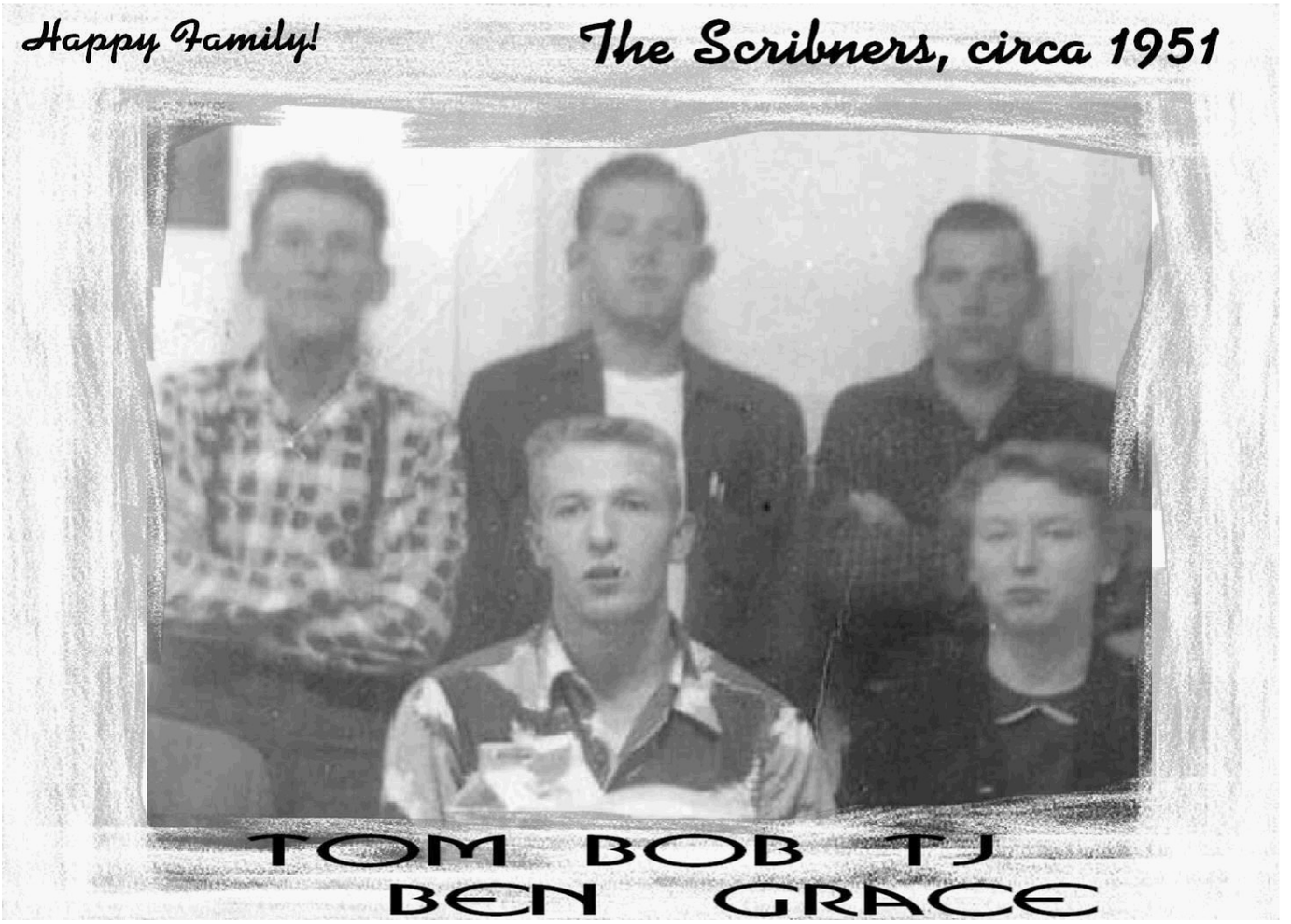
Another unusual thing is that everyone knows that I'm an avowed communist, and those who are avowed are the worst kind. Of course, the winds of political change could blow and that statute could go to the city dump. I can't worry about that. I'm still playing the old songs and campaigning to make the musical saw popular again. I don't know how far I'm going to get, but I'll play for as long as my health and time permit. I'm going to cut a record in Hollywood and make a movie in Santa Monica. After that I can get back to the job of overthrowing the government. I'll keep reminding people that Thomas Jefferson said we should have a revolution every twenty years or so and that Henry Wallace said this is the country of the common man. So perchance if you are around Santa

Cruz you will see a statue of a man wearing a derby hat and plahying the musical saw in one hand and holding the Communist Manifesto in the other. That will be me--Tom Scribner.

* * * * * * * * * * * *

Tom lived with Mary in an old frame house just a few yards from the traffic of Highway 1 at 1912 Mission Street in Santa Cruz. Their living room was adorned with the fading photographs of his grandfather in Civil War blue, his lumberman father, and his three sons -- who still worked in the woods, as well as his daughter who stlll lived in Oregon with her own family. Mary's last words to Tom were "keep playing that saw, dad." True to his instructions, after Mary died, Tom moved to the St. George Hotel in downtown Santa Cruz -- a formerly nice hotel that had become a flop-house -- and Tom became locally known as "the saw freak" -- the old man in the brown derby hat, red socks and the wide, wrinkled grin. Tom Scribner has played his chosen instrument, the musical saw, on the local pizza parlor/college campus circuit from Monterey to Mendocino -- with guest appearances in Seattle, Denver, and Chicago. Twice he has been featured on national television. A pile of press clippings attest to his fame as a subject of human interest. Tom became a traveling musical saw player of note and a full-time labor movement activist. Because he had been active in the IWW movement, Tom was featured in the documentary film *The Wobblies*. Because of his skill as a saw player, he also appeared on recordings with Neil Young[10] and George

10 Neil Young's album entitled *Homestead*.



Harrison.[11] He was a celebrity on several TV documentaries about his saw, including the CBS News Production of *On the Road* with Charles Kurault [a segment about interesting people]. He made almost daily appearances as a street musician in front of the St. George Hotel playing his saw for passers-by.

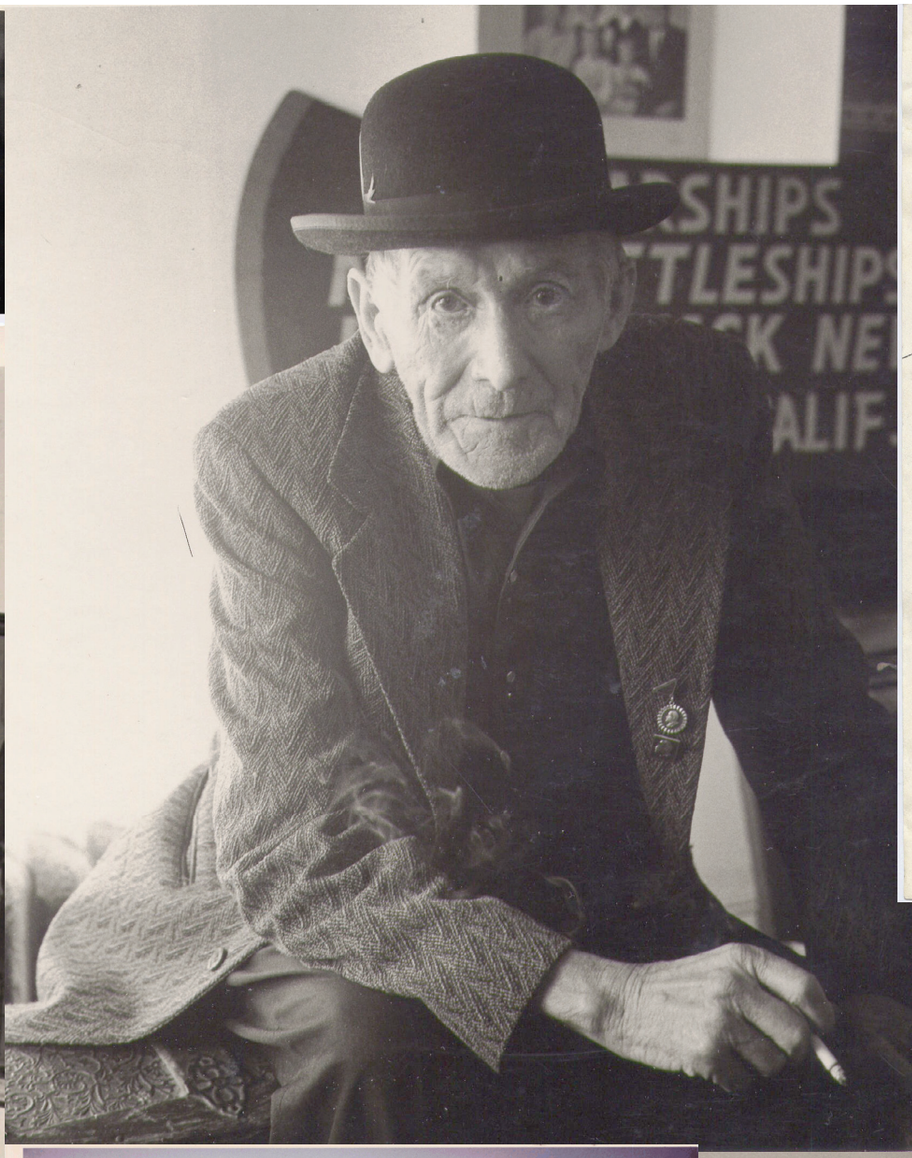
To honor their local folk hero, a group of Tom's admirer's raised money to create a bronze statue of Tom playing the musical saw. That statue is now displayed prominently in downtown Santa Cruz, California at the old St. George Hotel site where Tom used to play. Tom died of complications due to respiratory failure and pancreatic cancer, at Dominican Hospital, Santa Cruz, California in 1982. His ashes were scattered at sea, and in lieu of a memorial service, a parade was held in his honor in Santa Cruz by local admirers.

My mother, Grace Beatrice Scribner Cooper is the 8th great-granddaughter of Sir Thomas Scriven, a nobleman and Lord of Frodesley Manor of Shropshire, England, ***and*** the daughter of folk hero, organized labor advocate, and noted musical saw player Tom Scribner, who is memorialized in a bronze statute in downtown Santa Cruz..

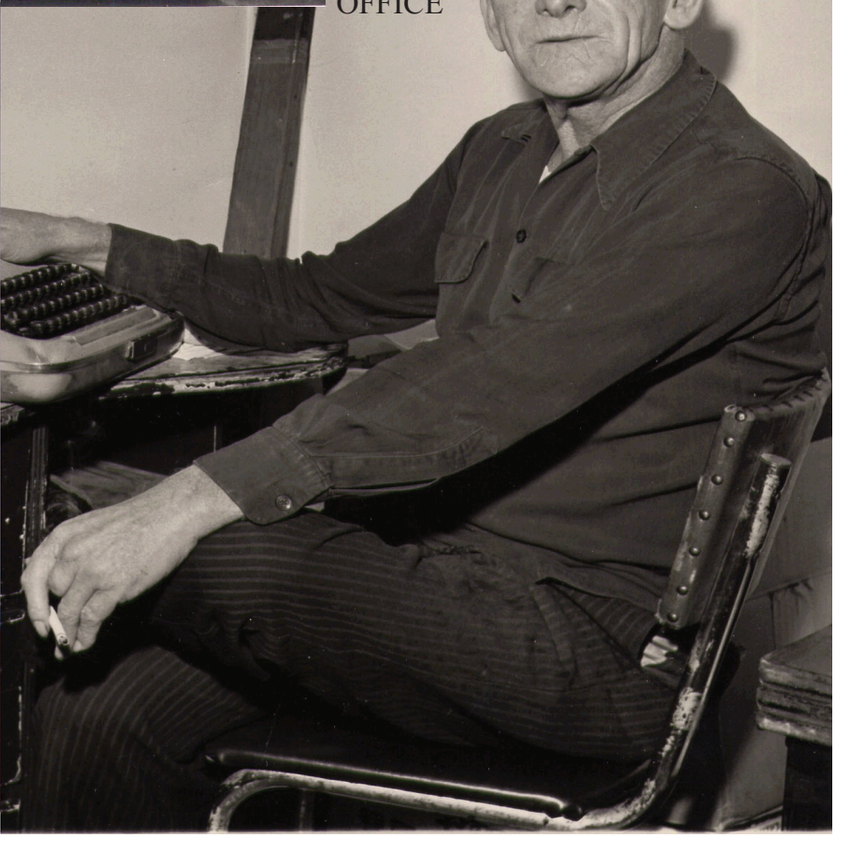
11 George Harrison played guitar on Larry Hosford's album entitled *Crossword* and Tom Scribner played musical saw.

Tom & Mary in Santa Cruz

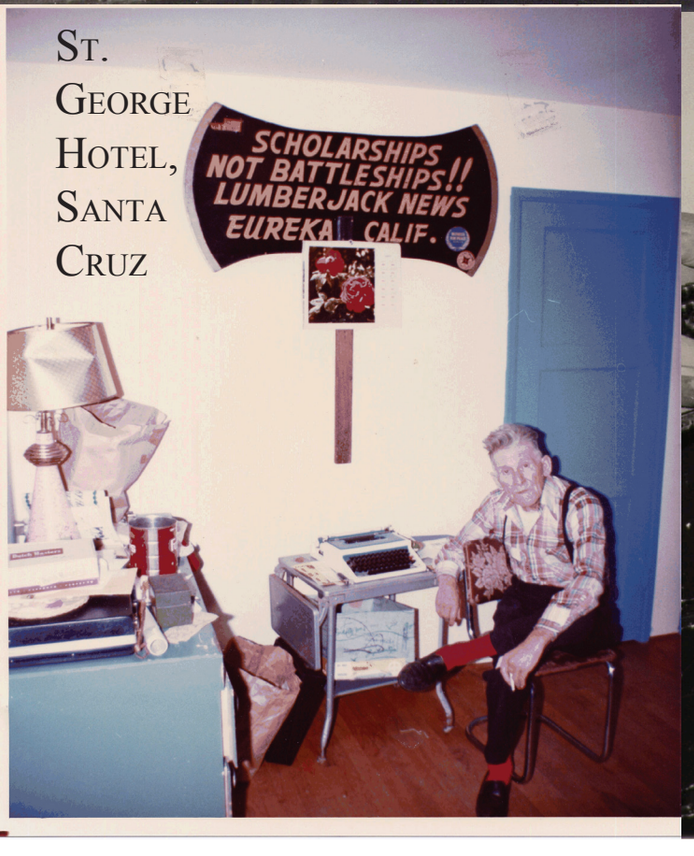
Anti-draft rally at Salinas post office, June 1980; photo courtesy of Doug Foster



DAVENPORT EDITORIAL OFFICE



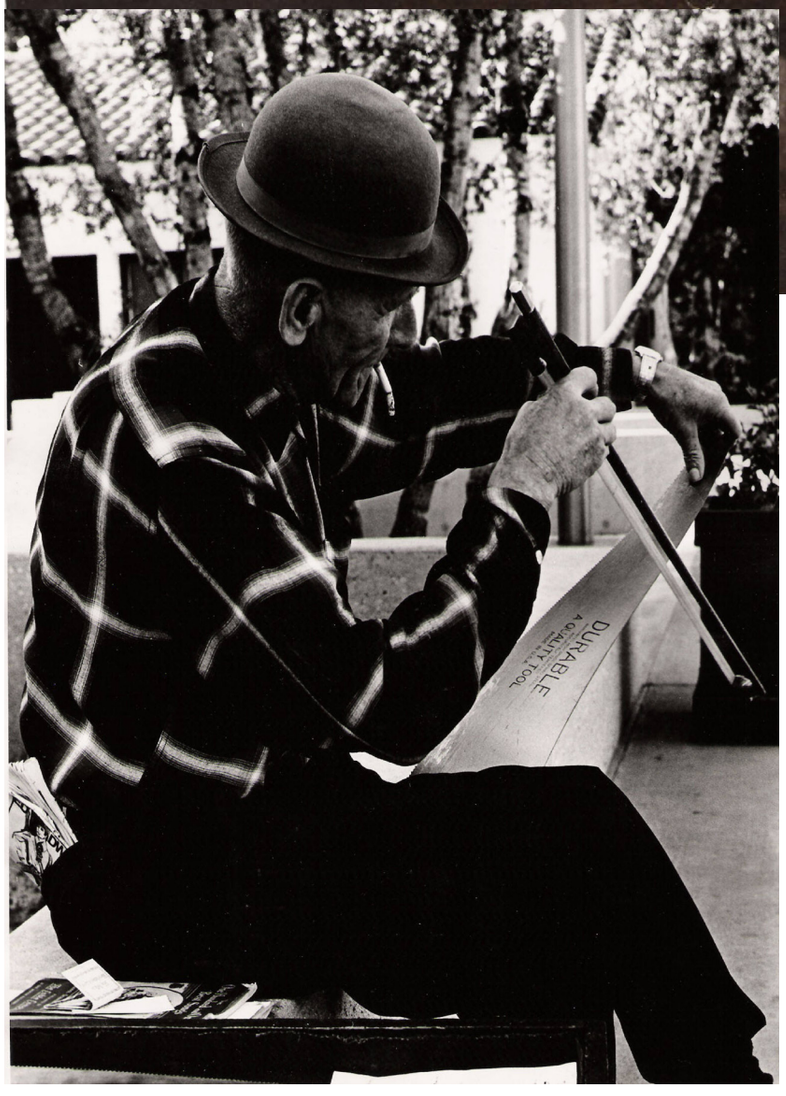
ST. GEORGE HOTEL, SANTA CRUZ

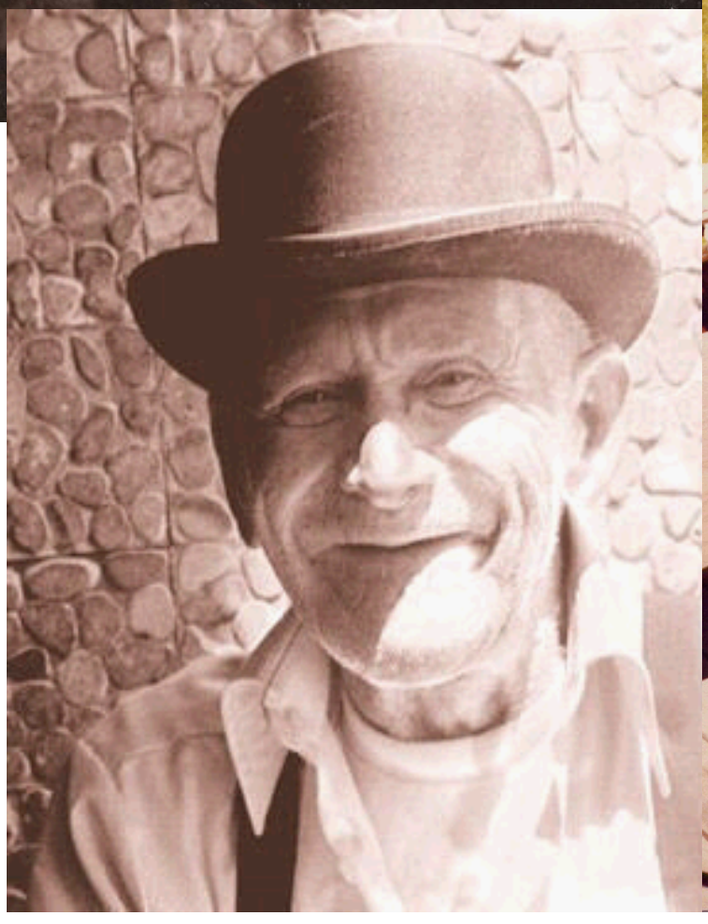


Tom Scribner & Herman Olson

1972: Tom Scribner & "The Lost Sound" -- Arlene Sutton and Herman Olson. Photo taken by Robert Minden at Tom's home at 1912 Mission Avenue, Santa Cruz.

Note the photographs on the wall behind Tom -- including the large oval of Minerva Hetsler Scribner Steele next to the picture of Charles William Scribner in his Michigan Volunteers Civil War Univorm; next to the soldier is a photo of Tom's father William C. Scribner; on the far left is a set of four photographs, which were school photos for Tom's cooper grandchildren -- Tom's daughter Grace's children.


DURABLE
A QUALITY TOOL



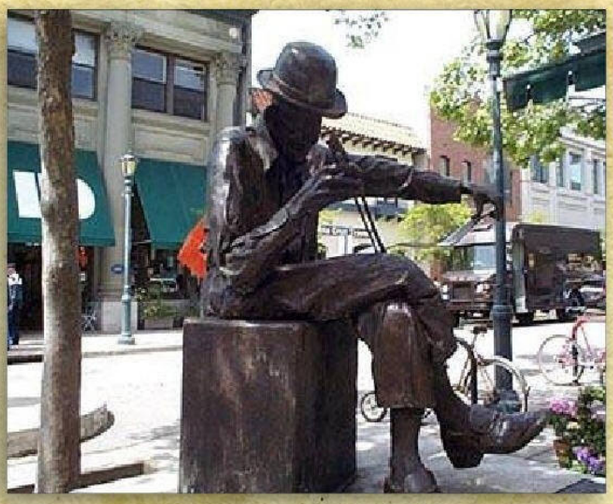
TOM SCRIBNER
MUSICIAN–REVOLUTIONARY

Below: Tom shown next to his “head” in sculptor Margie McMahon’s foundry; Right Upper Left: Tom and sculptor Margie McMahon, posing in front of statue in Margie’s Foundry; Right Upper Far Right: Tom sitting next co completed bronze statue in original public exhibition location in Santa Cruz; Lower Right: Tom at the statue dedication ceremony, Santa Cruz, California.

Charles Kuralt [on left] and CBS Production Crew for Charles Kuralt's "On The Road" creating a segment about Tom playing the musical saw. The segment aired and a clip of it is contained in the video series about the best of Charles Kuralt "On The Road."

FOR TOM WITH LOVE BARBARA M. OCT. 75

Tom Scribner, Musical Saw Player



Statute in Downtown Santa Cruz
Santa Cruz County, California

Laura Cooper Fenimore & Barbara Scribner Tovrea

Catherine Tovrea & her friend Morgan

Laura, Barb & her mother Pat Mallatt

Tom Scribner Statue in Santa Cruz, California, December 2002

Part 6: Our HETSLER Family History

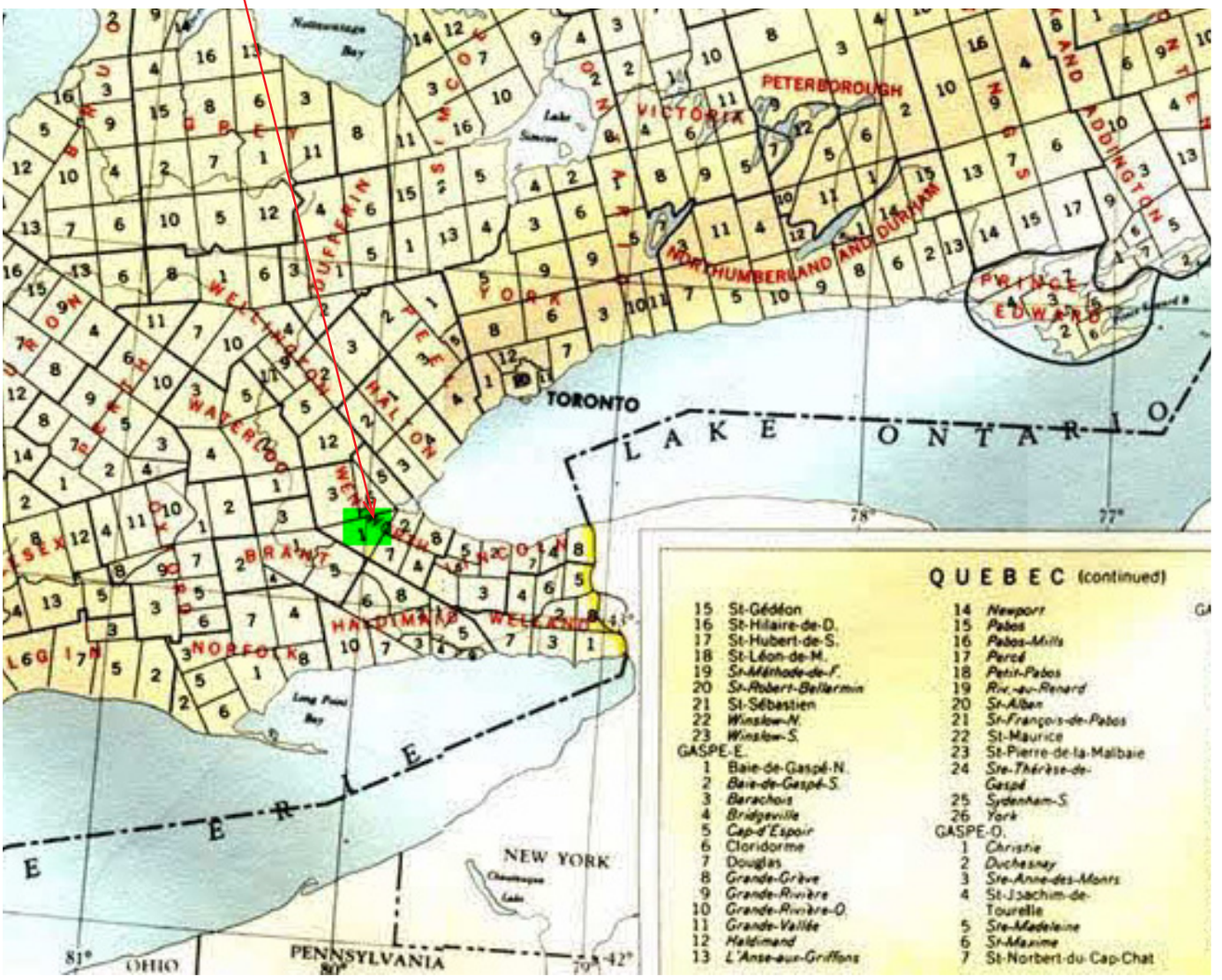
Minerva Hetsler is both our great-grandmother in the Scribner Family, as well as our great-grandmother in the Steele Family! Tom's father's mother was also Dixie's father's mother. Dixie's father Clinton and Tom's father Charles William (a.k.a. "William C.") were both children of Minerva Ann Hetsler, albeit by different husbands. Thus, they were half-brothers, and technically Tom and Dixie were first cousins. (In fact, Tom and Dixie's marriage was forbidden by the consanguinity laws of Washington State; instead, they were forced to cross the border into Columbia County, Oregon to marry – where such relationships were more tolerated by the largely libertarian pioneers of that state. The couple lived for a period of time in St. Helens, Columbia County on the Washington border before Tom relocated his wife back to Battleground in nearby Clark County, Washington with Dixie's parents while Tom worked in logging camps.)

Tom and Dixie's mutual grandmother, Minerva Ann ("Mary") Hetsler was born in 1841 in Batavia, Genesee County, New York. Minerva was the oldest daughter of four children born to Frederick G. "Hetchler,"[1] and his second wife Mehitable Mary ["Mary"] Benedict. Frederick's first wife was Julianne Benedict, whom he had married about 1836 in Wentworth County, Ontario, Canada.

Frederick George Hetchler was born to a solidly Pennsylvania Dutch [German] family -- his father John Jacob Hetzler had been born in Lebanon County, Pennsylvania on 30 September 1783, the grandson of Johann Balthasar Hetzler, an immigrant from Erbach, Wurttemberg, German who originally settled in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. Within a few generations the Hetzlers had migrated away from their German enclave in Lancaster County. Frederick was born about 1810; most sources report the place of his birth as Kenia Township, Genesee County, New York, however a few sources list his place of birth as Pennsylvania. Before moving to Michigan, Frederick George's entire life had been spent in Pennsylvania, western New York and nearby lower Ontario, Canada. Frederick George Hetchler and his first wife Julianne Benedict were living in Dundas Village, Ancaster Town-

1 The "Hetsler" surname is derived from the original German "Hetzler." Other variants used by the family included "Hetchler" and "Hetcheler." Two books about the family are in the Mount Clemens Public Library in Michigan.

Green Mark shows location of Ancaster, in Wentworth County, Ontario, Canada



ship, Wentworth County, Ontario, Canada on November 9, 1837 when their first son Jefferson Lindsley Hetsler was born. Frederick's family moved back to northern New York with their infant son in the winter of 1838 and was in residence at Elba, Genesee County, New York when their second son Charles Hetsler was born in June 1839. Tragically, Julianne died April 1, 1840 in Genesee County, New York, and is buried in Col. Alfred Carey Cemetery in the city of Oakfield, Genesee County, New York. The family's 1840 census enumeration in Elba, Gnesee County, New York disclosed, however, that the couple had *three young* sons under age 5 at the time of enumeration, which invites speculation as to whether the third son's birth was the cause of Julianne's death.[2]

In any event, Julianne's death would have been extremely devastating to a young father with three boys

2 Juliann died on April 1, 1840, so any child born after Charles would have been conceived in July 1839 or later. A child conceived in July 1839 could have been born on or shortly before April 1, 1840. The third boy was therefore almost certainly born at or near the time of Juliann's death on April 1, 1840. This timing creates an extremely high index of suspicion that Juliann died in childbirth with the third male child -- or from complications related to that childbirth.

under age 5 to raise on the frontier. It is therefore no surprise that Frederick quickly remarried.[3]

Mehitable Mary Benedict, Frederick's second wife, commonly went by the name "Mary," and was born 18 Feb 1825 in Rochester, Monroe County, New York, the daughter of Reuben Benedict and Nancy Smith.[4] Frederick's 1840 census enumeration included a woman between ages 15-20, which is consistent with Mary Benedict's known birthdate of Feb 1825. If that supposition is correct, then Frederick must have married Mary between the date of Julianne's death on April 1 and the official enumeration date of the 1840 census on June 1.

In any event, we know that Federick and Mary married soon after Julianne's death, because in 1841 Minerva was born at Batavia, Genesee County, New York. Another son -- Philetus [pronounced "Fleet-us"] Hetzler followed on 25 April 1844. The family remained in Genesee County, New York until the fall of 1845, when they relocated from their residence at Elba, Genessee County, New York, to Erin Township, in Macomb County, Michigan. By 1850, the family had moved from Erin Township to Sterling Township and were living next door to the Aaron Scribner family in Macomb County, Michigan [which clears up any mystery about how Minerva and Charles met!].

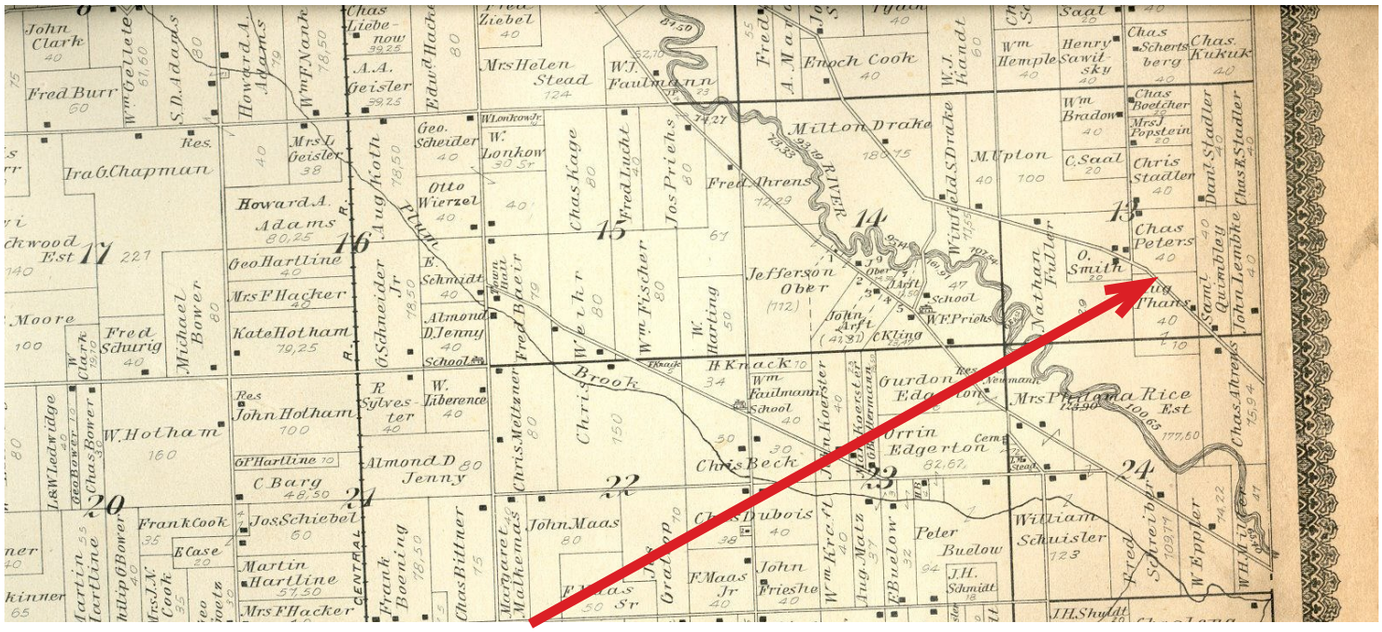
While living in Sterling Township, Frederick undertook the construction of a new home for his wife and children. The home was completed in 1854 and still stands today in present-day Sterling Heights, Michigan.[5] The home is located in Section 13 of Sterling Township, north of the Clinton River, and its modern street address is 14711 Clinton River Road. Included here are an old platt map showing the location of the home [arrow], as wlel as several aerial maps showing the vicinity of the home within the modern city.[6]

3 It would be quite natural for Frederick to marry a person already well known to him -- and possibly a family member; thus, it is logical to think that there might be some relationship between Julianne Benedict and Mehitable Mary Benedict, which suspicion growns stronger when we consider their common surname. However, no family connection has been found yet.

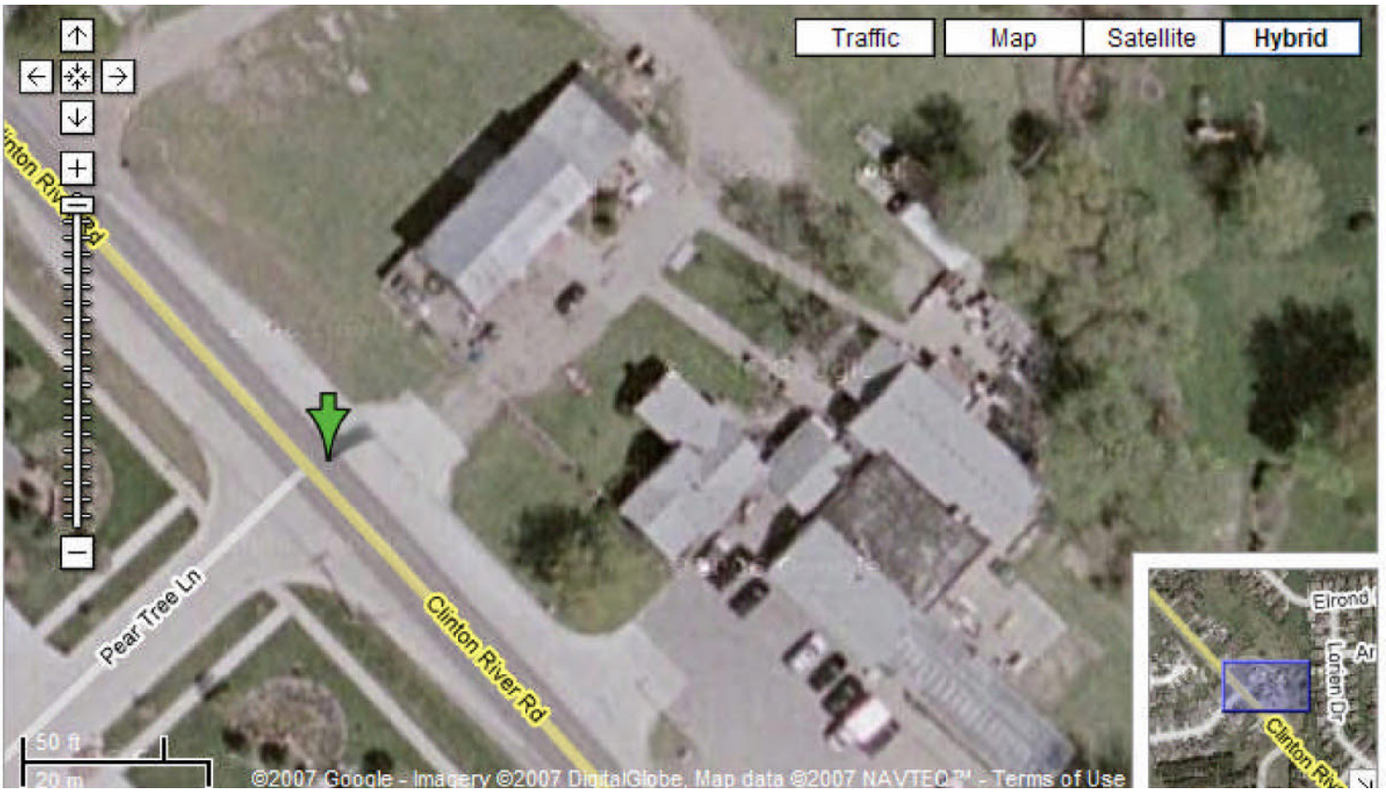
4 Frederick Hetchler lived for a period in Scottsville, Wheatland, Monroe County, New York, in the vicinity of Rochester, and may have met Mehitable while there.

5 The 1999 owners were John & Colleen Pawl.

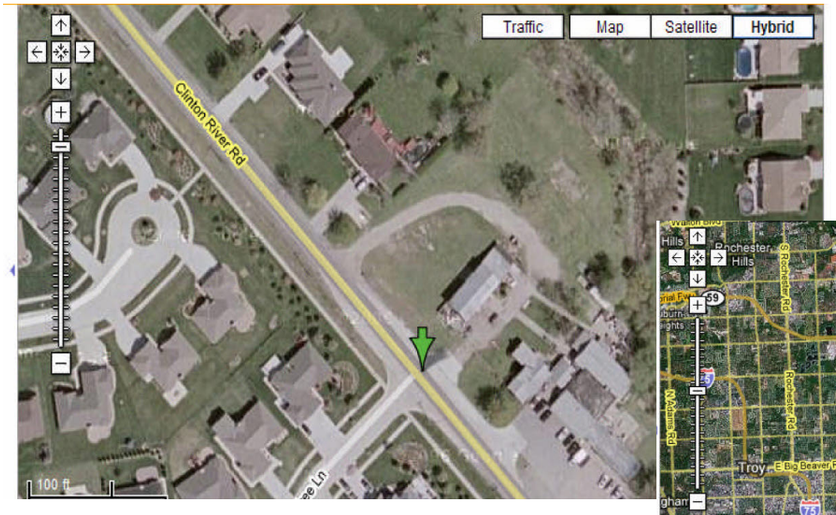
6 This information is contained in the archives as Source Serial #1427.

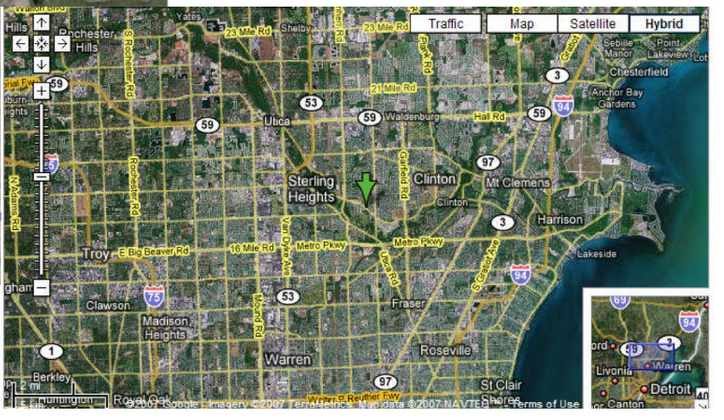

Milton Drake
Fred Ihrens
Jefferson Ober
Chris Beck
Orrin Edgerton
Peter Buelow
William Schuisler
Chas Peters
Howard A Adams
Geo Hartline
Mrs F Hacker
Kate Hotham
John Hotham
Almond D Jenny
C Bary
Jos Schiebel
Frank Cook
John Maas
Martin Hartline
Ira G Chapman
Fred Burr
Michael Bower
W Hotham
Enoch Cook
Chas Beetcher
Chris Stadler
Chas Kukuk
Chas Scherts berg
Henry Sawitsky
Wm Hemple
Wm Bradow
Mrs J Popstein
C Saal
M Upton
O Smith
Nathan Fuller
Winfield S Drake
W J Handt
Mrs Helen Stead
W J Faulmann
Chas Liebenow
A A Geisler
Wm F Nank
Howard A Adams
S D Adams
Wm Gellate
John Clarke
Mrs G Geisler
Geo Scheider
W Lonkow
Otto Wierzel
Chas Kage
Fred Lucht
Jos Priehs
Aug Koth
Fred Blair
Wm Fischer
W Harting
H Knack
Wm Faulmann School
Chris Meltzner
Margaret Malkemas
Frank Boening
Chas Bittner
Jos Koerster
Wm Koerster
Wm Kraft
Aug Matz
F Maas Jr
John Frieshue
J H Schmidt
Fred Schreiber
W Eppler
Chas Ahrens
Mrs Petrina Rice Est
Gurdon Edgerton
Wm Faulmann
Almond D Jenny
R Sylvester
W Liberence
E Schmidt
Almond D Jenny School
Geo Scheider Jr
Chas Rage
Fred Blair
Wm Fischer
W Harting
Jefferson Ober
John Arft
C Kling
W F Priehs
School
Milton Drake
Fred Ihrens
Chris Beck
Orrin Edgerton
Peter Buelow
William Schuisler
Chas Peters
O Smith
Nathan Fuller
Winfield S Drake
W J Handt
Enoch Cook
Mrs Helen Stead
W J Faulmann
Chas Liebenow
A A Geisler
Wm F Nank
Howard A Adams
S D Adams
Wm Gellate
John Clarke
Fred Burr
Ira G Chapman
Michael Bower
W Hotham
Howard A Adams
Geo Hartline
Mrs F Hacker
Kate Hotham
John Hotham
Almond D Jenny
C Bary
Jos Schiebel
Frank Cook
John Maas
Martin Hartline
Mrs F Hacker
Chas Bittner
Frank Boening
Margaret Malkemas
Chris Meltzner
Jos Koerster
Wm Koerster
Wm Kraft
Aug Matz
F Maas Jr
John Frieshue
J H Schmidt
Fred Schreiber
W Eppler
Chas Ahrens
Mrs Petrina Rice Est
Gurdon Edgerton
Wm Faulmann
R Sylvester
W Liberence
E Schmidt
Almond D Jenny School
Geo Scheider Jr
Chas Rage
Fred Blair
Wm Fischer
W Harting
H Knack

Present-day Aerial View of 1854 Hetchler Home in Sterling Heights, Michigan, located at 14711 Clinton River Rd.



Green markers on both aerial photographs show location of 1854 Hetchler home within context of its surrounding area; above shows home along Clinton River Road; below shows location within the Greater northern Detroit suburban area next to the Great Lakes.





Photographs of the Frederick Hetchler home, constructed in 1854 for his family. The home has been awarded a bronze placque [see photo with placque, below] from the Roseville Historical and Genealogical Society in Macomb County, Michigan. Our double-2nd-great-grandmother Minerva Hetsler Scribner Steele was raised in this home; we also know that her marriage to Peter Steele occurred at this home in January 1866. The home next door was occupied by the Aaron Scribner family during the 1850 census. The Hetchler home is included on the Sterling Heights Historical Homes Registry and website.[1]

1 http://www.shpl.net/historichomes.htm

Within mere months of completing the home, Frederick died in the early winter of 1755; his death from "the ague" [influenza] was described in a diary[7] that establishes Frederick's funeral date as February 7, 1855. After Frederick's death, Mary lived out her life in the home Frederick constructed for the family. In her elder years, her batchelor son Philetus resided with her in that home. The other Hetsler children included Jefferson, Charles, Minerva, Opheline and Abner Cliinton.

Jefferson Lindsley Hetsler

Jefferson was born 9 Nov 1837 in Dundas Village, Ancaster Township, Wentworth County, Ontario, Canada. Jefferson enlisted for service during the Civil War at the age of 25 as a Private on 20 March 1862 in Utica, Macomb County, Michigan in Company I, 16th Infantry Regiment Michigan; he was injured on May 11, 1862. He was helping to lay a pontoon bridge between General McLellan's Headquarters and Yorktown, Virginia. While carrying planks he was accidentally thrown upon his back across a stringer, causing injury to his spine. He was treated at the Field Hospital on the field before Yorktown, Virginia and then moved to the Regimental Hospital; he remained there until after the evacuation of Yorktown where he was carried aboard the Steamship Ocean Queen to New York. He remained in New York for treatment for a short time and was then carried to the General Hospital in Detroit, Michigan where he remained until he received his disability discharge on 01 July 1863. After this, he had deterioration of his spinal cord, including curvature. Consequently, he could not stand up straight and had to walk with a cane for the rest of his life. He filed for his pension on December 7, 1871; it was allowed on May16, 1872. The pension file provides a physical description of Jefferson: 5 foot, 4 1/2 inches tall, dark complexion, grey eyes, black hair, 110 pounds.

> From Leeson, History of Macomb County, Page 731:
> J. L. HETZLER, P.O. Utica, son of Frederick G. and Julia Ann Hetzler (Benedict), born in Dundas Village, Wentworth County, Canada, November 9, 1837; removed from Canada with his parents in the winter of 1838, to the State of New York, near Batavia: remained there until the fall of 1845, at which time he removed with his father and step-mother to the town of Erin, Macomb County, Michigan; has lived in Macomb County until the present time; was educated at the common schools of Macomb Countyl has pursued the occupation of a painter, farmer, brick-maker, and canvasser, and is at present a painter in the village of Utica; his ancestors came from Hamburg, Germany, about the middle of the last century. Mr. H. assisted in laying out the first Territorial road that was surveyed out from St. Cloud to Boyes Deson, Minn.; enlisted in Company I, Sixteenth Infantry Michigan Volunteers, on March 22, 1862, and served until July 1, 1862, at which time he was discharged on account of disability from injuries received while building a pontoon bridge near Yorktown, Va; was in the battle and siege of Yorktown. He married Artimesia Cline, daughter of John and Margaret (Wilkens) Cline, December 30, 1863; they have had four children -- Etta Bell, born March 22, 1868; Mary Margaret, October 22, 1871, died January 2,

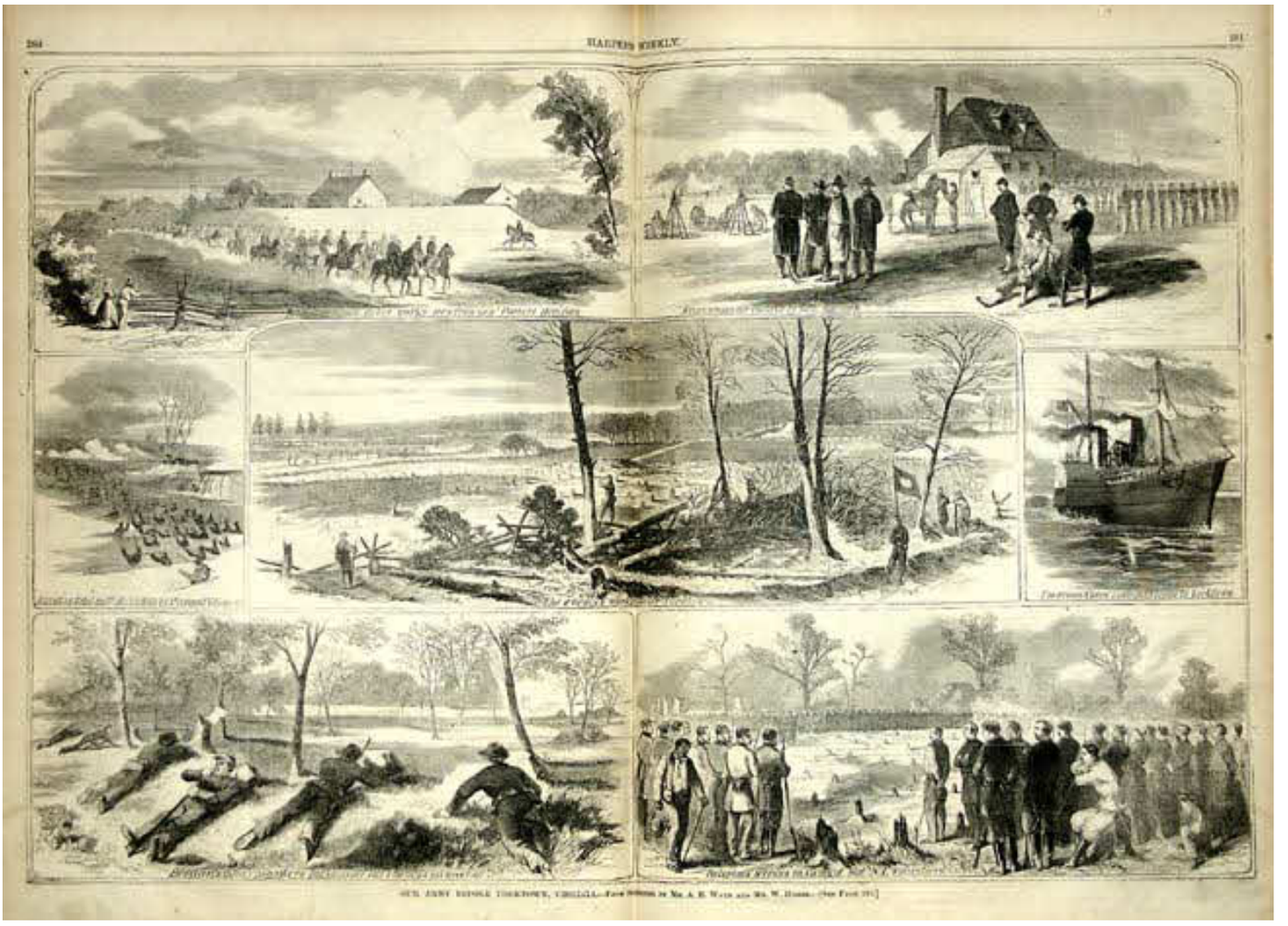
7 Source Serial #0837, Diary of Gilbert Bodine, Unpublished excerpts contained in E-Mail from James Greenwood: The author, Gilbert Bodine from NJ was in Michigan for at least a year and worked as farm labor for many farmers in the Macomb County area. It appears that Michigan may have offered some land offering sufficient to lure farmers from NJ at some earlier date because a lot of those he worked for and visited, including his father, were from NJ. The writing is faded and difficult as well as being of little historic value other than a recount of the daily weather (I'm glad I don;t live in Michigan) and for whom he worked and the epidemic of the "ague" (I guess that's the flu) which took the lives of many elderly and children. One of the children was F. Hetsler's and the funeral was 7 Feb.,1855. On 4 May 1855 Bodine "went to Detroit to meet Fetslers family". It seems that Fetsler was a farmer and Bodine on various dates planted onions, potatoes etc on that farm. Due to the faded writing I'm not sure but there may also have been a J or S Hetsler also. Sorry to have so little to pass on but for what it's worth.... Jim"

1882; Bertha Irene, January 6, 1876, died January 3, 1882; Charles Lindsley, August 20, 1878, died January 31, 1882.

Charles H. Hetsler

Charles enlisted for service in the same unit as his brother Jefferson during the Civil War, mustering in as a Private in Utica, Michigan at the age of 22, into Company I, 16th Infantry Regiment Michigan -- only a few days later than his brother, on 22 March 1862. Later he was promoted to Full Corporal. He was Wounded at the Battle of Wilderness with a gunshot wound in his left hand, and while on the march near Yorktown, Virginia in May or June, 1862 [the Battle in which Jefferson was wounded] he was taken sick with diarrhea, rheumatism and a general stiffness. He was finally mustered out on 07 April 1865 in Detroit, Michigan. He filed an application for an Invalid Pension on July 6, 1885 in Michigan, which was finally awarded to him in 1900.

Charles was married twice; the first time before 1880 in St. Louis, Gratiot County, Michigan to a woman named Orvilla [surname unknown]. He married a second time on 12 August 1888 to Mary Elizabeth Steele, a younger sister to Peter Steele, and daughter of Richard J. Steele and Alvina Harrington [See Section on Steele Fam-



Winslow Homer's depiction of the Battle of Yorktown; published in HARPER'S WEEKLY, 1862.

ily, below].

The Saga Of Mary Steele

Mary Steele had earlier married James Stewart, on 13 November 1878 in Owosso, Shiawassee County, Michigan. Tragically, James Stewart disappeared on August 11, 1881, and was never seen or heard from again. Local news accounts included a story about the recovery of a body from the Saginaw River a few weeks after James' disappearance that fit James' description. The general belief in the community was that the person who drowned was in fact Stewart. However, some people apprently did not believe this story, and there was never any proof evinced one way or the other. Mary waited seven-years to marry Charles -- the common-law period after which a disappeared person could legally be presumed dead. Nevertheless, Charles' relatives were not friendly toward Mary. Charles' family members thought it was untoward for Mary to wed Charles when her other husband's status had not yet been resolved -- regardless of the legal presumption -- and it was akin to bigamy in their eyes.

This became a problem when in 1903, Mary applied for half of Charles Hetsler's civil war pension on the grounds that he had deserted her and was failing to support her. This application resulted in several rounds of nasty accusations in court papers. In support of Mary's claim, the following letter was sent by Mary's daughter Lillian DeMay to the Department of Interior, Bureau of Pensions:

> Kalamazoo Michigan
> 529 Ada St.
> June 7 '03
> Dear Sir, In reply to your letter I have to state that claimants' husband deserted her about Thanksgiving 1901. He had deserted her many times prior to that and had only returned from the last desertion in August of 1901. There was no reason for his leaving her, except that he stated he wanted to go to a Soldiers Home. He left her in totally destitute circumstances and has never returned to live with her. He did come back in February 1902 and remained at my house about two hours where he met his wife. He stated to her that if she would give him all her earnings he would come back and live with her again. This she very properly refused to do as it would leave her without any support. She owns no property and is entirely destitute and obliged to work picking over rags to earn her support.
>
> Yours Truly,
> Lillian DeMay

After these nasty accusations, and a divorce application at the end of 1903 by Charles, Mary was ultimately awarded half of Charles' pension.

But Mary's drama was only beginning. After Charles died in 1908 Mary filed for a Widow's pension. Lengthy proceedings were required to resolve numerous interesting factual and legal issues, including the nature of her relationship with her first husband, James Stewart. The pension examiner raised the question whether her marriage to Charles was valid under Michigan law.[8] The examiner ultimately ruled in her favor by finding that the courts of Michigan would sustain the validity of a marriage if the facts in the case justify such presumption. However, by inquiring into these matters, all kinds of character evaluations were conducted on Mary -- many un-

8 As a lawyer, I wonder why this was not resolved in the original pension proceeding; the original pension should have not been split if these questions loomed; when it was ordered split, the marriage should have been deemed valid at that point. Thus, for this last proceeding, it should have been *res judicata.*

savory and seemingly completely unnecessary and ALL by men in the community. Eventually, after a seemingly exhausting evaluation of Mary's character and background -- which included proof that Mary's James Stewart was *not* another James Stewart who had simply abandoned his family in New York -- the tribunal ruled that "there is no assignable cause for the disappearance of the claimant's first husband Stewart, and it is more than probably that he lost his life by drowning; and that the facts and circumstances connected with his disappearance would justify a presumption as to his death, which obtains in the State of Michigan." Thus, the marriage to Charles was held valid, and because it continued until his death, that she became his lawful widow. The pension was ultimately granted to Mary as a widow.

But, Mary's judgment about men had not improved. On 9 October 1912, Mary married Levi Murry in Big Prairie Township, Newaygo County, Michigan. In 1923, Mary sued Levi for divorce. In the Bill of Complaint, Mary stated that Levi had not contributed to her support and maintenance, but rather left her to the charity of relatives. At the time, both were 69 years old, but Mary stated that Levi was able-bodied and accustomed to farm work, and well able by his labor to provide a comfortable maintenance for himself and Mary; also, that Levi had investments available for her support. She stated that she was in ill health, unable to support herself and was therefore dependent upon charity because of her husband's refusal to do so. The divorce was granted on 7 July 1923. Because she was no longer the wife of another man, Mary again filed for a pension after turning 75 years old in 1929. Mary finally died at Bronson Methodist Hospital in Kalamazoo on 26 June 1938 as a result of chronic myocarditis and myocardial degeneration

Philetus H. Hetsler

Philetus was a life-long resident of Utica, Macomb County, Michigan. He never married, and lived with his mother as they both aged. He worked as a laborer his entire life, and passed away as a result of senility at age 72 in Utica.[9]

Opheline Hetsler

Opheline married another member of the extended families in Macomb County: Lyman Wentworth. Lyman was the son of Elisha Wentworth, Jr. and Emily Darling; Elisha Wentworth, Sr. had another son named Lyman Wentworth, who married Orphia Darling -- sister to Emily. Both the Wentworth and Darling families came to Michigan from Rush Township, Monroe County, New York. Lyman and Orphia had another son named James B. Wentworth, who through his second wife Sarah Lennox had a daughter named Sarah Adelia [or simply "Delia"] Wentworth; Delia married Thomas Jefferson Scribner on 29 April 1884 in Rochester, Oakland County, Michigan. Thomas Jefferson Scribner [who went by the reversed name "Jefferson T."] was the son of Minerva and Charles Scribner, and the younger brother to our Scribner ancestor William C. Scribner. Jefferson was born 28 May 1862 in Sterling Township. Jefferson and Delia had at least four children, and both passed away in 1907 in the Detroit area.

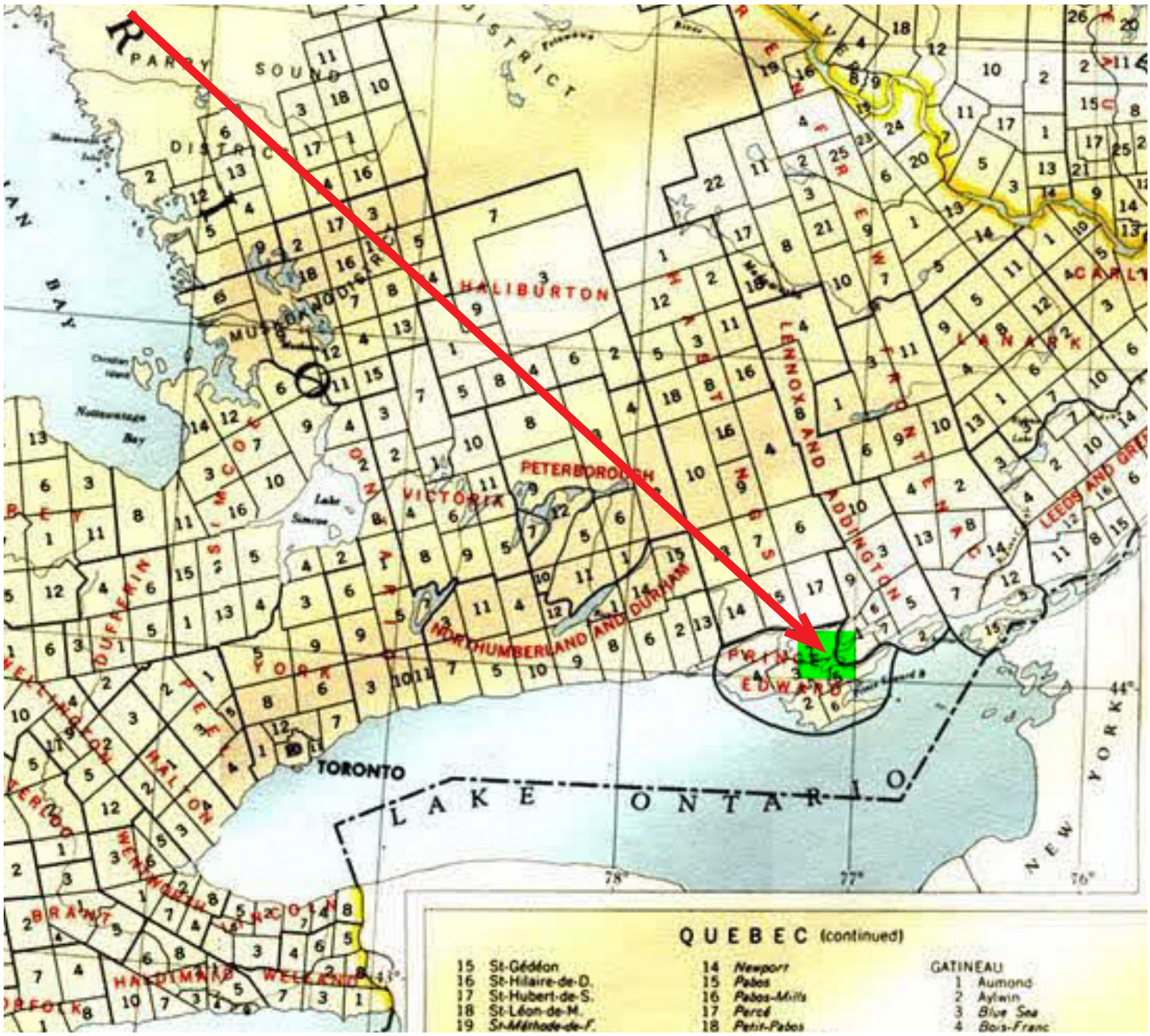
Opheline and Lyman Wentworth had at least two children; very little is known about what became of them, other than that they were both still alive in 1909, as recorded in the Charles Hetsler pension file.

Abner Clinton Hetsler

One of the mysteries in the five families lexicon is where the name "Clinton" originated. My great-grandfather was named Richard Clinton Steele by his parents Minerva and Peter Steele. Similarly, Minerva's youngest sibling Abner was also given the middle name "Clinton." No Clinton families have been found that have any rela-

9 Philetus' death record was a critical piece of information, because it provided me with the only source identifying his mother Mary's surname as Benedict; Mary's own death record only recently became available, and confirms that information, and also adds the name of her parents. Souce Serial #1378A, Death Index, Macomb County, Michigan; entry for Mary M. Hetsler, Vol: B, Pg: 271 - Date of Death: 5 Oct 1904 .

Green Mark shows Sophiasburg, within Prince Edward County, Ontario, Canada



tion to any part of these families that I have been able to discern; no individual of note or close association with the first name of Clinton has been found, either. Nevertheless, the name appears as a middle name to both Minerva's brother as well as her son. I can't help but speculate that there was an origin for the name, but have not found one yet.

Abner Clinton Hetsler was the youngest of the Hetsler siblings. He married Margaret Holman on 18 December 1877, and then made his family's home in Ann Arbor, Michigan. Margaret died in 1937 in Rochester, and Abner's history beyond 1916 is not known.

THE BENEDICT FAMILY

Map of New York Counties: Ulster, Dutchess, Orange, Putnam, and Westchester are just north of New York City; Monroe and Genesee are in western New York, along Lake Ontario and close to Ontario, Canada

Juliann Benedict -- Frederick's first wife was the daughter of

Reuben Benedict was born in 1795 in Canada, the son of James Benedict and Ann Barger who were married in Peekskill, Westchester County, New York and later settled at Sophiasburg, Prince Edward County, Ontario, Canada. Reuben was probably born and raised in the vicinity of Sophiasburg, but later relocated just across Lake Ontario to the Rochester, Monroe County, New York area where most of his children were born. Although we have not been able to establish the actual ancestor of Reuben, he was undoubtedly related to the other Benedict families who hailed from Ridgefield, Fairfield County, Connecticut, including Daniel Benedict and his spouses Agnes Wallace and Hannah Burr. That Benedict Family was descended from Thomas Benedict, a Puritan who settled in the early 1600s on Long Island, but thereafter moved to the Connecticut settlement at Norwalk shortly after it was founded. In that vicinity, the Benedict family stayed for several generations.

THE BARGER FAMILY

Ann Barger [sometimes spelled "Barager"] was born on the cusp of the American Revolution, on 10 July 1774. She was the daughter of Peter Barger and Elizabeth Huff, prominent citizens of Putnam, Dutchess and Westchester Counties, New York. Peter was born in 1741 in Putnam County, New York, the son of Andrew Barger [who,

like the Hetzlers and other Palatine German immigrants, first removed to Holland before emigrating to the American Colonies]. Andrew Barger chose to emigrate to the Dutch colony in New York sometime before the 1740s, but was among the families who remained on the eastern seaboard counties of New York rather than relocating to the western frontier at Mohawk Valley. Elizabeth Huff was the daughter of William Huff and Elizabeth Ruttan, born about 1745 in Dutchess County, New York. Peter and Elizabeth had been married 5 August 1765 at the Presbyterian Church of Rombout and Poughkeepsie, Dutchess County, New York. Elizabeth was the daughter of Paul Rutan [or Ruttan] and his second wife, Elizabeth Foshier.

THE HUFF FAMILY

William Huff was baptized on 2 April 1714 in Tarrytown, Westchester County, New York, the son of Engelbert Huff and Maria Willemsze [anglicized as "Williams"]. William's father Engelbert Hoff (Huff) was born about 1637 in Norway. Engelbert escaped or deserted from a Dutch warship in the Hudson River and swam to shore to settle in the wilderness. This ship is believed to be the van Couwenhovens, stationed out of Wappingers during the "Esopus Wars" in 1662. During Queen Ann's War he sailed as a privateer with Capt. Claver. He then settled in Westchester County, New York and began working as a tenant farmer. He married Maria Willemsze in 1706 in Westchester County, New York. [If he were born in 1637, he would have been 69 years old when he first married!] Maria was born in Tarrytown in 1690 and was therefore only 16 at the time. Nevertheless, Maria predeceased Engelbert; she died in 1732. Engelbert died 21 Mar 1765 in Fishkill, Dutchess County, New York aged 128 years!

THE RUTTAN FAMILY

The Ruttan family were descendants of French Huguenots. In the 16th and 17th centuries, the name "Huguenot" was applied to a member of the Protestant Reformed Church of France, historically known as the French Calvinists. The Huguenots were French Protestants who were members of the Reformed Church which was established in 1550 by John Calvin. The French Protestants themselves preferred to refer to themselves as "réformees" (reformers) rather than "Huguenots". It was much later that the name "Huguenot" became an honorary one of which their descendants are proud.[10]

The history of tyranny against Huguenots reached a zenith in 1536 when a general edict which encouraged the extermination of the Huguenots was issued on January 29th, 1536 in France. On March 1st, 1562 some 1200 Huguenots were slain at Vassy, France. This ignited the the Wars of Religion which would rip apart, devastate, and bankrupt France for the next three decades. During the infamous St Bartholomew Massacre of the night of 23/24 August, 1572 more than 8 000 Huguenots, including Admiral Gaspard de Coligny, Governor of Picardy and leader and spokesman of the Huguenots, were murdered in Paris. It happened during the wedding of Henry of Navarre, a Huguenot, to Marguerite de Valois (daughter of Catherine de Medici), when thousands of Huguenots converged on Paris for the wedding celebrations. Catherine de Medici persuaded her weakling son Charles IX to order the mass murder, which lasted three days and spread to the countryside. On Sunday morning August 24th, 1572 she personally walked through the streets of Paris to inspect the carnage. Henry of Navarre's life was spared when he

10 The origin of the name Huguenot is uncertain, but dates from approximately 1550 when it was used in court cases against "heretics" (dissenters from the Roman Catholic Church). There is a theory that it is derived from the personal name of Besançon Hugues, the leader of the "Confederate Party" in Geneva, in combination with a Frankish corruption of the German word for conspirator or confederate: eidgenosse. Thus, Hugues plus eidgenot becomes Huguenot, with the intention of associating the Protestant cause with some very unpopular politics. O.I.A. Roche, in his book The Days of the Upright, a History of the Huguenots, writes that "Huguenot" is "a combination of a Flemish and a German word. In the Flemish corner of France, Bible students who gathered in each other's houses to study secretly were called Huisgenooten, or "house fellows," while on the Swiss and German borders they were termed Eidgenossen, or "oath fellows," that is, persons bound to each other by an oath. Gallicized into "Huguenot," often used deprecatingly, the word became, during two and a half centuries of terror and triumph, a badge of enduring honor and courage." As nickname and even abusive name it's use was banned in the regulations of the Edict of Nantes which Henry IV (Henry of Navarre, who himself earlier was a Huguenot) issued in 1598.

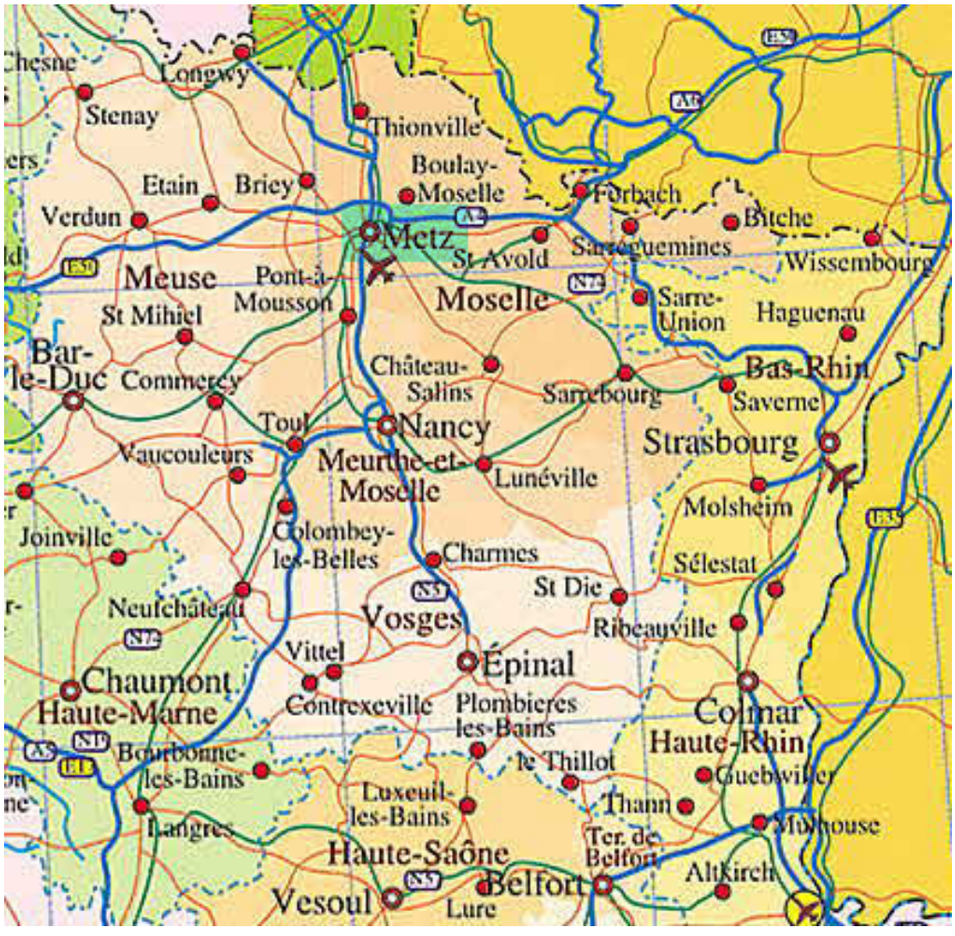
Depiction of St. Bartholomew Massacre 1572

pretended to support the Roman Catholic faith. In 1593 he made his "perilous leap"and abjured his faith in July 1593, and 5 years later he was the undisputed monarch as King Henry IV (le bon Henri, the good Henry) of France. When the first rumours of the massacre reached the Vatican in Rome on 2 September 1572, pope Gregory XIII was jubilant and wanted bonfires to be lit in Rome. He was persuaded to wait for the official communication. The very morning of the day that he received the confirmed news, the pope held a consistory and announced that "God had been pleased to be merciful". Then with all the cardinals he repaired to the Church of St. Mark for the Te Deum, and prayed and ordered prayers that the Most Christian King might rid and purge his entire kingdom (of France) of the Huguenot plague. On 8 September 1572 a procession of thanksgiving took place in Rome, and the pope, in a prayer after mass, thanked God for having "granted the Catholic people a glorious triumph over a perfidious race" (gloriosam de perfidis gentibus populo catholico loetitiam tribuisti). Gregory XIII engaged Vasari to paint scenes in one of the Vatican apartments of the triumph of the Most Christian King over the Huguenots. He had a medal struck representing an exterminating angel smiting the Huguenots with his sword, the inscription reading: Hugonottorium strages (Huguenot conspirators). In France itself, the French magistracy ordered the admiral to be burned in effigy and prayers and processions of thanksgiving on each recurring 24th August, out of gratitude to God for the victory over the Huguenots.

The Edict of Nantes was signed by Henry IV on April 13th, 1598, which brought an end to the Wars of

Religion. The Huguenots were allowed to practice their faith in 20 specified French "free" cities. France became united and a decade of peace followed. After Henry IV was murdered in 1610, however, the persecution of the "dissenters" resumed in all earnestness under the guidance of Cardinal Richelieu, whose favourite project was the extermination of the Huguenots.

Blue area shows location of Metz, within Lorraine, France

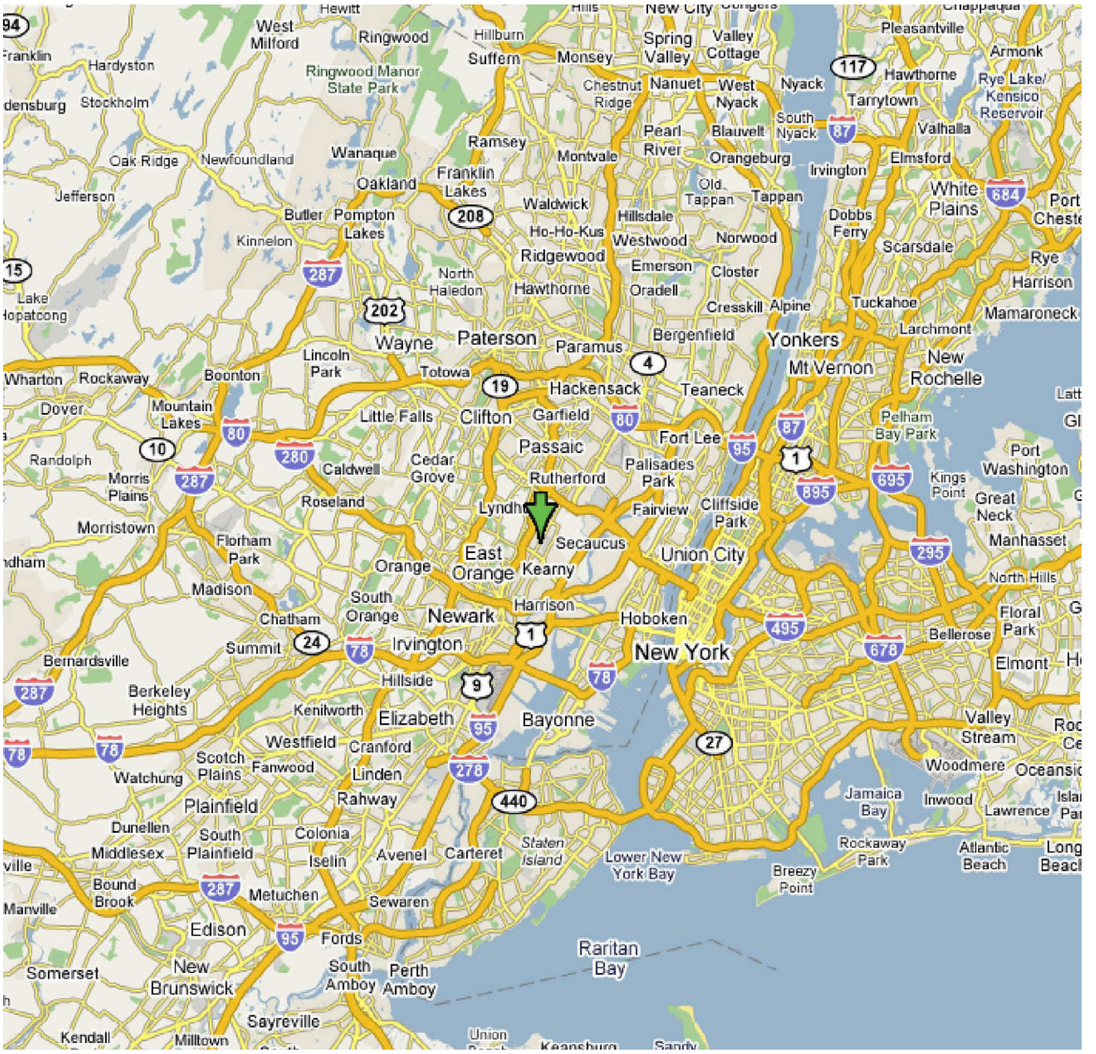


The earliest documented records of the ancestors of the Rutan or Ruttan family of North America were found in the Saint-Mihiel, Lorraine, France, civil registers of the year 1590 where Claudin Ruttan, furrier, and Catherine, his wife, are recorded as parents of Claude at his baptism on October 19, 1590. The immigrant ancestor was Abraham B. Rutan, who was Christened on 10 Jun 1658 in Metz, Lorraine, France, a grandchild of Claudin and Catherine through their son Daniel. An extract from the register of infant baptisms in the Reformed Church of Metz reads: "June 10, 1658. Abraham, son of Daniel Rutan and of Anne de Bize, his wife. Godfathers Abraham Boudat and Paul Cluien, godmothers Marie Bancelin and Susanne Pilon."

While still a child of about 12 years in about 1670, Abraham left Saint-Mihiel in Platz-Loraine and was taken into Germany among a group of French Hugenots. Loraine at that time belonged to Catholic France and resident Protestants were still subjected to religious persecution. The group of Huguenots that included Abraham Rutan settled in or near Mannheim in the Lower German Palantinate. Within five years, Abraham joined the Hasbrouck Party and journeyed with them via Rotterdam, Amsterdam, and England to America. The Hasbrouck Party arrived first in the town of Boston in early 1675, but sailed on to New York and further, reaching Ulster County in July 1675. They moved on to Esopus, the area around Kingston in Ulster County on the west bank of the Hudson River, where, in 1677, New Paltz was founded. in Ulster County, New York

Abraham settled in New Paltz and the first record of him is as a sponsor, on October 14, 1679, at the baptism of a daughter of Peter Deyo, one of the "Douzaine" (the twelve families that established New Paltz) at Kingston, New York. In 1680 (exact date not known), Abraham married Marie Petilion (or Piteljon) in the New Paltz settlement. Marie is believed to have been born about 1662 in Metz, Lorraine, France, and come to America in the same group as Abraham. Their children were amongst the first to be baptized in the French Church, which was established in 1683

Green Arrow shows location of New Barbadoes, New Jersey [now North Arlington, Bergen County, New Jersey]



at New Paltz. We have no record of Marie's family earlier than 1678 when Marie joined the Dutch Reformed Church of New York City.

On September 1, 1689, Abraham took the Oath of Allegiance to the English Crown. By indenture dated October 26, 1699, Abraham bought a parcel of land and meadow in New Barbadoes in the County of Essex in the Province of East New Jersey from Thomas Noell of the City of New York, merchant, and Hannah, his wife. There he and Marie and likely some of their children lived and it seemed prospered, until he died on May 19, 1713 in New Barbadoes, Bergen County, New Jersey. Marie (Mary) died later that same year. With the exception of a parcel of land that had been given to their eldest child, Daniel, and some other small bequests, her will dated February 19, 1712 (or possibly 1713?) directed that her estate be distributed in equal proportions amongst her children. While there is some disagreement among researchers, it appears that Abraham and Marie had twelve children, the first five of whom are recorded as being baptized in the French Church at New Paltz.

THE FREDERICK HETSLER or "HETCHLER" FAMILY

After Mehitable Benedict's marriage to Frederick Hetchler, the family continued to gtrow. The first child of the second marriage was Minerva, who was born in 1841, probably in Elba, Genesee County, New York. Frederick moved his family from Genesee County, New York to Macomb County, Michigan about September 1845. A profile of Frederick's son Jefferson helps track the family's migration: [From Leeson, History of Macomb County [Michigan], Page 731] "J. L. HETZLER, P.O. Utica, son of Frederick G. and Julia Ann Hetzler (Benedict), born in Dundas Village, Wentworth County, Canada, November 9, 1837; removed from Canada with his parents in

the winter of 1838, to the State of New York, near Batavia [Elba]: remained there until the fall of 1845, at which time he removed with his father and step-mother to the town of Erin, Macomb County, Michigan . . . [H]is ancestors came from Hamburg, Germany, about the middle of the last century."

After his arrival in Michigan, Frederick and Mary had three more children: Philetus, Opheline, and Abner. The family was enumerated next door to the Aaron Scribner family in Sterling Township, Macomb County, Michigan during the 1850 federal census. The 1850 "Hetchler" family group enumeration included Frederick, Mary, Minerva, Minerva's younger full-siblings Philetus, Opheline, and Abner, and her older half-siblings Jefferson & Charles. [The third half-brother presumably was deceased.]

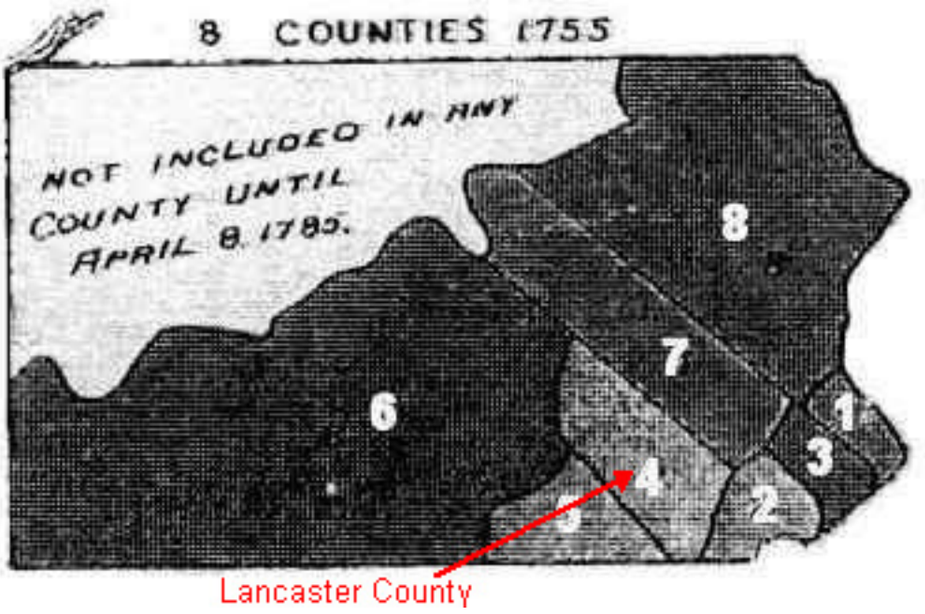
Frederick thereafter built a new home for his wife Mary and their family in 1854 in Utica, Macomb County, Michigan.[11] Shortly after the house was finished, Frederick Hetchler died on February 7, 1855, during an epidemic of the "ague" (influenza) prevailing in the Michigan area in which the Hetchlers lived.

Erbach location shown within modern Germany

A note about the surname: as with the Steele family, the original German name spelling had been anglicized over time. The original immigrants spelled the surname "Hetzler" and subsequent generations had used variations including "Hetchler" and "Hetsler." Minerva and her family consistently used the name "Hetsler" although some official documents used various phonetic alterations.

Like our Steele ancestors, our Hetsler/Hetchler/Hetzler ancestors were descended from German immigrants who had recently migrated to Michigan from New York as part of the Erie Canal-created surge of Great Lakes settlers. Our Hetzler line has been conclusively connected to Johann Balthasar Hetzler, an emigrant from Württemberg, German who settled in the Lancaster County area of Pennsylvania as part of the large 'Pennsylvania Dutch"

11 The 1854-built home of Frederick & Mary Hetchler was owned by John & Colleen Pawl in 1999, at 14711 Clinton River Rd., Sterling Heights. It has been awarded a bronze plaque from the Roseville Historical and Genealogical Society in Macomb County, Michigan.



Map Showing Location of Lancaster County Within Pennsylvania during the time of the Hetzler's Residence

protestant German-immigrant community. Our immigrant Hetzlers were Lutherans, and thus found themselves among many others of like religous persuasion after immigration. That may explain why they chose to settle in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania immediately after arrival.

Johan Balthasar Hetzler left Erbach, Württemberg, Germany during 1749 as part of the massive wave of German Protestant Palatine emigration to Pennsylvania. The village of Erbach is in the state of Württemberg about 15 miles up the Danube River from Ulm, and it is this vicinity that was his ancestral home. Johan arrived in America as one of 285 passengers from Rotterdam [after first porting in Cowes, England] on Saturday September 2, 1749 at Philadelphia Pennsylvania, aboard the ship *Albany*. The men passengers signed the customary oath of allegiance, and a facsimile of the signatures shows that of Johan Balthasar to be sixth on the list. In Vol. III of Dr. William John Hinke's history entitled GERMAN PIONEERS his handwriting may be seen.

Although Johan Balthasar was the first Hetzler to land in America, his father is the Progenitor of our Hetsler Family in America. Johan Georg Hetzler was born about 1708 in Erbach, Württemberg, Germany. The Hetzler family was German Lutheran. A study of the Duchy of Wurttemberg leaves little doubt that George and Balser (which is a form of Balthasar) were seeking haven from religious conditions distasteful to them.

John George Hetzler followed his son to America with the rest of the family in 1751. On September 16, 1751 we find the Signature of Johan Gorg Hotzler among those on the oath of abjuration at Philadelphia. His name was 42nd out of 94 who landed from the ship *Brothers* arriving from Rotterdam. Because the name does not appear in any Philadelphia records but does appear in the records of Elizabeth Township, Lancaster County many times we are inclined to think the "Johan Gorg Hotzler" signature in GERMAN PIONEERS is his. A transcript of his will made December 27, 1782 names his older son Balser.

Johan George settled in Elizabeth Township, Lancaster County, early in the 1750's and spent the rest of his life there. The family therefore became part of the large "Pennsylvania Dutch" community in Lancaster County. He is known to have had a wife named Eva or Elizabeth [surname unknown], who was born about 1710 in Germany, and who died between 1745-1760 in Warwick Township, Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. His first wife is thought to have probably died before he came to America. There may have been a considerable interval between the death of his first wife and his second marriage because of the years between two of his children, so we cannot be certain as to the identify of the mother of his oldest child, Balthasar. Our Progenitor Johan George Hetzler died on December 27, 1783 in Elizabeth Township, and was buried at the Schaefferstown Lutheran Church Cemetery in Lancaster

The Parish Church of Erbach, Germany; The home parish for our Hetzler Emigrant Family

County, Pennsylvania.

Balthasar settled in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, was a member of the Lutheran Church, and was a tiller of the soil. He married Anna Barbara Dohm, another German Lutheran immigrant who had been born in 1735 in Germany, on November 9, 1755 in Heidelberg Township, Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. His quiet existence in Pennsylvania changed when on April 19, 1775 Revolutionary war broke out. On September 11, 1777 Johan Balthasar, his brother Johan Jacob, along with his sons Frederick and Jacob joined the Pennsylvania Militia: 9th Battalion of Lancaster County. They fought in the battle of Brandywine, in Southeastern Pennsylvania, lead by General George Washington in September 1777. Again, on October 4th, 1777 the Hetzlers followed General Washington at the battle of Germantown, Pennsylvania. They also spent the winter of 1777 at Valley Forge with the General.

Balthasar's father died in 1783, and he then looked westward to what seemed to him "greener pastures." Baltzer obtained a warrant for 150 acres of land surveyed June 20, 1785 in Northumberland County, Pennsylvania. About 1786 or 1787 Balthasar and his family loaded on wagons all they possessed, and moved about 60 miles to the northwest as the crow flies, (but nearer a hundred by the winding way they traveled). They made their new home

George Washington Crosses The Delaware River

in what is now Aaronsburg, Hains Township, Penns Valley, Northumberland County. [In 1800 this part of Haines Township was placed in the newly organized Centre County.] He remained at Aaronsburg, Pennsylvania until his death in 1811, and is buried along with his wife and two sons at Wolf's Chapel Cemetery in Aaronsburg.

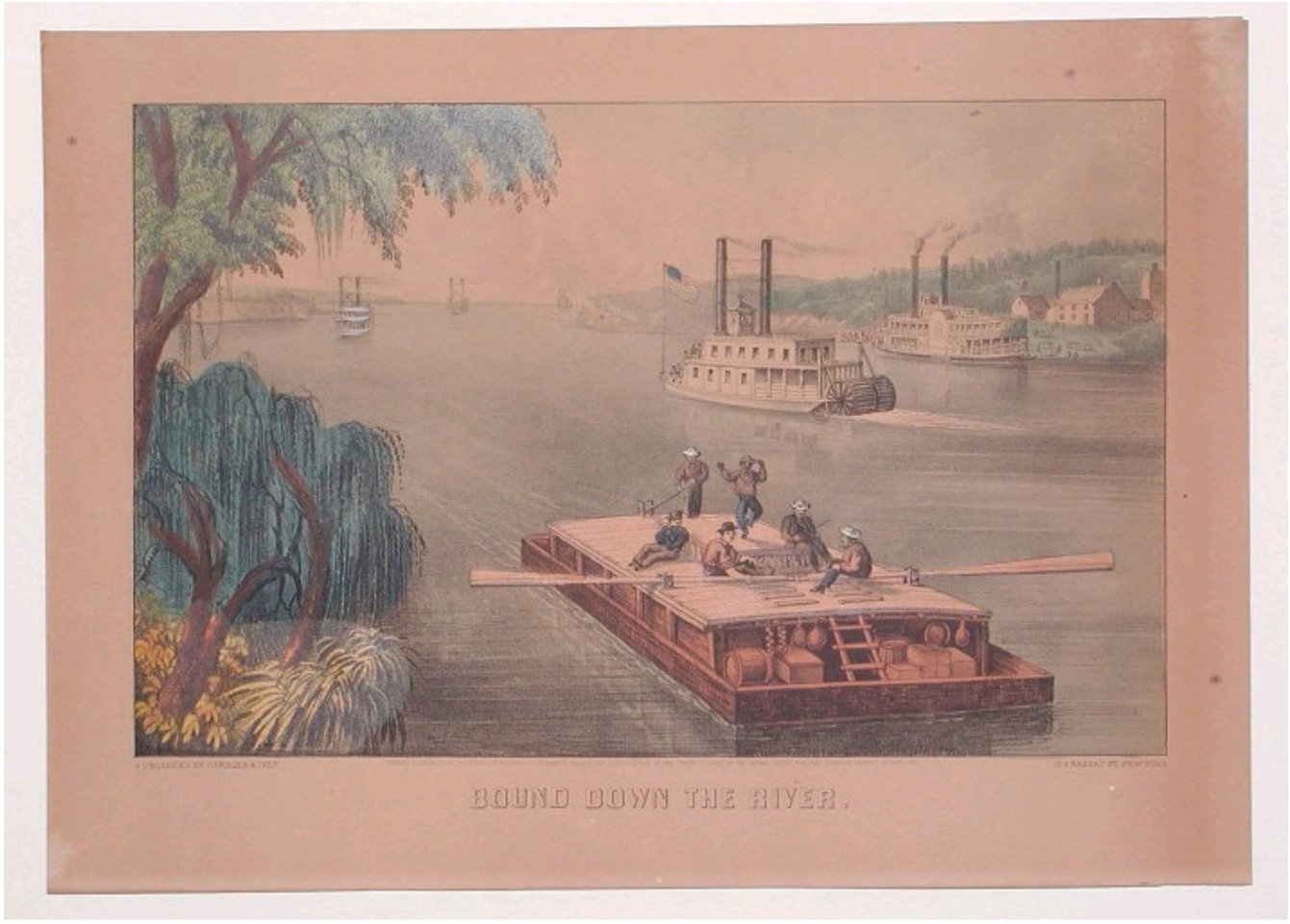
The family is described in "The Hetzler Family" chapter one: "coming from sturdy, upright, Christian stock, a type of people perhaps tending toward the stern and more serious side of life, the Hetzler FAMILY today are on the whole a people of high standards. Not remarkable for attaining high position, or even seeking it, modest and humble for the most part, they are of that stable, dependable middle class by which the fabric of society is held together and supported, and indeed, preserved - the very salt of the earth."

The American Hetzler lines can be traced to various of the sons of Balthasar Hetzler who relocated to different areas following the death of Johan George – the progenitor. The various lines of the Hetzlers are traced to the sons of Baltzer and are variously known as the Madeira Branch, the Brown's Run Branch, the Ashland Branch, and the Michigan Branch. Balthasar's daughter Anne married Frederick Stober and her family remained in Centre County, Pennsylvania for several generations.

THE MADEIRA BRANCH

By 1797, Balthasar's second son Jacob and his wife Anna Elizabeth had a family of several small children in Haines Township, Northumberland County. But in spite of this family of babies, this brave and hardy German pair decided to seek their fortunes in the Ohio country, no doubt more determined now because they had heard the danger from Indians no longer existed. The journey across the Allegheny was an adventure at that early date, but thousands were coming, and they were no doubt in company with a good number from their home neighborhood.

"Bound Down The River," Currier & Ives, 1870



The journey by wagon to the headwaters of the Ohio, either at Pittsburgh or somewhere along the Monongahela, undoubtedly without a road part of the way, was slow and probably took them at least two weeks. Their long voyage down the Ohio was by flatboat. Jacob floated with his family down the Ohio River and bought land in Hamilton County, near Cincinnati, Ohio from John Cleves Symmes, January 20, 1798. That established the "Madeira" Line of the Hetzler Family. Jacob's deed entitled him to 120 acres of land about ten miles East of Ft. Washington, in the present Village of Madeira; on the Northeast corner of Euclid and Miami Roads. In the next ten years the remainder of his total of ten children were born.

THE BROWN'S RUN BRANCH

No doubt there were letters from brother Jacob to younger brother George telling of the opportunity to get fine cheap land out in Ohio. Records of the sale of public land show that George Hetzler bought a half-section of land in German Township, Montgomery Co., on the banks of Big Twin Creek, in 1805. This leads us to believe that he made the journey out on horseback, perhaps with a number of companions, saw the loveliness of this virgin country, and determined to bring his family out. They did not migrate until later, the reason for this delay we do not

know.

George and his wife Catherine migrated from Pennsylvania to a pioneer home on Browns Run in 1814. Today it is still a rural district four or five miles Southwest of Germantown, Montgomery County, Ohio. The district is along the Butler County line. Their home was in Penns Valley for about twenty five years before their migration to Ohio, and in Penns Valley all their fifteen children were born. They became the Founders of the Browns Run branch of the family. George was a large landowner on Browns Run, a religious and moral leader of note-associated with the founders of the United Brethren Church but was Lutheran in Pennsylvania. He opened his house for the Preaching of Christ. Circuit preaching was continued at his house for a number of years. Nineteen United Brethren Church camp meetings were held on his land for the better part of a generation.

His great-granddaughter, Sarah Hetzler Harris, who was eighteen at the time of his death, described him of not very large stature, active, and shortly before his death enjoying inspecting the land, walking through the fields, climbing the fences. She remembered that he spoke German much more easily than English. Yet she nor any of George Hetzler's great-grandchildren spoke German. He was sturdy into his old age and lived to ninety-five years. He was at his death the father of fifteen children, eighty-nine grandchildren, and seventy-six great-grandchildren.

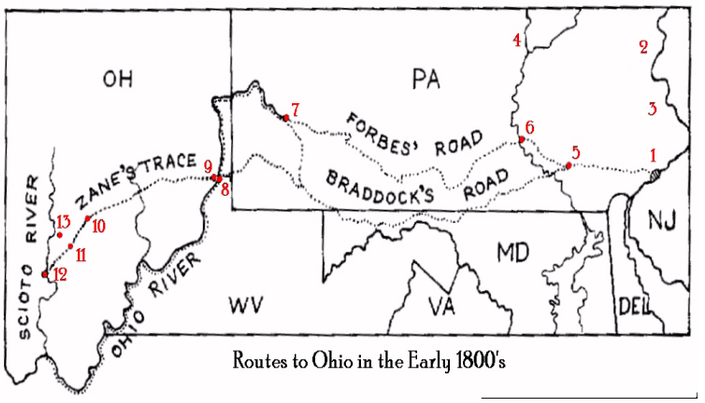
THE ASHLAND BRANCH

Other than the Michigan settlers (which includes family members who went to Canada), the final line of Hetzler's which we can trace today descends from the youngest surviving son of Balhasar, who was named Balser or Balthaser, Jr. His name also appears in records as: John Balthasar Hetzler, Jr. He had six sons. Most likely stayed in the vicinity of Ashland, Ohio. At least two of his children migrated to Wayne County in Northern Ohio around 1830. They constitute a third branch of the Hetzler family in Ohio.

THE MICHIGAN BRANCH

Balthasar's eldest son Frederick Hetzler was born January 11, 1757 in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. He married Barbara Singer in 1783 in Lancaster County. Frederick was a veteran of the revolutionary war along with his father. Shortly after the birth of his first child, John Jacob, Frederick moved his family from Lancaster County to Chester County, Pennsylvania (1783-1787), and then on to New York State. During 1795, Frederick, his brother Nicholas, sister Barbery and her husband Dr. Frederick Deutsch, and Uncle Jacob (Balthasar's brother) had moved northward to the Finger Lakes region of Ontario County, New York. Frederick settled in Geneva Township, near Seneca Lake and made considerable improvements on the property. Unfortunately, his title was not valid, and the land proved to be soldiers' rights lands from which he was compelled to move.

The fourth son of Balthasar – Nicholas, his wife, and son, had also moved northward to the Finger Lakes region of Ontario County, New York. While Frederick had settled in Geneva Township, Nicholas and the others settled near Lake Canandaigua at Middlesex Township where Nicholas and his brother-in-law Dr. Deutsch helped found the Voak Methodist Church. [Presently the church is named St. John's Evangelical Lutheran Church at Potter, Yates County,



Routes to Ohio in the Early 1800's

New York.] Betsy Brooks, first wife of Nicholas, died during 1801 (possibly during the childbirth of Susan) and was the first person buried at Schuman Burying Grounds (Potter Cemetery) in what by then was Yates County, New York.

Nicholas left soon after Betsy's death. He wandered from the town of Augusta, Ontario County, New York, and by 1802 settled at the town of Caledonia, Genesee County, New York where he married Polly Conkle. Nicholas' settlement in Genesee County served as the impetus for Frederick's relocation to Genesee County as well. After Frederick was forced to quit his land in Geneva Township in Ontario County, Frederick relocated near his brother in Genesee County, New York sometime before 1810 and remained through both the 1810 and 1820 census enumerations.

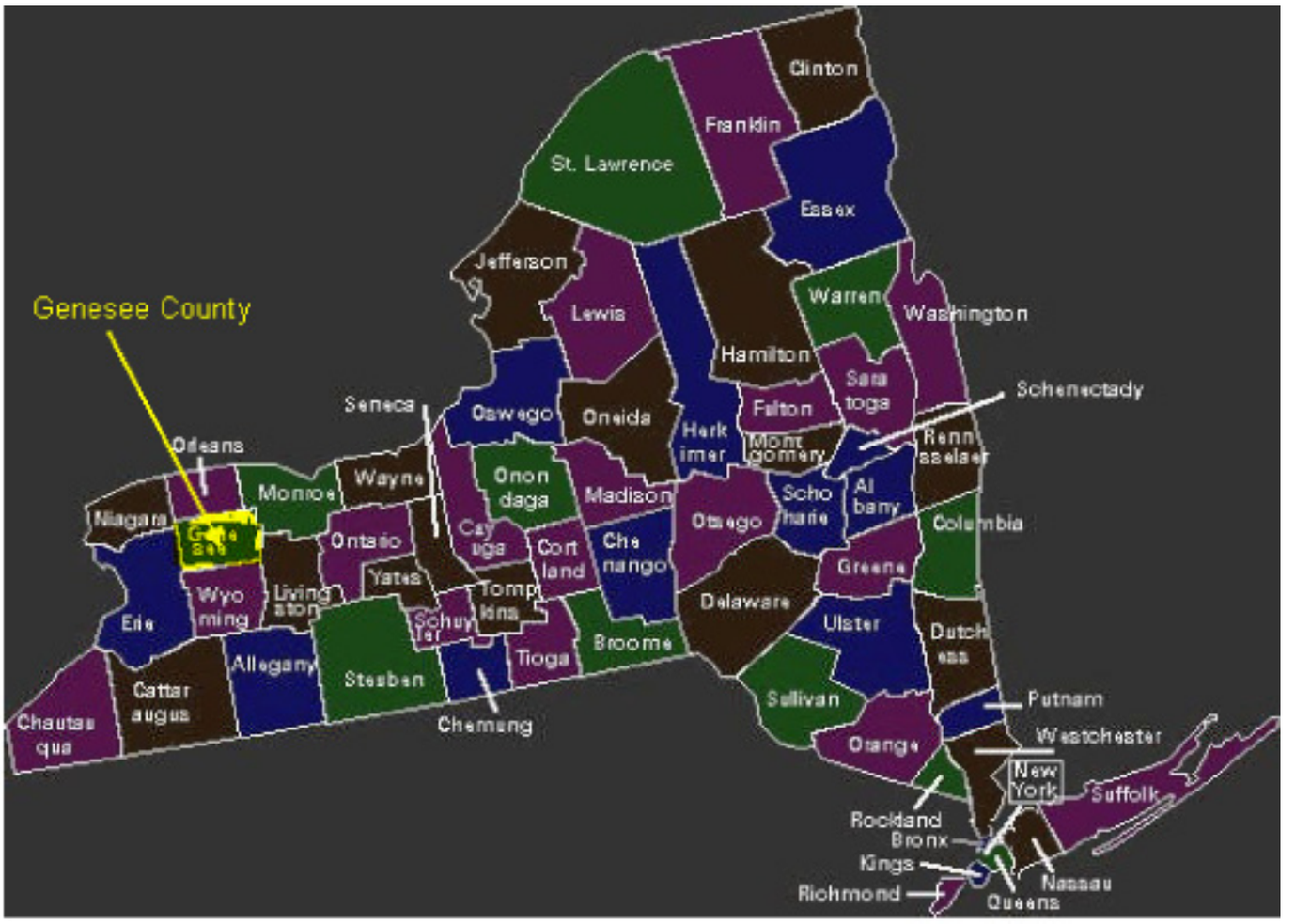
Nicholas did not remain, however. By 1804 the Nicholas Hetchler family had left Genesee County and relocated to Scottsville, Wheatland Township, Monroe County, New York (near Rochester) where they remained for more than fifty years. By 1830, Frederick again followed Nicholas and secured lands in Scottsville, Wheatland Township, where he was enumerated in the 1830 census. Frederick spent the rest of his life in Scottsville; he died in Scottsville in 1835, and is buried in the Oatka Cemetery, Scottsville, Monroe County, New York.

However, Nicholas still had wanderlust. After losing his wife Polly in 1836, Nicholas then watched his children move away to greener pastures in Michigan. Having sold his land, Nicholas now an old and lonely man returned to what had become Yates County, New York to spend his remaining years with his sister and daughters who had permanently settled in the area. Nicholas died in Yates County on Monday August 6, 1855 and was buried at Schuman Burying Grounds next to his first wife. In 1966, the log cabin Nicholas built in 1802 was donated by the Arthur Burns family to the Genesee County Museum and moved to its location at a museum in Mumford, New York.

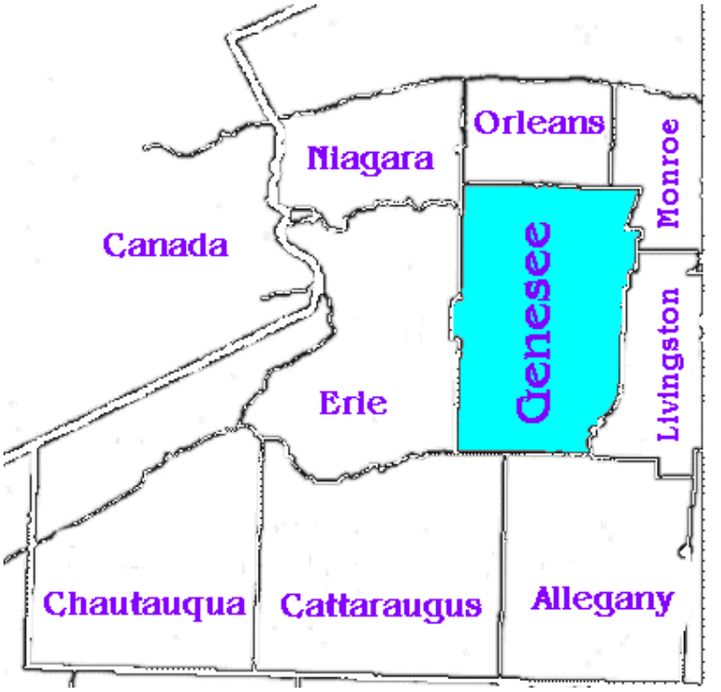
John Jacob Hetzler, also known simply as "Jacob", was the eldest child of Balthasar's eldest son Frederick, and was the last of his line to have been born in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. He was baptized at Bindnagel Church in Lancaster County on November 16, 1783. Frederick's family began its migration shortly after Jacob's birth. Jacob married Hannah [last name unknown] while living with his father Frederick in either Geneva Township, Ontario County or after the move to Genesee County. Jacob and Hannah were in Genesee County along with Jacob's father Frederick during both the 1810 and 1820 enumerations.

During the 1830's some of the Hetzlers who descended from the New York migrants began to resettle in Michigan. The 1840 Census listed several of Frederick's descendants at Macomb County, Michigan, including sons John Jacob and Nicholas, and grandson Frederick George -- son of John Jacob (our ancestor). By 1854 both Frederick and Nicholas Hetchler's sons had moved to Michigan (mainly to Livingston and Macomb Counties), and by 1860 all the sons and most of the daughters of both men (except John and Henry, sons of Frederick) had settled in Michigan. George, John, Frederick and Nicholas Jr. settled at Livingston County. Peter settled at Genesee County, which borders Livingston County.

John Hetchler was born on November 18, 1787 in Hains Township, Centre County, Pennsylvania. He served as a soldier in the War of 1812, and at the Battle of Black Rock was captured by the British. After three months imprisonment at Montreal, he was exchanged. A few years after the War, he married Elizabeth Troutner. John separated from his father Frederick sometime after the 1830 census, and left Scottsville, Monroe County New York and relocated to Venango County, Pennsylvania where he and Elizabeth lived out their lives. John died on February 20, 1855 in Venango County, Pennsylvania and both he and Elizabeth were buried in the Rockland Methodist Episcopal Cemetery.



Henry Hetzler – another son of Frederick and brother to Jacob and John – was born November 3, 1791 in Pennsylvania. He moved from northern New York just across the International Boundary into Ancaster, Wentworth County, in Ontario Province, Canada in the early 1830s, and married Margaret Wilkins in Ancaster Township on March 2, 1834. [Ancaster was a village and a Township in Wentworth County just west of Hamilton at the west end of Lake Ontario. Dundas Village is next to Ancaster also just west of Hamilton. Both Ancaster and Dundas were incorporated into the City of Hamilton (500 thousand people in total) a few years ago, still in Wentworth County. A straight line drawn between Genesee County, New York and Detroit, Michigan, would closely intersect with Hamilton.] Henry Hetsler died before 1845 when his wife remarried to John Michael Cline. John Cline had been born in Germany, and presumably was



well-known to the Hetzlers as a member of the local German community. John Cline died before 1851, but his wife Margaret stayed in Ancaster after his death.

Henry Hetsler married Margaret Wilkins in Ancaster Township on 2 March 1834. Henry was undoubtedly still in Ancaster Township when Jefferson Linsdley Hetsler was born on 9 November 1837. the son of Frederick George Hetchler and his wife Julianne Benedict [*see* below].. Although Jefferson relocated with his family shortly after birth to Genesee County, New York, no doubt his family stayed in close contact with Henry Hetsler and his family. As an adult, Jefferson Lindsley Hetsler returned to Ontario from Macomb County, Michigan where he had been living with his father and stepmother since he was eight. After Henry's Hetzler's death, Margaret married John Cline, and the daughter of this union -- Artemesia Cline -- became Jefferson L. Hetsler's wife on 30 December 1863 in Onandaga Township, Brant County which borders on Ancaster Township, Wentworth County, Ontario.. The marriage of Jefferson and Artemesia is demonstrable evidence of the close ties that were maintained between the Michigan and Canadian Hetsler families.

Frederick George Hetchler (our ancestor), son of John Jacob and Hannah Hetzler and grandson of Frederick Hetzler and Barbara Singer was born in Kenia Township, Genesee County, New York in about 1810. After the revolution, his grandfather Frederick had settled in the Finger Lakes region, but was compelled to leave for lack of a title. Frederick then located near his brother Nicholas in Genesee County, New York before the 1810 census. When Frederick relocated to Monroe County, his son Jacob stayed in Genesee County, ultimately moving to Kenia Township, where Frederick George Hetchler was born and enumerated in the 1820 census.

Frederisk's daughter (our ancestor on both the Scribner and Steele lines) is Minerva Ann. Minerva married "the boy next door" – Charles William Scribner – on December 3, 1859 in Utica, Macomb County, Michigan. Charles was the third son of Aaron Scribner and Rhoda Carll, and had been born in Brighton, Somerset County, Maine in the spring of 1830. His family had historically worked as lumbermen in Maine and New Hampshire since

Charles William Scribner, About 1860 -- Age 30

the earliest colonial times, and relocated from Maine to the Great Lakes region after the opening of the Erie Canal. By 1860, Charles and Minerva and their two young sons were enumerated in the same home as Charles' parents had been enumerated in 1850 and were next door to Charles' sister Sarah Jane and her husband William Stapleton.

Charles W. Scribner became a Michigan volunteer during the Civil War and was mustered in to Company F, 22nd Regiment of the Michigan Infantry as a private on January 21, 1864 at Pontiac, Michigan for a 3-year enlistment. At that time he was 33 years old, with blue eyes, auburn hair, standing 5' 8 ½" tall. After enlistment, he proceeded to training at Grand Rapids where measles were prevailing and he took the measles at camp. He nevertheless proceeded as far as Indianapolis, then took worse and had to be taken to the hospital. He died from complications of the measles while confined at City General Hospital in Indianapolis, Indiana on February 28, 1864, barely 30 days after his muster. He was never able to join his Company. The location of his burial is a matter of some question. One record states that Charles is buried at Indianapolis (Col. George H. Turner [comp.], RECORD OF SERVICE OF MICHIGAN VOLUNTEERS IN THE CIVIL WAR, 1861-1865, 22 [Kalamazoo, MI: Published by Authority of the Senate and House of Representatives of the Michigan Legislature, under the direction of Brig. Gen. Geo. H. Brown, Adjutant General, by Ihling Bros. & Everard Stationers, Printers and Publishers, 1903], 128). Countervailing evidence of the place of Charles' burial comes from the Civil War Pension File of Peter Steele, Affidavits of Thomas P. Scribner & Mary [Steele] Hetsler, [Statements that they attended funeral of Charles W. Scribner on 3 March 1864 in Detroit, and positively identified his remains at that time]. Based on those affidavits, it is reasonable to conclude that Charles must have been buried in Michigan sometime after his memorial service, which was held on 3 March 1864 in Detroit. Most likely, Charles is buried in a national cemetery somewhere in the

Detroit, Michigan area, with other civil war-era soldiers.

In addition to Minerva's husband's death, the immediate Hetzler family sustained another significant loss during the Civil War. Frederick G. Hetchler's brother George Hetchler died during the Battle of Gettysburg. Private George Hetchler had served in Company E, 5th Regiment of the Michigan Cavalry Volunteers. George Hetchler was wounded on July 3rd, 1863 at the battle of Gettysburg and died of these wounds on July 6th, 1863. He is buried in section F of Gettysburg National Cemetery at grave Number 8. At the battle of Gettysburg the 2nd brigade of the 3rd Cavalry Division consisted of the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 5th, 6th, and 7th Cavalries under the command of Brigadier General George A. Custer. The battle occurred on July 1st, 2nd and 3rd, with most of the action taking place south and southwest of Gettysburg. The cavalry of both armies were in the reserve to the east and north of the battle. On the third day Jeb Stuart's undefeated cavalry was going to strike the Union forces from the North; if that had occurred, they would lose the battle. Without Jeb Stuart's attack, the union forces had a slight edge. General Custer, for some reason, decided to attack, and Jeb Stuart's cavalry had their first loss. By the end of the day, the south began to retreat and the battle was over. General Lee withdrew his battered army to Virginia. His southern forces suffered more than 20,000 casualties from the battle of Gettysburg. George Hetchler was one of 18,000 casualties suffered by the Northern forces of General George G. Meade.

General George Armstrong Custer

Civil war casualties for the family also included wounds. Minerva's half-brother Jefferson Hetsler enlisted at the age of 25 as a Private in Company I, Sixteenth Infantry Michigan Volunteers, on March 20, 1862 in Utica, Macomb County, Michigan; he was injured on May 11, 1862 and discharged July 1, 1862, on account of disability from injuries received while building a pontoon bridge near Yorktown, Va. . He was helping to lay a pontoon bridge between General McLellan's Headquarters and Yorktown, Virginia. While carrying planks he was accidentally thrown upon his back across a stringer, causing injury to his spine. He was treated at the Field Hospital on the field before Yorktown, Virginia and then moved to the Regimental Hospital; he remained there until after the evacuation of Yorktown where he was carried aboard the Steamship Ocean Queen to New York. He remained in New York for treatment for a short time and was then carried to the General Hospital in Detroit, Michigan where he remained until he received his disability discharge on 01 July 1863. After this, he had deterioration of his spinal cord, including curvature. Consequently, he could not stand up straight and had to walk with a cane. [The pension file provides a physical description of Jefferson: 5 foot, 4 1/2 inches tall, dark complexion, grey eyes, black hair, 110 pounds. From this description he must have been very short and scrawny [like Grandfather Thomas Jefferson Scribner].

THE WIDOW SCRIBNER & FIVE FAMILIES IN MACOMB

It is difficult to comprehend the amount of personal devastation that was experienced by our ancestors who lived during the Civil War. Few, if any, of the traditional resources that widows could turn to were available to them. Extended family and local churches and community groups had themselves been devastated or stretched beyond all ability to be effective. Similar to the generation of Americans who lived during the Great Depression, the survivors would have a fundamentally different view about life than their successors, and our nation would be forever altered by the shared experience of that generation of people.

It is, however, this period of time in Macomb County, Michigan, that permanently sealed the connections between our five ancestral families who survived the war together -- the Scribners, Steeles, Hetslers, Nortons and Jeans. Charles Scribner's death in 1864 left Minerva alone with two young sons to raise: Charles William Scribner and Thomas Jefferson Scribner. Unfortunately, the grandparents could be of little assistance. Charles William Scribner's parents had both predeceased him, and as between Minerva's parents, only Minerva's mother remained alive (and was herself a widow). Even Minerva's older brother was beyond helping -- having a serious war wound of his own to contend with. To compound the difficulty, all three of the eldest Scribner sons died during the Civil War: John died in 1862, Charles in 1864, and Enoch sometime before 1866. The only known remaining immediate family that Charles had in the Macomb County area at the time of his death were his younger sister Sarah Stapleton and his younger brothers Thomas P. Scribner and Samuel B. Scribner. But, Thomas had his hands *very full* - he was the only surviving male in a family that had begun the decade with five sons.

John C. Scribner had married Françoise Léonide Jean, and his next older brother Enoch had married Sarah Jean (no relationship between Sarah and Françoise is known to exist). So, if Minerva were going to find help, she would have to look to the Scribner in-laws -- Charles Scribner's sisters-in-law Françoise and Sarah. and the families of Charles' surviving siblings.

Thomas P. Scribner had married Catherine Steele, a sister of Peter Steele, so the Steele family would have been among Minerva's circle of close family. Also, Richard Steele's sister, Maria Elizabeth Steele lived in the area with her husband, Hugh Norton, and their family. Among the Norton children were Catherine Norton, a first cousin to the Steele family, who had married Robert Jean -- brother to Françoise Léonide Jean [Minerva's sister-in-law].

Robert Jean's sister Françoise Léonide was an Aunt to Charles Scribner's children. Her brother Robert agreed to assist Minerva and her two young sons following Charles' death. The children's application for a civil war pension was filed by Robert Jean, who was appointed as their Guardian by a probate judge on December 26, 1865. That civil war minor's pension was allowed, along with a pension for Minerva herself as widow.

Even with the pension income, Minerva had to struggle. It is quite understandable, therefore, that at the conclusion of the Civil War, Minerva remarried. Her second husband was another Civil War veteran – Peter Aaron Steele – brother to Catherine Steele who had married Thomas P. Scribner, Minerva's brother-in-law. On January 25, 1866 at her mother Mary's home in Utica, Macomb County, Michigan, Minerva married Peter Steele. Peter had been born between 1841-1842 in Ray Township, Macomb County, Michigan, and was the son of Richard J. Steele and Alvina Harrington.

Peter Steele had himself served in the Civil War, in Co. G, 5th Regiment, Michigan Infantry, and was a wounded veteran. His outfit fought at Gettysburg and other important battles, and was honored by being in the firing line at Appomattox Courthouse when General Robert E. Lee surrendered to General Ulysses S. Grant, ending the war. Both bride and groom were 24 years old and residents of Lynn, St. Clair County, Michigan at the time of

marriage. Peter & Minerva lived for a short time in St. Clair County, and then moved to Bay County where they lived out most of the remainder of their lives. They had seven children, only 3 of whom lived to adulthood.

After Peter (in fulfillment of a threat) took young Clinton to Oregon by train, we d not know what became of Minerva, except that she died August 9, 1890. (Although the State of Michigan cannot locate her death record, she was last known to have lived in the vicinity of Bay City, Michigan.) Her son William was a resident of Bay City, Michigan in August 1890; her son Jefferson had moved back to Sterling Township, Macomb County. Minerva is not likely to have moved very far from either of them, so the Lake Counties of Michigan are likely the vicinity of her death and burial. The circumstances and place of her death remain a family mystery. Her death date is only k nown because it is mentioned in Peter Steele's probate papers from Clackamas County, Oregon.

Our Steele family and its connection to the Scribners and -- possibly even earlier -- to the Mohawk Valley Widrig family -- is discussed in depth below in Section 5, Part 1.

Part 7: Our CARLL Family History

The parents of Charles William Scribner, Sr. were Aaron Scribner and Rhoda J. Carll. Rhoda was the youngest of eleven children[12] born to John and Mary (*nee* Morrell) Carll. John and Mary were both born in Maine -- John on 6 September 1759 in Scarborough, Cumberland County, Maine, and Mary on 17 August 1758 in North Berwick, York County, Maine.

John Carll and Mary Morrell both grew up during the founding years of our country. John's Revolutionary War service is documented in an Abstract of Mary's Widow's Pension application, John served for 1 year in June of 1781 under Captain Pike, and served also in Capt. Ephraim Smith's Company of Colonel Calvin Smith's Regiment [6th Regiment], Massachusetts line. He left the service in April 1782 having provided a substitute named Crowley. He served a total of 9 months, including during the winter of 1781-82 in which he had smallpox at Nine Boston Iiuts, near West Point, NY (on the opposite side of the river).

Although John hailed originally from Scarborough, he must have come to York County immediately following his service, where Mary was living in North Berwick. He married Mary shortly after his discharge in nearby Waterborough, York County, on 5 July 1782. John and Mary chose to make their home in Waterborough, and as such were among the earliest families to settle in Waterborough. The second village established in Waterborough [after "Waterborough Old Corner"] was "Carle's Corner" [now Waterborough Center], which took its name from

12 John and Mary Carll were also the parents of Simeon Carle, husband of one of Aaron Scribner's first cousins, Betty Swett, daughter of Josiah and Sarah (Scribner) Swett.

our John Carll [the name is alternately spelled "Carle"], and due to the many related residents with the same surname who settled in the area. John Carll, the first settler was elected Hayward and Fence Viewer at the First Town Meeting. His son, Peter, built the first Tavern [known as the "Old Tavern House"] which was located directly in front of the house built by James Leavitt in 1850. The town continued to prosper and grow in the early years of the 1800's due largely to logging, farming and the local sawmills.

John and Mary raised all of their children and lived most of their entre adult lives in Waterborough. John died in Waterborough 20 September 1833. After John's death, Mary traveled with her youngest daughter and her husband -- Aaron and Rhoda Scribner -- first to Oneida County, New York [likely following Enoch Morrell, see below], and thereafter to Lake County, Ohio, where she died at Rhoda's home in the town of Painesville, (just to the north of Cleveland) on 14 December 1841[13] Mary was buried beside her husband in Buxton, Maine at the Tory Hill Cemetery [also known as Buxton Lower Corner Cemetery], in the lot of her son, Thomas Carl.

John Carll was the son of Samuel Carll, Jr. and his wife Esther Burbank. Samuel was born in Dover, Strafford County, New Hampshire on February 9, 1709/10[14] but resided and raised his children in Scarborough, Cumberland County, Maine. When the American Revolutionary War broke out, Samuel was a senior citizen; nevertheless, Samuel still enlisted in Capt. Benjamin Hooper's Company, and marched on January 23, 1776. He also served as a Private in Capt. Silas Burbank's Company in Col. Samuel Brewer's 120 Mass. Regiment.[15]

Samuel Carll, Jr. was the son of Samuel Carll, Sr. and his wife Patience Evans. Patience had earlier been married to a Mr. Donnell, and was a widow when she married Samuel in Dover in 1678. Both Samuel and Patience had been born in Dover. Samuel's father, Timothy Carll, was a sailor from Dover who in 1734 sold his town grant. This is the Timothy Carll or Carle discussed at length in Section 1, Part 6, above who is theorized to have been the brother of Phillip Cartee. In any event, that Timothy was descended from Richard Carll.

Thus, our Carll family members were among the earliest to arrive in New England. Richard Carle -- born in Dartmouth, Devonshire, England in 1600, came from England to the Boston area before 1623. He was certainly one of the first permanent settlers in Maine, because as was documented in Part 1, Section 6, he traveled up the coast with Sir Ferdinand Gorgas in 1639 and then settled near what became Kittery, York County, Maine.

Part 8: Our MORRELL Family History & Our New England Quakers

Rhoda Carll's parents were John Carll and Mary Morrell. We have the great fortune to be in possession of a copy of Mary's own family bible, which was included with her Revolutionary War pension application, a copy of which was obtained directly from the U.S. National Archives by the author. That bible establishes Mary's parents names and birth and death dates [as well as birth dates for all of her children and several or her grandchildren]. Mary was the daughter of Thomas Morrell -- born 2 March 1732/33 in North Berwick, York County, Maine -- and Abigail Johnson -- born 31 January 1736 in Hampton Falls, Rockingham County, New Hampshire.

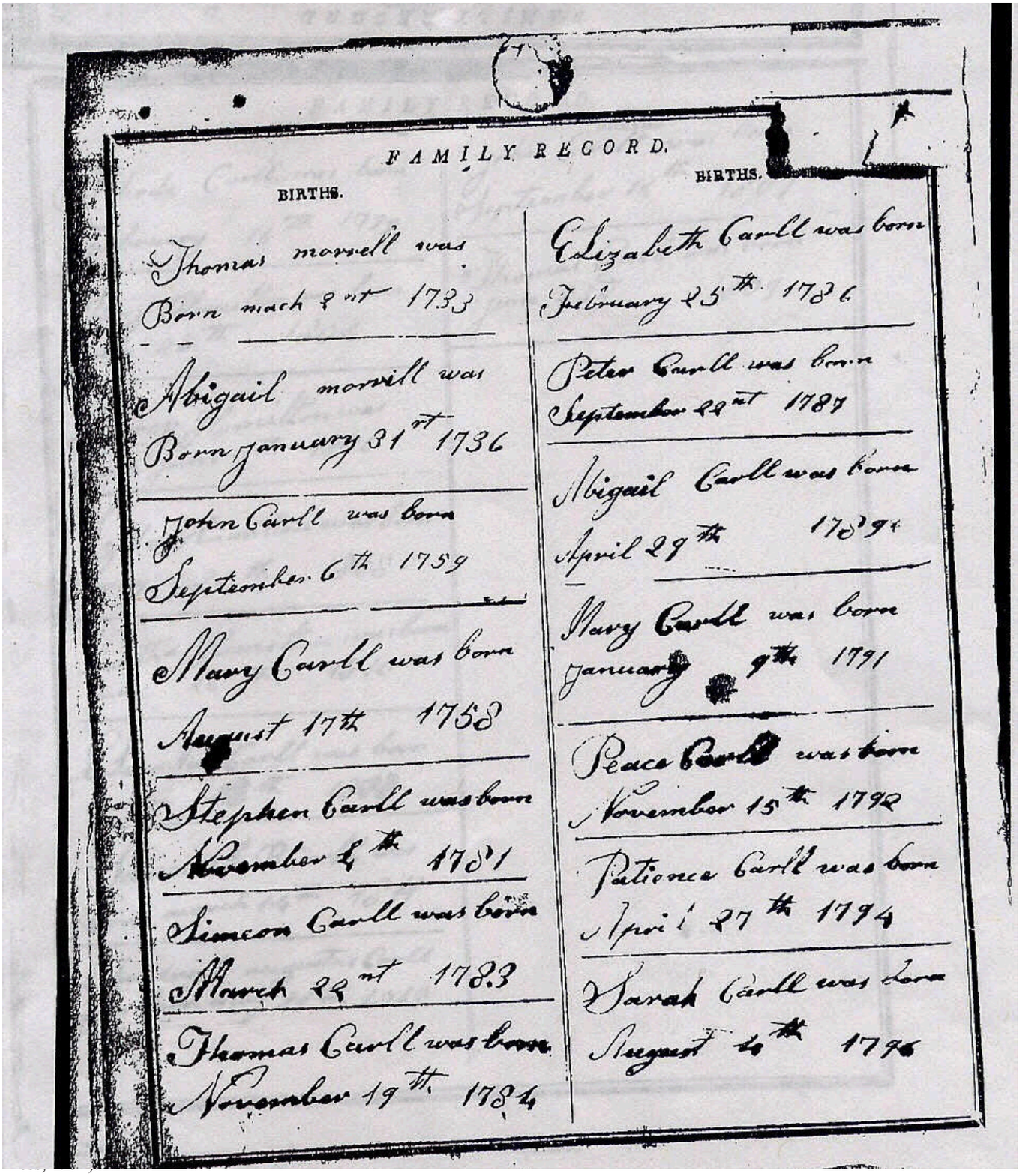
Our ancestor Rev. Thomas Morrell had a younger sister named Sarah, who like all of her siblings was born in North Berwick, York County, Maine. Sarah was born 23 March 1735/36; her young life came to a sudden halt

13 WATERBOROUGH [ME] VITAL RECORDS, Vol. 1, 1787-1825 [Maine State Archives Microfilm Roll 611], 38)

14 One source states that Samuel was born in Northern Ireland: STATE OF MAINE; 1600-1850;; p #2161; "1710-15, in the north of Ireland." However, we rely on the more likely iteration of his birth contained in the Dover Historical Society, COLLECTIONS OF THE DOVER, N.H. HISTORICAL SOCIETY; 1693-1838; Vol 1, Scales & Quimby, Dover, New Hampshire, 1894; p #35. This is similarly cited in Roscoe Carle, GENEALOGY OF THE CARLE FAMILY AND MARRIAGE CONNECTIONS;1600-1850; Times Press, Fostoria, Ohio, 1933; p #3.

15 STATE OF MAINE; 1600-1850;; p #2161.

Page 1 of Mary's [Morrell] Carll's Family Bible; included with her Revolutionary War Widow's Pension File; Obtained from the U.S. National Archives, Washington, D.C.



FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.

Thomas morrell was
Born march 8vt 1733

Abigail morrill was
Born January 31st 1736

John Carll was born
September 6th 1759

Mary Carll was born
August 17th 1758

Stephen Carll was born
November 4th 1781

Simeon Carll was born
March 22nt 1783

Thomas Carll was born
November 19th 1784

BIRTHS.

Elizabeth Carll was born
February 25th 1786

Peter Carll was born
September 22nt 1787

Abigail Carll was born
April 29th 1789

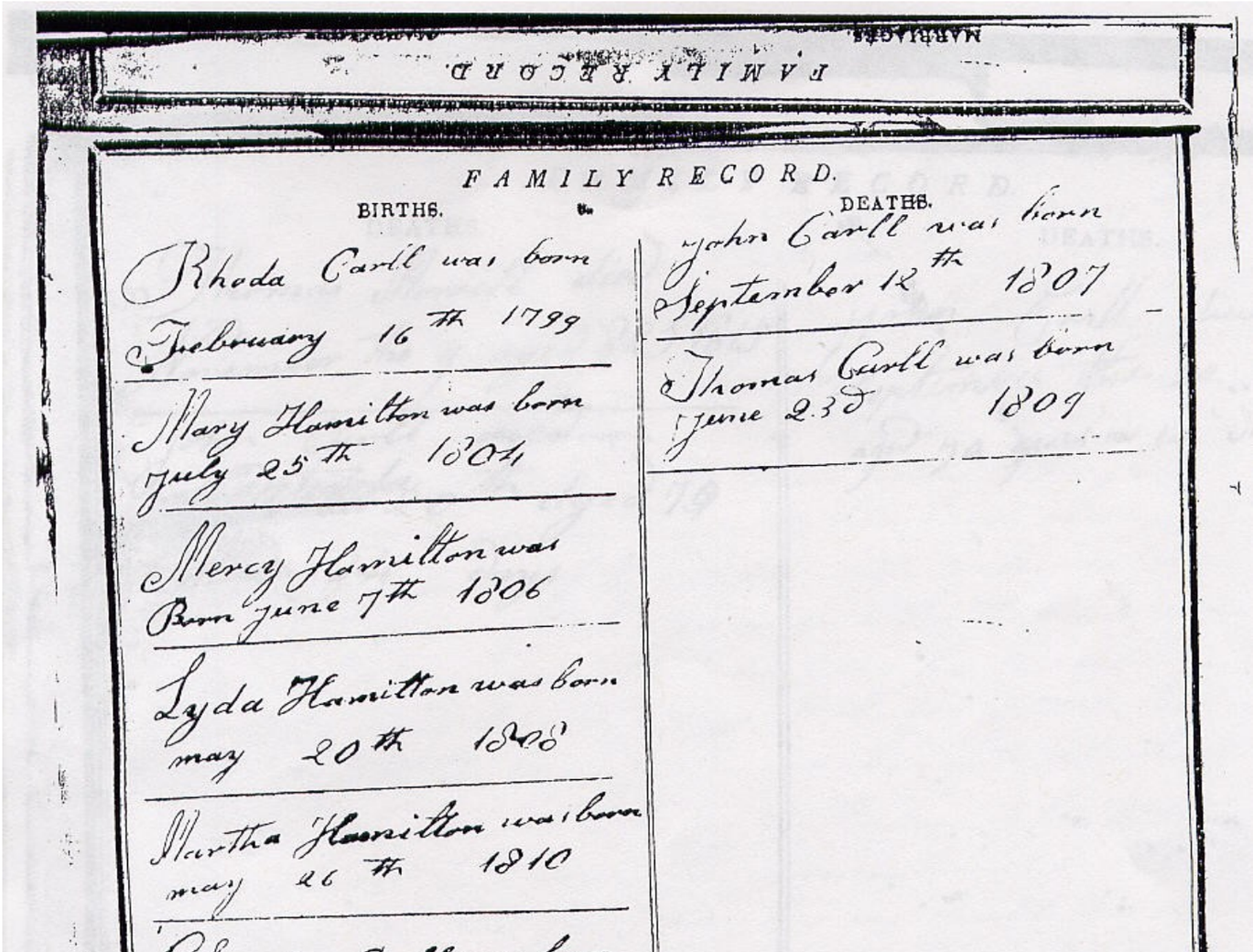
Mary Carll was born
January 9th 1791

Peace Carll was born
November 15th 1792

Patience Carll was born
April 27th 1794

Sarah Carll was born
August 4th 1796

Page 2 of Mary's [Morrell] Carll's Family Bible



FAMILY RECORD.

BIRTHS.

Rhoda Carll was born February 16th 1799

Mary Hamilton was born July 25th 1804

Mercy Hamilton was Born June 7th 1806

Lyda Hamilton was born may 20th 1808

Martha Hamilton was born may 26th 1810

Elizabeth Carll was born march 10th 1808

Samuel B Carll was born march 14th 1811

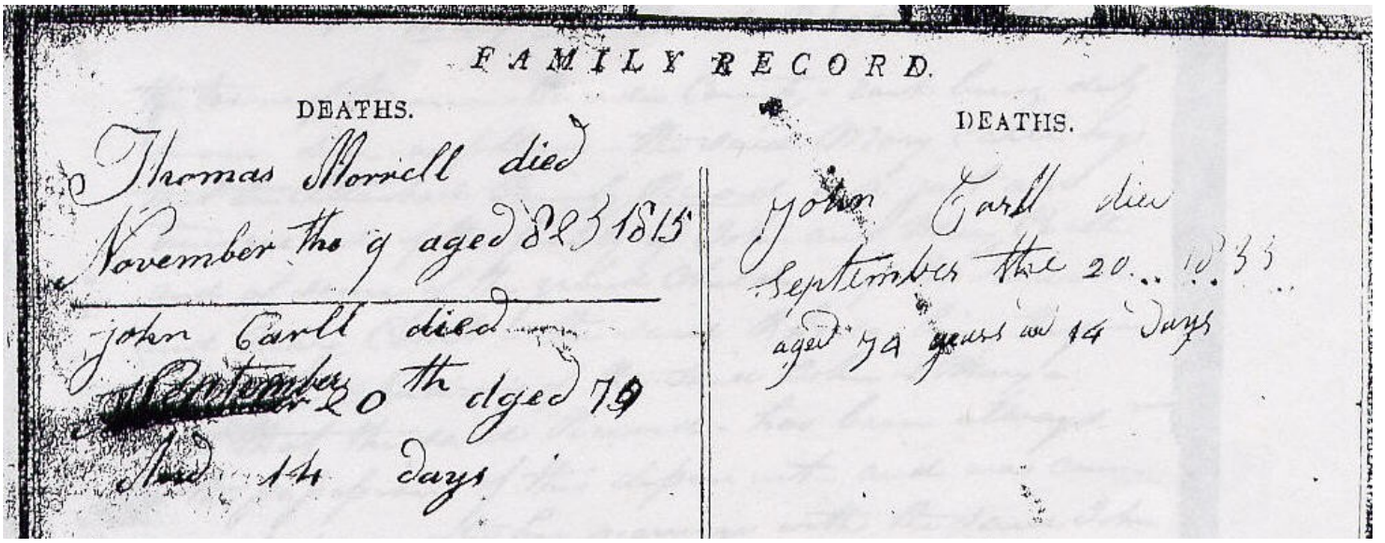
Fredrick augustus Carll was born may 21th 1813

DEATHS.

John Carll was born September 12th 1807

Thomas Carll was born June 23d 1809

Page 3 of Mary's [Morrell] Carll's Family Bible


FAMILY RECORD.

DEATHS.

Thomas Morrell died November the 9 aged 82 1815

John Carll died September the 20th aged 79 and 14 days

DEATHS.

John Carll died September the 20... 1835 aged 79 years and 14 Days

on 9 May 1748 when, within the limits of North Berwick Village, she was killed and scalped by Indians.

The ancestors of Thomas Morrell were devout Quakers for generations. As such, they were among a small and tightly-knit New England community who often intermarried. It is this Quaker tradition which, no doubt, is responsible for our great fortune in being able to track so many details of this line all the way back to immigration; since Quakers, by strong principal, believed it was very important to educate their children. Thus, at a time when most people could only make a mark to sign their names, these Quaker ancestors and their children could both read and write. For that reason, we are left with substantial written evidence of their lives. We have been able to trace the lines of Thomas Morrell's ancestors back through early New England without many difficulties, and in many cases to the earliest immigrant.[16] As a rule, those families were English. This fact alone makes their emigration easily understood, given the history of persecution of Quakers [or those of similar beliefs] in England.

Thomas was the son of Peter Morrell and Sarah Peaslee, a prominent and devout Quaker family within the Berwick Community [e.g., the Friends Church of Berwick, Maine]. According to the *Boston Transcript* Peter Morrell "lived at North Berwick where he was prominent in all town affairs. The cellar of his house on the North Berwick-Bauneg-beg road, a short distance from his father's homestead is still in use, although the original house burned. He was a member of Captain John Hill's Company of Militia in October, 1740.[17] Peter died Nov 11, 1801 aged 92 years."

Peter lived ot his life near the home of his parents -- John Morrell and Hannah [*nee* Dixon]. John and Hannah lived a quiet Quaker life. According to the *Boston Transcript*: "John lived at what is now North Berwick, on land received by deed from his father. He first built a log cabin then a house which still stands (1936) and is occupied by lineal descendants. He owned two slaves who are buried on the place....His will probated 17 May 1718."[18]

16 Old Kittery, at page 205, outlines the records history for the Society of Friends: "The Friends of Kittery were in the earliest days of their history connected with the Society in Dover, and there the records of their families may be found. Later their families were recorded in the Society of Friends at North Berwick. No independent records of the Friends in Eliot have been discovered. Inquiries for them have been made in vain by many."

17 *Citing* Me. Historical Genealogical Recorder Vol. 1, Pp 203-4.

18 McCollister, E.M., THE DESCENDENTS OF JOHN MORRELL OF KITTERY, ME., Publication: *Boston Transcript*, July 1936-Sept 1938 [Specific Issue 10 July 1936]; Held by Maine Historical Society. The bound volume with many of the Morrell/Morrill entries from the *Boston Transcript* is titled Unpublished Papers of Morrell-Morrill Genealogy, Maine. Published by the Georgia

Old Kittery, Page 619 discusses John's father, John Morrell, Sr.: "John Morrell, born in 1640 as shown by a deposition, had a grant in 1668. He was a mason. In 1676, he settled at "Cold Harbor", in what is now Eliot. He married, before 1667, Sarah, dau. of Nicholas and Elizabeth (----) Hodsdon. Was living in 1720. Was licensed to keep a ferry and house of entertainment in 1686." He was further described in an edition of the *Boston Transcript*: "John Morrell built his first cabin on Birchen Brook on land which was his wife's dowry. He swapped it in 1676 for a place at Cold Harbor [now Elliot], which remained in the family line and name until 1926 when it was sold by Charles Morrell to one Robert Johnson who also is a lineal descendant of John Morrell. In 1930 the house burned. John Morrell and several generations of descendants manufactured brick; at least two generations ran the ferry; they fought the Indians. But they fought for defensive purposes only, for they were Quakers. They embraced Quakerism when it was the only sect persecuted by the Government. On April 30, 1690, John Morrell's house was one of the few garrisons of refuge left on the Maine coast. In 1720 he was again ordered to fortify; and in 1722 his son Nicholas, who had been deeded the property, was ordered to fortify again. Afther the Indian wars ended, the garrison was razed to make room for the mansion, which burned in 1930, soon after Johnson purchased it."

Very little is known for certain about the parents of John Morrell, Sr., except that the family emigrated from England with the party of Rev. Hooker; John's father died in Roxbury, Massachusetts. John's father is thought to have been the brother-in-law of a woman surnamed Vashti who produced a child named Ezekiel Morrill, of Roxbury; John's father and the brother-in-law were also believed to be siblings of Abraham and Isaac Morrill who were born in Hatfield-Broadoak, Essex County, England.[19] No record has been found of the birth of Abraham or Isaac, and the identity of their parents is also unknown.

What we know about Abraham and Isaac strongly suggests that John Morrell must have acquired his Quaker beliefs sometime after his family's arrival in America. The Quakers were fundamentally opposed to military force and service; and Abraham Morrill is listed in 1638 as a member of what is now known as the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company ("Ancient and Honorable" having been added to the name much later, of course). His brother Isaac joined in the same year, in the first year of the Company's existence. Abraham was apparently a trainer of new members in the art of war and defense.[20]

Abraham and his siblings were probably young men at the time they came to America. Most of Reverend Hooker's followers established a new town, unimaginatively called Newtowne, in Massachusetts. This town became what is now known as Cambridge, home of Harvard University. Lucius R. Paige in The History of Cambridge, Mass. shows a map of the town three years after it was established wherein Abraham Morrill's homestead was lot number 28. At the time, he was probably not married.

Abraham left Cambridge in about 1640 and went to Salisbury, which was at the time a new settlement on the northern coastline of Massachusetts north of the Merrimack River. There he received a lot in the first division of Salisbury. Abraham was primarily a blacksmith. However, in 1642, he and Henry Saywood were granted land to build a "corn mill" on the Pawow River; he also never gave up his farm, cattle, and horses. Abraham died in Roxbury while visiting his brother Isaac, June 20, 1662. He is buried alongside his brother in the "Old First Burying Place," Roxbury, Mass. His will is dated only two days before his death.

19 Annie Morrill Smith collected evidence that Vashti was married to an unknown brother of Abraham and Isaac, and had a son Ezekiel Morrell. Annie Morrill Smith, Morrill Kindred in America, Volume 2 (New York: Grafton Press, 1931), 386. Ethel Morrill McCollister cites this in the *Boston Transcript* to support her belief that John Morrell of Kittery was a nephew of the two brothers Abraham and Isaac Morrill, who had emigrated from Hatfield-Broadoak, England.

20 Today, the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company is an expensive fraternity focused on charitable giving. President John Kennedy was a prominent modern member. The Company has a small museum in Faneuil Hall in Boston.

From Henry D. Kingsbury and Simeon L. Deyo (eds.), ILLUSTRATED HISTORY OF KENNEBEC COUNTY MAINE 1625-1892, New York: H.W. Blake & Company [94 Reade St.], 1892, From Chapter "The City of Gardiner" - Personal Paragraphs [Arch Morrell]:

> John Morrell, the common ancestor of most of the Morrills and Morrells in Kennebec county, received from the town of Kittery two grants of land in 1668. These lands, together with a third adjacent grant, made in 1669, were bounded in part by Birch Point brook. Nicholas Hodgdon, whose lands were south of these, deeded in 1674, to John Morrell, who had married his daughter Sarah, seven acres of adjoining land, upon which Morrell had erected buildings and where he had then resided for some years. In 1676 John traded all of these lands with Abraham Conley (See York Deeds) for a farm at "Coole Harbor," and subsequently bought other tracts and became a large landed proprietor. His dates - birth, marriage and death - have not been preserved and our knowledge of his antecedents is purely negative. He may have been a son of Abraham Morrell, who came from England to Cambridge in 1632, but is not mentioned as such in Savage's Genealogical Dictionary of the Founders of New England. He may have come direct from England as did many of the early settlers of Kittery and Portsmouth. Whether he married Sarah Hodgdon before settling in Kittery is uncertain, but from the first he was prominent in its town affairs, often in town office and on the jury of inquest. He was a mason by trade, and in deeds of conveyance was variously called "bricklayer,", "mason" and "plasterer." Dr. William B. Lapham, of Augusta,' the genealogist and historian, records for him children: Nicholas, who married in 1695 Sarah Frye, of Kittery; Sarah, who married August 4, 1701, George Huntress; John; Edah, married April 27, 1702, Jonathan Nason; Hannah, who married John Tidy, and Abraham. (Abraham Morrell, called "blacksmith," was of Kittery in 1711, when his father deeded him three acres of land, and nothing later is known of him.)
>
> Of these, John Morrell was born in 1675, and married, December 16, 1701, Hannah, daughter of Peter Dixon, of Kittery, whence the name Peter first came into the family. He was a planter and owned large estates, including areas of Kittery Commons, now North Berwick. His will, dated 1756, was proved May 16, 1763, making his widow Hannah sole executrix. This will names as his children: John, born July 30, 1702; Peter, September 16, 1709; Jedediah, Keziah and Mary. His sons. Thomas, born August 20, 1705, and Richard, born September 23, 1713, are not mentioned in the will. His lands in Kittery and Berwick were bequeathed to his three sons, John, Peter and Jedediah, after providing for his widow and daughter. He bequeathed his negro Joe to his wife during her life time, then to the son whom Joe should select as his master. His negro Tobey was given his freedom after twenty-four years of age, but should serve the widow while she lived. These two slaves were buried side by side on the Morrell homestead at North Berwick.
>
> Peter Morrell, son of John, was father of the Sarah Morrell who was killed and scalped by Indians within the limits of North Berwick village.

THE PEASLEE FAMILY

The mother of Peter Morrell's children -- Sarah Peaslee -- was born 20 February 1708/09 in Hampton, Rockingham County, New Hampshire. Sarah was the daughter of John Peaslee and Mary Martin. John had been born in Haverhill, Essex County, Massachusetts on 25 February 1678/79, but relocated to Newton, New

Hampshire. The first "Friends meeting" in Newton was held in John Peaslee's home. He and his numerous family were all members of the Newton town meeting. He was a prominent man in town and church affairs and highly respected.[21]

John Peaslee was the son of Joseph Peaslee, Jr. and Ruth Barnard. Joseph[22] and Ruth were both born in Haverhill; he on 9 September 1646 and she on 16 October 1651. They married in nearby Amesbury on 21 January 1670/71 and Joseph became a physician. He built a house in East Haverhill in 1673 that has become a landmark of the Merrimac Valley.

Haverhill - Pentucket Cemetery
HERE LYES BURIED
the BODY OF RUTH
the WIFE OF JOSEPH
PEASLEE WHO DIED
NOVEMBER Ye 5th 1723
IN Ye 73 YEAR
OF HER AGE

The House, which is near "Rocks Bridge" spanning the Merrimac, used bricks brought from England. It consisted of two stories with a wing and was widely known as the "old garrison" or "Peaslee Garrison House." The building is today in a state of good repair, and is of great interest to antiquarians. The house has been cited in prose and poetry and was originally built by Dr. Peaslee as a refuge for women and children from the Indians; it was used as a garrison house in the French and Indian and King Philip's Wars.

In 1687 Joseph was chosen constable, having taken the oath of fidelity and allegiance in 1677. In 1692 he was granted the privilege of erecting a sawmill. The mill was built the next year and for one hundred and fifty years thereafter the mill remained in

the Peaslee name. He was a large landowner, by grants, inheritance and purchase. He was noted as a physician, was selectman of Haverhill, 1689-1690 and 1696, and in 1721 was again chosen constable.

In 1699, the town had refused to allow the Quakers to use the meeting house. Dr. Peaslee offered his house for the meetings, and after the first Quaker meetings in that part of the country were held at his house, Dr. Peaslee himself converted to Quakerism and joined the meeting he was hosting. Joseph and Ruth both died in Haverhill; Ruth died on 5 November 1723, and is buried in the Haverhill-Pentucket Cemetery; Joseph died later on 21 March 1734/35.

Dr. Joseph Peaslee was actually Joseph Peaslee, Jr. -- the only son of Joseph Peaslee, Sr. and his wife Mary Johnson. [The couple also bore at least five daughters.] Joseph Peaslee, Sr. [or Peasley] was born abt. 1605 in Gloucestershire England, near the Wales border, and died Dec 03, 1660 in Salisbury, Massachusetts. He married Mary Johnson, daughter of John Johnson, a well-to-do farmer who lived near the river Severn, in the western part of England, near the Wales line. Joseph came from England in 1638 and first settled in Newbury MA.[23] The first mention of Joseph in the records of New England is in Newbury in 1641; he took the freemen's oath, June 22, 1642. He was granted land in Haverhill March 14, 1645, which made him one of the 32 original landowners in Haverhill; he also received subsequent allotments up to 1656. He was a farmer, eminently respectable, of strong character, a self-educated physician, and often mentioned in old records as "preacher and gifted brother." His descendant, the poet Whittier, speaks of his as the "brave confessor." He was a commissioner of claims and selectman of Haverhill. 1649-53.

He thereafter removed from Haverhill to East Salisbury, Massachusetts, to the part called "Newtown" -- now Amesbury. He was made a "townsman" there July 17, 1656, and granted land. Later grants were made in 1657 and 1658.

Like his son, Joseph, Sr. did not see eye-to-eye with the inflexible Puritanism of his time. While he was residing in East Salisbury, he fell out of favor with the established church and moved out of its jurisdiction to west of the Powow river in what is known as Amesbury Mills. He continued to have problems with the East Salisbury church which extended its jurisdiction, forcing Joseph and others to move farther west -- essentially making a permanent settlement in Haverhill in that part which was not in Massachusetts before the state line was established in1741. Joseph Peaslee's dissent has been well documented:

> The inhabitants of 'Newtown' neglected to attend church worship in the 'Old Town' and failed to contribute to the support of the minister. They held meetings for worship in private houses, and having no minister, Joseph Peaslee and Thomas Macy officiated as such; this soon coming to the notice of the general

23 Edmund Johnson, born in 1612 in England came at about the same time as Joseph Peaslee, and was from a family closely-connected to the wealthy English farmer who was Mary's father

court, who decreed that all the inhabitants of 'New Town' should attend church in 'Old Town' and also contribute to the support of the minister. All who did not obey were to be fined five shillings unless they had a reasonable excuse. Under the leadership of Peaslee and Macy the people did not heed the 'decree' of the general court, nor did the leaders cease preaching although a special fine of five shilling was to be imposed on them for each offense. In 1658 the general court ordered Joseph Peaslee and Thomas Macy to appear before the next term of said court to answer for their disobedience. This mandate was also unheeded, and Joseph Peaslee continued to preach, with the result that he was fined five shillings per week. While there is no evidence to show that Joseph Peaslee [Sr.] joined the Society of Friends, his friend, Thomas Macy, was prosecuted and fined for allowing four of that sect to take shelter in his house one rainy day for three-quarters of an hour. There was no society of 'Friends' organized in New England prior to his death, the early comers being cruelly persecuted and sent back to England. Joseph was opposed to the Puritan church in his religious convictions, hence, his disregard of the orders from the court to conform to the state church.[24]

The Peaslee's beliefs were more in line with the Quakers of his time, and he continued to be prohibited by the Pu-

24 Source: Pelletreau, William S., A.M., GENEALOGICAL AND FAMILY HISTORY OF NEW YORK, Vol. 1, (New York, Clearfield Company, Inc: 1907; Reprinted Baltimore, MD: Genealogical Publishing Company, 1998; Included in: Family History: Early New York Families, 1600s-1900s; Available Online at Genealogy.com), 262-263.

ritans from openly practicing them. Joseph, Sr. died in Salisbury on 5 December 1660; Mary lived to the ripe old age of 90, and perished in Haverhill on 27 September 1694.

Before Dr. Joseph Peaslee became a Quaker, his family were Puritans, but dissidents. I suspect that this may have been the case for many of our Quaker ancestors who emigrated before the preaching of George Fox -- the founder of the Quaker movement.

We know, for example, that Peter Morrell was the son of John Morrell, Sr. and Hannah Dixon, and that Peter Morrell was the son of John Morrell and his wife Sarah Hodsdon, daughter of Nicholas Hodsdon. Nicholas Hodsdon was an early settler at Hingham, Plymouth, Massachusetts, arriving during or shortly after the Great Migration. Given the genesis of Hingham as an early Puritan Colony closely associated with the Pilgrim Separatists from Scrooby under the leadership of Rev. Peck, the tendency of the Hingham colonists to adopt fundamentalist beliefs outside the purview of acceptable Episcopal Doctrine had been established.

The Quaker Movement was established by George Fox in 1647. The first Quaker missionaries arrived on America's shores in 1656. Mary Fisher and Ann Austin landed at Boston where the Puritan authorities had them seized and kept under close guard. A hundred of their books were burned in the marketplace and they were dispatched to Barbados on the next departing ship. Their bedding and even their Bibles were confiscated to pay the jailer's fee.

In 1657, a boatload of Quaker missionaries who sailed aboard *the Woodhouse* from England [along with George Fox] landed on Long Island. This group included Robert Hodgson, who drew large crowds to his meetings. Hodgson was arrested, imprisoned, flogged and treated very severely. At last some of the Dutch colonists interceded on his behalf and secured his unconditional release. Many continued to respond to the Friends message in spite of a firm edict issued against it by Governor Peter Stuyvesant. Finally on December 27, 1657, the citizens of Flushing drew up a magnificently worded protest reminding their Governor that their charter allowed them "to have and enjoy Liberty of Conscience according to the Custome and manner of Holland, without molestation or disturbance." This came to be known as the Flushing Remonstrance. It was the first time that a group of settlers in the New World petitioned the government for religious freedom.

Meanwhile the persecution of Friends in Puritan Massachusetts grew more intense. Friends were lashed behind carts and whipped from town to town. They were branded with a "H" for heretic; they had their tongues bored through with a hot iron; their ears were cut off; they were banished. Finally Governor John Endicott succeeded in having the death penalty invoked for any Friends who returned to the colony after being banished beyond its borders. Four Quakers were hung on Boston Common--William Robinson, Marmaduke Stephenson, William Leddra and Mary Dyer. She was the first woman to suffer death on these shores for her religious convictions. Today a statue of her stands on Boston Common, a reminder to all that our religious freedom was bought at a precious price.

In 1671, George Fox along with twelve others came to America and trekked up and down the Atlantic Seaboard. In 1672, he and a William Edmondson, who had already preached successfully in Ireland, became the first preachers who ever held any kind of Christian worship within the borders of the Carolinas. Later, John Archdale would become the Quaker Governor of the Carolinas and one-half of the representatives of the legislature were Friends.

Friends were welcomed in Rhode Island which was founded as a haven from the intolerance of Puritan Massachusetts. So overwhelming was the response there that at one time half of the population were Friends, and the colony elected Quaker governors for thirty-six consecutive terms--more than a century. Friends were also well re-

A spinning wheel and a cradle: Items reportedly belonging to Susanna (North) Martin On Display at the Macy/Colby House, Amesbury, MA

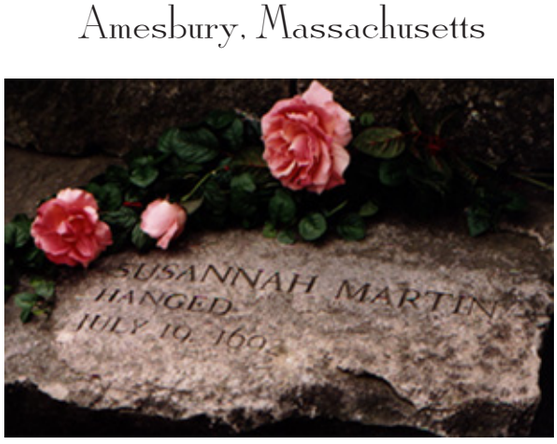
ceived in Maryland. Lord Baltimore established the colony as a refuge for persecuted English Catholics and was willing to give liberty of conscience to others in religious matters. Spokespersons for the Quaker faith made some deep inroads into Virginia as well.

Nevertheless, Joseph married Ruth Barnhard -- member of a known Quaker family, and the niece of one of Christopher Hussey's original Nantucket purchase partners. Because Quakers were not allowed to meet openly during the early years of New England settlement, it is understandable that most of the families who shared Quaker beliefs would seek out a residence where others shared their views. The focal point of most of these early Quaker families was Amesbury, and it is no surprise that many of our early Quaker ancestors of the Morrell line were among the first settlers of Amesbury, including Thomas Barnard, George Martin, and John Weed.

THE MARTIN FAMILY

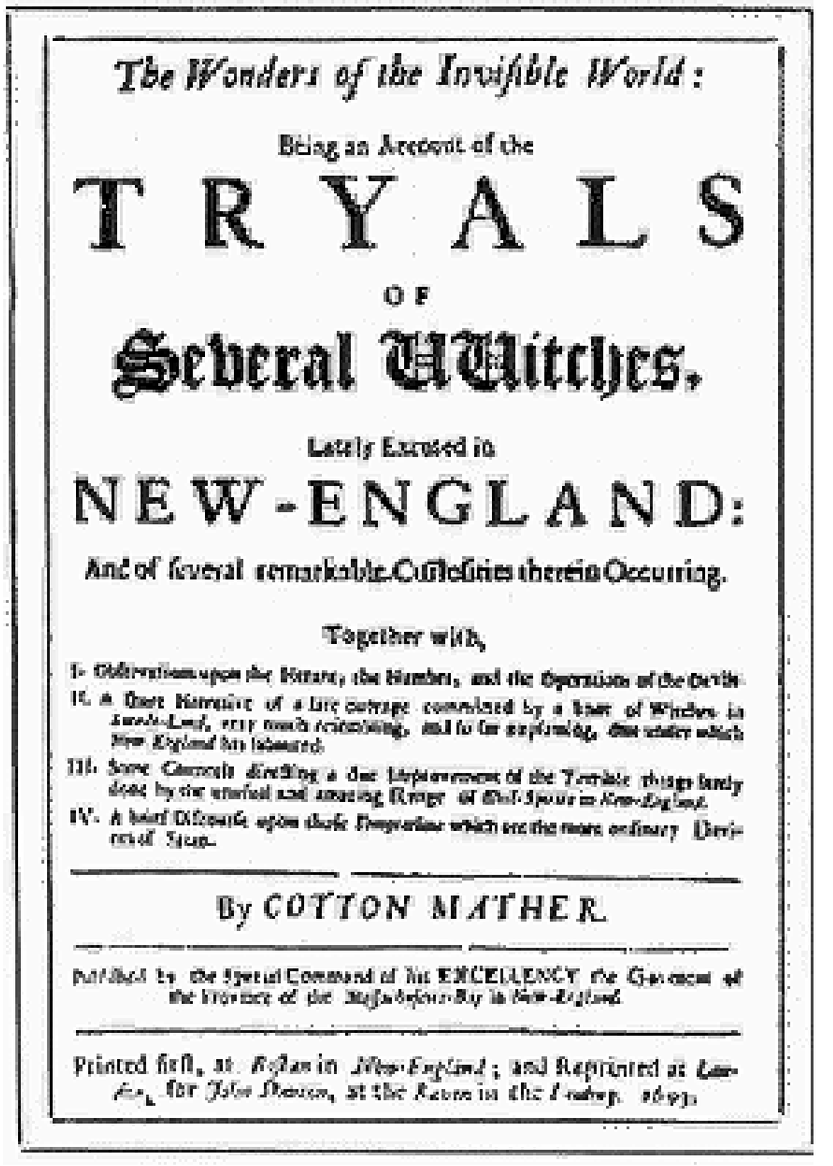
John Peaslee's wife Mary Martin was the daughter of John Martin and Mary Wood; John was born 26 January 649/50 in Salem, Essex County, Massachusetts, and was the son of George Martin and Susannah North. George Martin, along with John Weed, and Thomas Barnhard, [discussed below] are all among the recorded first settlers of Amesbury, Massachusetts. Our Martin lineage presents our family with yet another direct connection to the tragedy of Witch prosecutions in early Salem. Susannah North Martin, after the death of her husband, George Martin, was arrested for witchcraft April 30, 1692, tried at Salem, June 29, and executed, July 19, 1692.[25]

Susanna Martin Memorial, Amesbury, Massachusetts



25 Source: Pelletreau, William S., A.M., GENEALOGICAL AND FAMILY HISTORY OF NEW YORK, Vol. 1, (New York, Clearfield Company, Inc: 1907; Reprinted Baltimore, MD: Genealogical Publishing Company, 1998; Included in: Family History: Early New York Families, 1600s-1900s; Available Online at Genealogy.com), 264. A literary account of the grief and suffering of her daughter is told by Whittier in his poem "The Witch's Daughter." A full account of this trial is found in "Merrill's History of Amesbury."

George Martin was born about 1618 in Ramsey, Hampshire, England. He first emigrated to New England in 1639 as the indentured servant of Samuel Winsley [discussed below], one of the original grantees for Colchester. George Martin was a blacksmith by trade, and was the first immigrant of the name who came to Americal from England. He was, according to the records, a leading element in all town & church public affairs, holding important offices & engaged in various land trades; A full account of him is given in the records of Salisbury. A possible clue to George Martins' origin is found in Charles Edward Banks posthumous Topographical Dicitonary of 2885 English Emigrants to New England, pg: 156 which derives Samuel Winsley from Knodishall, Co,. Suffolk, England.



The Wonders of the Invisible World:

Being an Account of the

TRYALS

OF

Several Witches,

Lately Executed in

NEW-ENGLAND:

And of several remarkable Curiosities therein Occurring.

Together with,

I. Observations upon the Nature, the Number, and the Operations of the Devils.

II. A short Narrative of a late outrage committed by a knot of Witches in Sweden-Land, very much resembling, and to be explained, that under which New England has laboured.

III. Some Councils directing a due Improvement of the Terrible things lately done by the unusual and amazing Range of Evil Spirits in New-England.

IV. A brief Discourse upon those Temptations which are the more ordinary Divertisements of Satan.

By COTTON MATHER.

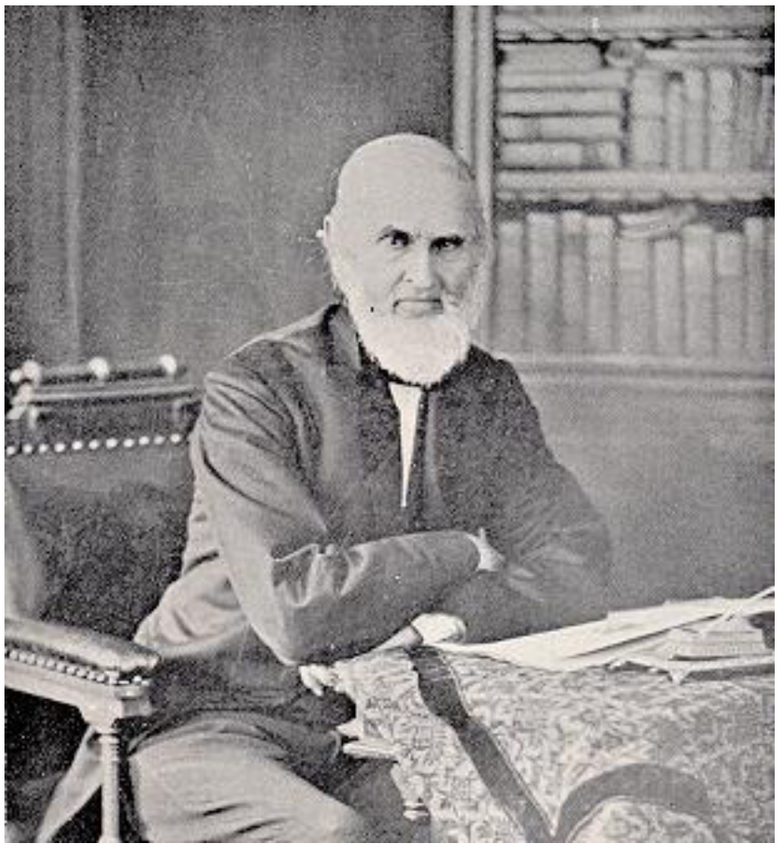
Published by the Special Command of his EXCELLENCY the Governour of the Province of the Massachusetts-Bay in New-England.

Printed first, at Boston in New-England; and Reprinted at London, for John Dunton, at the Raven in the Poultrey. 1693.

George Martin married twice; he first married Hannah [surname not established, but some sources assert that it was Green]. by whom he had one daughter named Hannah. His wife soon thereafter perished, and George remarried to Susannah North. Susanna was baptized in Olney, Buckinghamshire, England September 30, 1621. She was the daughter of Richard and Joan (Bartram) North. While she was still young her mother died. She came to America with her father, stepmother, and at least one sister. She married George Martin, a blacksmith, August 11, 1646 at Salisbury, MA and had eight children. During the first 23 years of her marriage, Susanna's name appears twice in public records. In 1647 or 48 she was fined 20 shillings for an unnamed offense and in 1667 her husband George objected to her seat placement in the meeting house. Perhaps he felt it was below her station.

In 1669 Susanna was required to post 100 pounds bond to appear in court on a charge of witchcraft, a capital offense. At the same time George Martin sued William Sargent, Jr. for slander for saying that "...said Martyn's wife had a child at Capt. Wiggins and was wringing its neck in Capt. Wiggins' stable, when a man entered, and she took him by the collar and told him she would be the death of him if he told"; he sued William Sargent "...for saying his wife was a witch and he would call her a witch." George also sued Thomas Sargent "...for saying that his son George Marttin was a bastard and that Richard Marttin was Goodwife Marttin's imp," (a witch's familiar.)

Charges were dropped against Thomas Sargent, William Sargent, Jr.. was found guilty of accusing Susanna of " fornication and infanticide" and George was awarded (in what appears to be a public insult) the amount of



John Greenleaf Whittier

"a white wampam peague (colonial currency) or the eighth part of a penny damage" by the magistrates. William Sargent (Sr?) was acquitted of witchcraft slander, although, "the Court did not agree." The records of Susanna's first trial for witchcraft have not survived, but as she was around for another 23 years, we might assume that she was acquitted.

In October, 1669 George Martin was sued by Christopher Bartlett because Susanna had called him a liar and a thief. The verdict was against George and Susanna but they had other problems to deal with. At that same court session, their son Richard was " presented by the grand jury at the Salisbury Court, 1669, for abusing his father and throwing him down, taking away his clothes and holding up an axe against him." The court found him guilty and sentenced Richard to be "whipped ten stripes."

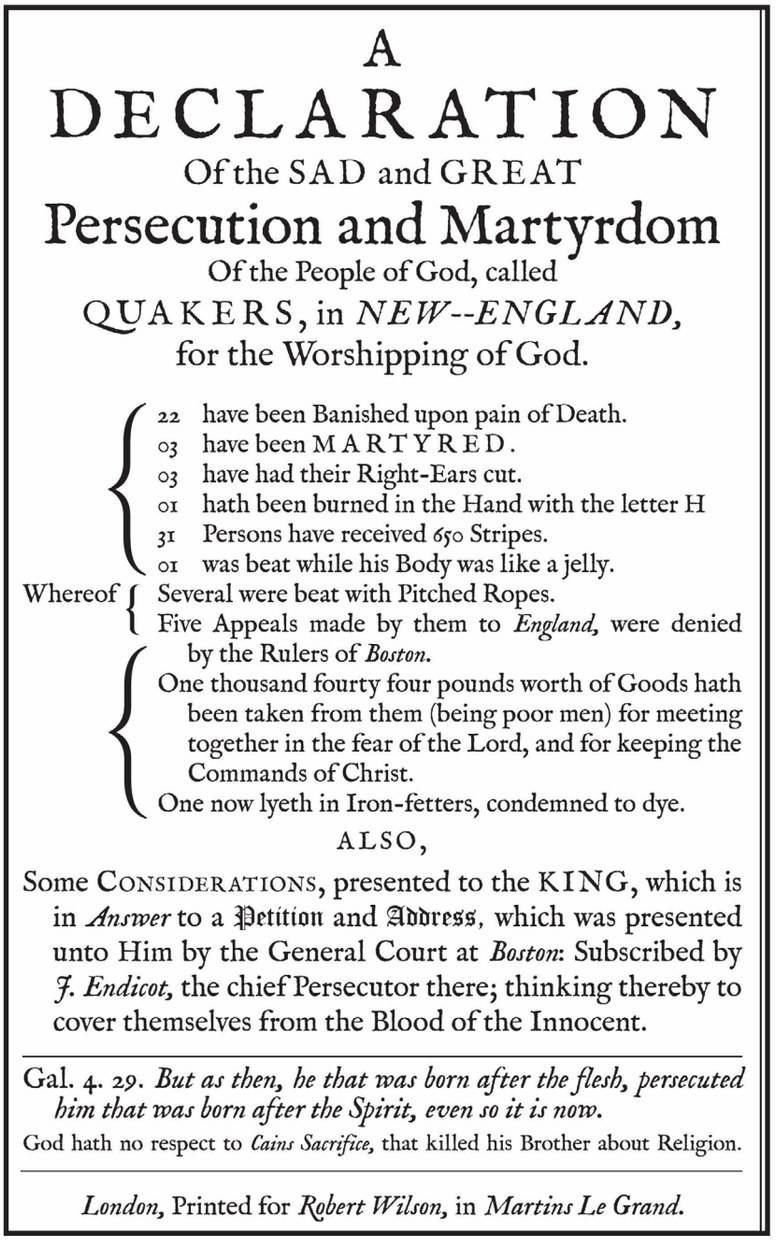
In 1671, George and Susanna (her sister Mary Jones would join them later) became involved in lengthy litigation over Richard North's estate. In October 1674, their inheritance would be lost when the court found against them. Descriptions of Susanna say that she was short, slightly plump, active, and "of remarkable personal neatness." She was also said to be very outspoken, contemptuous of authority, and defiant in the face of slander which had followed her for years.

The Rev. Cotton Mather said about Susanna, "This woman was one of the most impudent, scurrilous, wicked creatures of this world; and she did now throughout her whole trial discover herself to be such a one. Yet when she was asked what she had to say for herself, her chief plea was that she had led a most virtuous and holy life." Mr. Merrill, in his History of Amesbury described Susanna differently-- "The idea of snatching this hardworking, honest woman from her home to be tried for her life by those who never knew her , and witnesses who were prejudiced against her....is almost too much for belief. ...Allowed no counsel, she was her own lawyer, and her answers are remarkable for independence and clearness. She showed herself to be a woman of more than ordinary talent and resolution."

On April 30, 1692 a warrant was issued for Susanna's arrest on a charge of witchcraft and she was arrested an May 2nd. "When she saw Orlando Bagley approaching on the morning of her arrest, little did she dream of his errand. He was a personal friend of long standing, and we can but faintly imagine her surprise when..." he read the warrant. During her preliminary examination that same day, she vigorously answered the charges against her. When the " afflicted girls" began having fits, she laughed out loud. When the magistrates asked why she laughed, she responded, "Well I may at such folly." She refused to express any thoughts on what may have ailed the girls but bluntly stated that she didn't think they were bewitched. Her further testimony show that she realized the seriousness of her situation and she adamantly maintained her innocence.

"The mental anguish and suffering of the two and a half months while she lay in Salem jail...is beyond our power of description." Susanna Martin underwent the indignity of a physical examination on June 2 1692. She examinations were intended to discover whether the accused had any physical abnormalities, especially anything that could be used to suckle a familiar or even the devil himself. Susanna was examined twice during the same day; at neither examination was any abnormality discovered, but at the first her breasts appeared to be full and at the second slack. Doubtless the magistrates found this apparent indication that she had actually suckled even more satisfactory than an abnormal "witch's teat."

On June 26, 1692 her trial began. Susanna pleaded not guilty, but in the end she was found guilty and condemned to death. On Tuesday, July 19, 1692 Susanna Martin, Sarah Good, Rebecca Nurse, Sarah Wilde, and Elizabeth Howe were taken from their cells, put into a cart and driven up the rocky road to Gallows Hill. While Rebecca Nurse prayed, Rev. Nicholas Noyes exhorted Sarah Good to confess saying, "You are a witch, and you know you are a witch." She replied, calling him a liar and saying that she was no more a witch than he was a wizard and...if you take away my life, God will give you blood to drink." Tradition says that Rev. Noyes died of an internal hemorrhage, bleeding profusely from the mouth.



A
DECLARATION
Of the SAD and GREAT
Persecution and Martyrdom
Of the People of God, called
QUAKERS, in *NEW--ENGLAND,*
for the Worshipping of God.

22 have been Banished upon pain of Death.
03 have been MARTYRED.
03 have had their Right-Ears cut.
01 hath been burned in the Hand with the letter H
31 Persons have received 650 Stripes.
01 was beat while his Body was like a jelly.

Whereof { Several were beat with Pitched Ropes.
Five Appeals made by them to *England,* were denied by the Rulers of *Boston.*

One thousand fourty four pounds worth of Goods hath been taken from them (being poor men) for meeting together in the fear of the Lord, and for keeping the Commands of Christ.

One now lyeth in Iron-fetters, condemned to dye.

ALSO,

Some CONSIDERATIONS, presented to the KING, which is in *Answer* to a Petition and Address, which was presented unto Him by the General Court at *Boston*: Subscribed by *J. Endicot,* the chief Persecutor there; thinking thereby to cover themselves from the Blood of the Innocent.

Gal. 4. 29. *But as then, he that was born after the flesh, persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.*

God hath no respect to *Cains Sacrifice,* that killed his Brother about Religion.

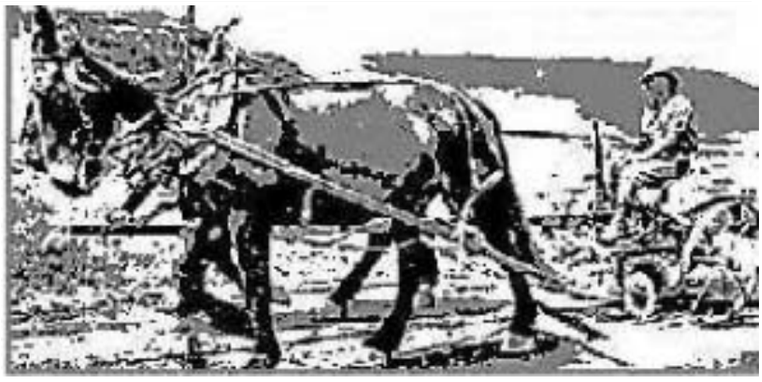
London, Printed for *Robert Wilson,* in *Martins Le Grand.*

"The bodies...were thrust into a shallow grave in a crevice of felsite." There is historical evidence that the body of at least one of these women, Rebecca Nurse, was secretly removed and given Christian burial; "this was the hour and the power of darkness when a son could not say where he had buried his mother."

In 1711, the General Court granted compensation to many of the victims or their heirs, but Susanna's children made no application to the authorities and they received nothing. Susanna was not among those whose attainder was lifted.

Let Goody Martin rest in peace, I never knew her harm a fly,
And witch or not - God knows - not I?
I know who swore her life away;

And as God lives, I'd not condemn
An Indian dog on word of them.
John Greenleaf Whittier[26]



THE WOOD/WEED & WINSLEY FAMILIES

John Martin's wife Mary Wood is actually a misspelling of "Weed;" her father was Lieutenant John Weed and her mother Deborah Winsley. Lieutenant John Weed, born about 1627, was a planter in Amesbury, Massachusetts., where he married, Nov. 14, 1650, Deborah, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Winsley of that town. No record appears to show his place or time of birth, or time of arrival in America. He was a commoner and taxed in Salisbury, Massachusetts in 1650, and received a grant of land there in 1654. He was among the original settlers of Amesbury in 1654-55, and received various grant there between 1654 and 1664, including a "township" for one of his sons in 1660. Both he and "Goodwife" Weed were assigned seats in the meeting house in 1677, and he subscribed to the oath of allegiance the same year, and to a petition in 1680. He died in Amesbury, March 15, 1689, and was survived six years by his widow, who passed away April 20, 1695.

Deborah (1635-1695) was the daughter of Samuel Winslow and Elizabeth Randall. Samuel Winsley [sometimes called "Wensley"] was born abt. 1597 in Colchester, County Essex, England. Samuel Winslow was one of the original Massachusetts Bay Colony grantees with Bradstreet, Dudley, and others. Samuel, listed as a planter and surveyor, settled in Colchester[27], Massachusetts by at least in 1638[28] and later became an early settler of Salisbury -- although not an original settler. He was accompanied by his wife Elizabeth, and child, Samuel [b. bef 1635].[29] He was made a freeman on 22 May 1639. He invented a mode of making salt, and in 1654 was listed as a "seller of strong waters".. He filed a patent for this method with the patent office recording; in 1641 he was granted a salt monopoly,[30] and sometime before 1642, he moved to Salisbury, where he lived until 02 Jun 1663. He represented Salisbury in the Geneal Court in 1642, 1645, and 1653, after having been s surveyor of the arms in September 1640. Samuel is believed to have married twice. He married Deborah's mother Elizabeth Randall on 06 Oct 1657; she died on 2 April 1649, and thereafter Samuel married Ann, the widow of Henry Boade of Wells. One record shows that Samuel later moved to Kingston, NH.

26 John Greenleaf Wittier, A Quaker And Famous Poet is actually the a great-grandson of Dr. Joseph Peaslee through his daughter Mary, who married Joseph Whittier.

27 Given the tradition of settlers naming colonies in Massachusetts by the name of their original homes in England, it is very conceivable that the Winslows emigrated to Massachusetts with others who hailed from Colchester, Essex County, England.

28 From the "Records of Massachusetts," on petition of "Mr. Bradstreete, Mr. Dudley Jr., Capt. Dennison, Mr. Clarke of Newbury, Mr. Woodbridge, Mr. Battye (Batt), Mr. Batter, Mr. Winsley, Hen: Bilye, Giles Firman, Richard Kent, and John Sanders," permission "to begin a plantation at Merrimack" was granted them, Sept. 6, 1638, with power to add to their number. The plantation was named "Colechester."

29 Source: "Early Settlers of Salisbury, Mass." in NEHG Register, Vol. 8, July 1854; New Hampshire Provincial Deeds 1702-1792, NEHG Register, Vol. 125, April 1972; and "Richard Avery and Some of His Descendants, NEHG Register, Vol. 96, Oct. 1932. The following is a copy of a paper found in the Massachusetts archives, Boston, without date, but indexed under 1639. The use of the name "Colchester" places the date of the original record between September, 1639, and October, 1640, unless the new settlement used the name before it was authorized by the General Court. The Salisbury records have the name "Merrimack" in May, 1639. The Boston copy must have been made after October, 1640, as it uses the name "Salisbury": "The names of those yt have lotts & proportions granted pr the Toune of Colchester in the first division - .Mr Sam: Winsley."

30 1641 -- The general court enacts that, as Samuel Winslow has invented a method of manufacturing salt, none are to make this article for ten years, except in a manner different from his, provided he set up his works within a year.

THE BARNARD FAMILY

Joseph Peaslee's wife Ruth Barnard was the daughter of Thomas Barnard and his wife Eleanor M. -- both Quakers. Thomas, a planter and husbandman, was born ca 1608 in Lowestoft, Suffolk, England. With his brother Robert, he came to New England and first settled in Salisbury. Thomas was one of the founders of the town, Amesbury. He bought land on the west side of Powow river, now within Amesbury. Eleanor's maiden name and ancestry is unknown, although some sources on the internet -- without attribution to source -- have asserted it to be "Morse."

Along with Christopher Husey, Thomas's brother Robert was one of the original founders of Nantucket. (Given that Thomas was only one of a handful of Quakers in New England in the early 1600s, it is not a surprise that he would be involved with Christopher Hussey in the founding of "the Quaker Colony" on Nantucket. When each of the founders selected a partner, Thomas was selected by his brother, Robert. Thomas never lived at Nantucket. He was one of the signatories to articles of agreement between the inhabitants of the "old Town" and the "New Town" in May 1654 in company with Thomas Macy, John Severance and others. He transferred one-half of his share to his brother, Robert, and his son Nathaniel represented him on the Island in the other half share.

The location of his home has been thus described: "East of the Elihu Coleman house is the Mill-Brook, and a short distance further east, on the south side of the road near a cluster of willow trees, was once a house which was the homestead of Thomas Barnard. Directly across the road lived Nathaniel Barnard. The present road was merely a path for many years. The house lot of Thomas Barnard on which the house of Nathaniel was located, was about 1000 feet square, and southwest of it was the lot of Robert Barnard. These lots extended northeast and southwest, and comprised twenty acres each. The house of Robert cannot be exactly located, neither can the bounds of the lots be identified. But the high land between the Mill-Brook swamp and the Indian boundary line was substantially comprised within the two Barnard lots."

Workbench for a shoemaker

Thomas was killed by Indians on July 7, 1677; after Thomas's death, Eleanor married George

Little of Newbury on July 19, 1681. She died November 27, 1694.

Thomas Barnard's father, Thomas Barnard, Sr. was born on January 21, 1574/5 in Lowestoft, Suffolk, England where he was buried May 24, 1621. Thomas was a shipwright, or a builder of ships. On August 22, 1602, he married Ann Cooke. Ann is mentioned several times in Ann Cooke's (her mother) will, proved at Beccles, England, May 27, 1626. After Thomas's death, Ann married secondly Thomas Deynes.

Part 9: Our JOHNSON & MOULTON Quaker Families

While Mary Morrell's Family Bible clearly established our connection to Thomas Morrell's father Peter and his family through his birthdate, the family of Abigail Johnson was more elusive. Mary's Bible records Abigail Johnson's birth on January 31, 1736. [31] Abigail and Thomas' marriage is recorded by civil authorities on May 9, 1754 at Amesbury, Massachusetts,[32] and is also mentioned in the records of Amesbury and Hampton Monthly Meeting, Society of Friends. The Quaker records name both spouse's parents: Thomas, of Berwick, Maine son of Peter, married Abigail Johnson, daughter of Obadiah Johnson & Judith, of Kensington, New Hampshire. It is this record alone that has established Abigail's connection to her father and mother.

Abigail's parents were Obadiah Johnson, born 10 May 1705 in Hampton Falls, Rockingham County, New Hampshire, and Judith Brown, born 27 September 1703 from Salisbury, Essex County, Massachusetts. They were married on 28 January 1729/30 in Newbury, Essex County, Massachusetts. Obadiah was the son of Edmund Johnson, born 3 July 1671 and Abigail Green, born 27 February 1669 -- both in Hampton. Edmund Johnson was a Quaker and millwright. He was on the Grand Jury in 1695, and on Trial Jury in 1698. He married Abigail Green on September 25, 1693. They moved to "Hogpen Farm" in 1701. Edmund was a subscriber for the building and furnishing of the new Quaker meeting house. Edmund died 11 November 1637, and Abigail shortly thereafter on 16 January 1737/38, again both in Hampton.

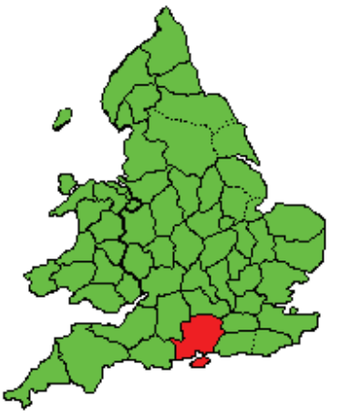
That the Johnson family were Quakers is not surprising given the close association of the other branches of the Morrell family with Quakers. What is unclear, however, is why Thomas Morrell would have been "disowned" if the Johnson family had remained Quakers? Because Thomas was "disowned" but married within the discipline of the Monthly Meeting, we must assume that Thomas acted contrary to estblished discipline. One common reason for involuntary termination of membership included attending services of other denominations; Thomas' was referred to as "Rev." Thomas Morrell, and was knwn for having preached on Long Island in the time of Lorenzo Dow, and this could well have been the cause of the dismissal. What is certain is that war service was violative of basic precepts of Quaker Doctrine; Mary Morrell married a Revolutionary War Soldier -- clearly not acceptable by Quaker principle -- so the family schsim with the Quakers no doubt occurred during the lives of Mary's parents.

Nevertheless, both Thomas and Abigail came from longstanding Quaker stock in New England. Abigail's grandfather Edmund was the son of Peter Johnson and Ruth Moulton. Peter Johnson was baptized in Winnacunnet

31 Other sources list her birthdate as 20 Nov. 1732, but do not cite any authoritative sources that I can find.

32 Amesbury, Mass. Vital Records to 1850 p.424. See also Old Families of Salisbury and Amesbury, Massachusetts by David W. Hoyt (New England History Press, Somersworth, NH, 1981. Reprint 1897-1919).

(renamed Hampton) as early as 1639. He married Ruth Moulton on April 3, 1660, and two months later received a deed of land from his stepfather, Thomas Coleman. Peter, a millwright, along with James Philbrick, drowned in the Hampton River on Nov. 16, 1674.



Hampshire, England

Peter Johnson was the eldest son of the four children of the immigrant Edmund Johnson and his wife Mary. Edmund Johnson was born in England about 1612 and died in Hampton on 10 March, 1651.[33] His wife's name was Mary, but her maiden name is unknown to us. The immigrant Edmund Johnson's family had been closely associated with the Peaslee family even before crossing the Atlantic in England. Given that Joseph Peasley's wife was named Mary and was the son of a well-to-do farmer on the Welsh border named John Johnson, it is likely that Edmund had some connection to that well-to-do farmer. Edmund's own father was named Davy Johnson.

What we do know about the Johnsons is that Edmund and his wife, Mary, came from Romsey, Hampshire, England, in July 1635 on the ship *James*. They were one of the first comers to Winnicunet, later called Hampton, New Hampshire, along with the Rev. Stephen Bachiler. Edmund received several grants of land there: a house lot, two lots of fresh meadow, sixteen acres of salt marsh, twelve acres of upland, an orchard, and three shares in the cow common. He and his wife were assigned seats in the Meeting House, Edmund in the first row of seats at the west end of the table with the younger men and Mary with the women in the second seats at the east end of the south side. Edmund was about thirty-nine years old when he died and left an estate of about one hundred eleven pounds. Administration was granted to his widow, Mary, on April 8, 1651. Each of the children shared in the division of the estate with Mary's second husband giving a bond of eighty pounds assuring the apportionment of Edmund's property to Edmund's children and that the children would be taught to read and write.

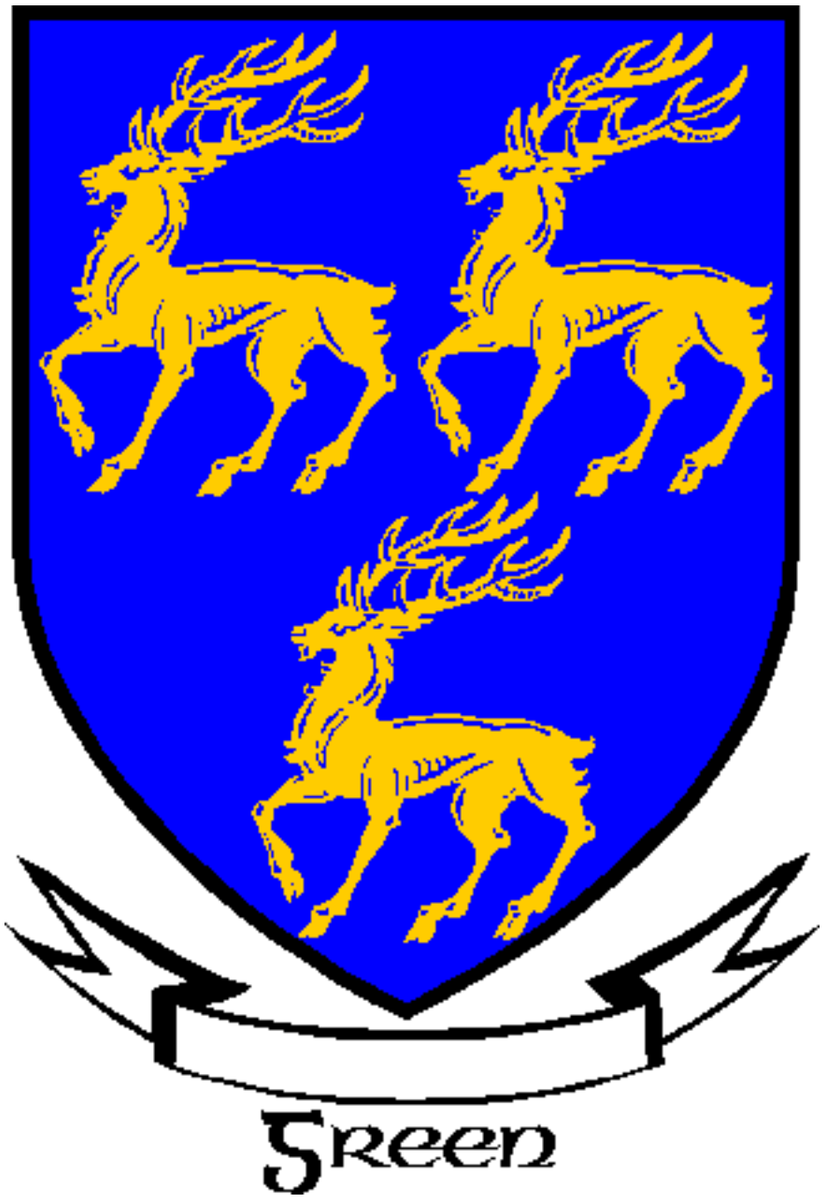
Peter Johnson was the first of his family to have been born in New England; the same was true for Ruth Moulton. Ruth's parents -- John Molton [or "Moulton"] and his wife Anne Greene[34] originally emigrated from near Great Yarmouth, Ormsby, Norfolk County, England, embarking in April 1637 for New England. At that time, John was aged 38 and his wife Anne of the same age; they also brought five children, Henry, Mary, Ann, Jane, and Bridget, and two servants, Adam Goodwin, age 20, and Alice Eden, age 19. The Moulton family first settled at Newbury, and moved to Hampton in 1639 with the Bachiler founding party. From Dow's History of the Town of Hampton, Page 37: "John Moulton, born in England, about 1599; married Anne [Green], immigrated, 1637; settled at Winnacunnet, 1638; freeman, May 22, 1639; was chosen the first deputy or representative of the town to the General Court at Boston, the next September. He died between Jan. 23, 1649, the date of his will, and Oct. 1, 1650, when it was proved, his age being about fifty years." Anne Green was the daughter of Edward Green, of Ormsby, Norfolk, England. Anne had been born ca 1601 at Ormsby, baptized on 6 Sep 1601 at Ormsby, and married to John on 24 Sep 1623 at Ormsby.; Anne died at Hampton, New Hampshire, on 12 Apr 1668. Their youngest daughter Ruth was born after the move to Hampton, on 7 Jan 1639/40, she was therefore undoubtedly one of the first children born in the new settlement. at Hampton after the Bachiler founding.

Part 10: Our GREEN & MOULTON Family History

Abigail Green, wife of Edmund Johnson, was born in 27 February 1668/69 in Ipswich, Essex County,

33 After Edmund's death, his widow Mary married Thomas Coleman on 11 July 1651. She also died in Hampton on 30 January 1663.

34 The Moulton Family was discussed briefly previously in Section 1, part 10 in connection with Rev. Stephen Bachiler.



Massachusetts, the daughter of Abraham Green and Esther [Hesther] Swett. Abraham was the oldest of seven children of Henry Green and his wife Mary Perkins, the immigrant ancestors.

Henry Green was born as early as 1620, was of Hampton within a few years aft the 1st settlement of the town; for in May 1644 certain lands were granted to him in exchange for other lands then in his possession. He bought the house-lot first granted to Arthur Clarke (on the Perry estate), and perhaps lived there for a time, but in 1653 he was living on the south side of Taylor's river. He was a millwright by trade [ome sources say a wheelwright] and a mill owner; he was also a prominent man in the town and province. He was twice chosen a commissioner to settle the Salisbury line; was selectman, two years; assistant of the Inferior Court; a justice of the court of Sessions; councillor from 1685 to 1689, and again from 1692 to 1698; he also served as chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas, 1697-8. At the council board and on the bench his influence was very great, while his sterling character won the respect of the people, so that important trusts were consigned to his hands. Being a justice during the Mason controversy, however, he then shared the unpopularity of the courts.

Abraham was born in 1648 in Ipswich. He married Esther Swett on 9 July 1668 in Hampton. He worked as a yeoman, and died 27 February 1717/18. Abraham was a Selectman in 1694 and 1701. On May 1, 1705, Abraham and Henry Green were among the witnesses at the wedding of John Peaslee of Haverhill, Massachusetts, son of Joseph and Ruth Peaslee, and Mary Martin of Amesbury, Massachusetts, daughter of John Martin [deceased] and Mary, at Thomas Barnard's house in Amesbury. Abraham's sister Mary was probably born in Hampton, but the date is unknown. In 1660, William Edmonds of Lynn sued Mary's father[Henry] for the cure of her leg at the expense of over 20 pounds for 11 months' time. Judge Green was twice married. His first wife, Mary Perkins, the mother of his children, was the daughter of Isaac Perkins and his wife Ann, from Hillmorton, Warwickshire, England. Mary died April 26, 1690; he thereafter married on 10 March 1691, widow Mary Page, daughter of Capt. Christopher Hussey [from whom we are also descended!]. His death is chronicled on the town records of Hampton: "Henry Green Esqr. Aged Aboue 80 years for Severall years a member of the Counsill until by age he layd downe that place but A Justice till he died which was the 5 August, 1700."[35]

35 Joseph Dow, History of Hampton, N. H., pp 739-740.

About the 10th of May, 1648, the town "granted unto Abraham Perkins and Henry Green in consideration of building a watermill in the town of Hampton, at the Falls, twenty acres of upland as near the falls as may be had, and ten acres of salt marsh as convenient as maybe had; and five acres of fresh marsh where it may be had; two shares of commonage and all the swamp that lay between Henry Green's houselot and his planting lot, that is not yet given out." About three years later, Green bought out his partners for thirty pounds. On the 19th of April, 1679, at a general town meeting: "Liberty was granted to Henry Green to set up a dam on the falls river, above his dam that now is, provided that it do not prejudice any town-highway or prticular man's property by flowing their land or ways."[36]

The name Green originated in England. Greene or Green is believed to have been derived from the original "de Greene" (of the Green) or "The family living on the Green". The Green was a term that referred to the center of a town or village, ie. "Village Green".

ORIGIN OF THE NAME

A memorandum attached to a parchment pedigree of the "House of Greene" presented to the Boston Athenaeum Library in 1881 by Williaqm Batchelder Greene [possibly made by Mr. Burt, the compiler of the chart] theorizes as to the origin of the name Grene or Greene. It cites three sources of evidence for a connection to Sir Henry Grene, Lord Chief Justice of England for Green families in America.

HOUSE OF GREENE LORDS OF BUCKTON, ETC., COUNTY NORTHAMPTONSHIRE.

During the 12th & 13th centuries flourished a number of minor Barons (i.e., not possessing more, or as much as, thirteen knight's fees and a quarter) bearing the name of De la Greene (or Grene) in Co. Northampton.

Sir Henry Greene, Lord of Buckton, has on one of his seals attached to an Indenture now in the archives of the British Museum, the inscription---'Sigill (Henri) ci Grene, Milit,' [in old English characters]. That Sir Henry held his lands in capite by the same service as the feudal lords before mentioned, i.e., by lifting up the right hand on Michaelmas Day wherever the King should be in England (Harl. MSS.). Their tomb records show that they claimed the same family alliances.

Tracing the name further back, we find the name De la Grene replaced by Del Grene (the latter seems to have been one of the latest of the Lords of the township of Newsholm) and before the Norman Conquest the name of Greene disappears all together and we are said to find Grini or Del Grini in counties York and Northampton. this would show the great antiquity of the family as well as suggest a Latin origin. It is worthy of note that a patrician family existed at Rome, shortly after the Roman conquest, of the same name, and that the name is still borne by certain nobles in the northern part of Italy near Belluno.

In addition to the above memorandum are a few notes on the opposite upper corner of the chart; the first giving names and baptisms of the children of John Greene, who emigrated to the American colonies, and others referring to General Nathaniel Greene of the Revolutionary Army and descendant of said John; also to that line of his descendants who settled in New Hampshire (records now partially erased); and to the Gardiner Greene's and Copley-Greene's of Boston. In another handwriting is a note relating to the Greene's of Ireland on the authority of Burke, being endorsed, "signed by Sir Bernard Burke." It has special interest in connection with the recently published pedigree following "Greene's Norton, Northamptonshire," where descent is claimed by this Irish branch from the Northamptonshire family, though proof is not conclusive.

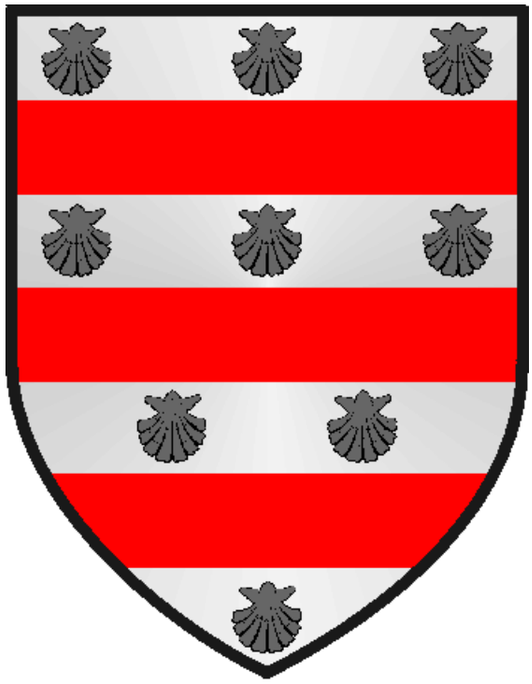
36 Joseph Dow, History of Hampton, N..H., pp 535-536.

Coat of Arms: Three gold stags on a blue shield.

Motto: Virtus semper viridis
Translation: Virtue is always flourishing

The earliest recorded Greene: This work deals with several of the GREENE lines arriving in America between 1635 and 1700. Name variations associated with this House: Greene, Green, de Green, de Grene, De la Greene, Grini, Gruen (German)

THE MOULTON FAMILY



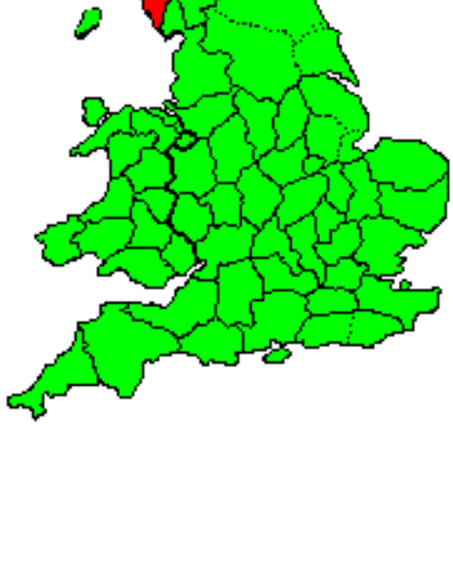
Moulton

Peter Johnson's wife Ruth Moulton was the daughter of John Moulton, who came from Ormsby, Norfolk, near Great Yarmouth, England. He married Anne Green, daughter of Edward Green, at Ormsby on 24 September 1623, and embarked April 1637 at the age of 38 for New England with his wife Ann [*nee* Green] of the same age and their five oldest children, along with 2 servants. John first settled at Newbury, and then moved to Hampton in 1639. Ruth was born shortly after the couple settled in Hampton, on 7 January 1639/40. From Dow's History of the Town of Hampton:

> John Moulton, born in England, about 1599; married Anne ———; immigrated, 1637; settled at Winnacunnet, 1638; freeman, May 22, 1639; was chosen the first deputy or representative of the town to the General Court at Boston, the next September. He died between Jan. 23, 1649, the date of his will, and Oct. 1, 1650, when it was proved, his age being about fifty years.

John died 1 October 1650, and Anne died 12 Apr 1668 -- both at Hampton, New Hampshire.

Cumberland County, England



Part 11: Our BURBANK Family History

John Carll's mother Esther Burbank was born about 1714 in Scarborough, Cumberland County, Maine. She married Samuel in 1735, and Esther and Samuel lived out their lives and died within mere months of each other in Scarborough after the Revolution in 1785. While we have not been able to identify with certainty exactly which Burbank fathered Esther.... he was certainly one of the sons of the Burbank family who moved to Scarborough from Rowley, Essex County, Massachusetts. Rowley was the site of the immigrant John Burbank's first home in New England.

John Burbank was born John "Bowerbank" in Greystoke, Cumberland, England. The local pronunciation would have been something like 'Booerbank', so it is no great step from that to 'Burbank'

as it became in the American Colonies. The Greystoke Bowerbanks were an important local farming family, and John came from one of at least four families in the village. There are still many Bowerbank memorials in the local church, mostly from the 18th and 19th centuries.

Section 5: Our STEELE Ancestors

Part 1: Our Michigan STEELE Family

Dixie Elizabeth Steele, the wife of Thomas Jefferson Scribner, was the daughter of Clinton Richard and the granddaughter of Peter Steel[1] and Minerva Ann Hetsler. The marriage was "all in the family," however, because Thomas Jefferson Scribner was also the grandson of Minerva Ann Hetsler -- albeit by a different husband. Minerva had first married Charles William Scribner before the Civil War, and by that union produced two sons; the eldest of whom was Charles William Scribner [who adopted the reversed-name "William C. Scribner"]; thereafter Minerva was widowed when Charles died during the war, and after the war married Peter Steele. Peter came from a large family; his siblings were technically aunts and uncles to the two Scribner boys. Nevertheless, William C. Scribner and Peter's youngest sister Caroline married. The complicated interconnected family relationships between the Steeles and Scribners originated in or possibly before the families' residence in Macomb County, Michigan. As discussed previously in the Scribner Family, The opening of the Erie canal was the most likely impetus for the family of Aaron Scribner to relocate from the north woods of Maine and into the interior, because finally there was transportation available for the lumber that his family had by tradition produced. Joseph Hibbard lived close to the Erie Canal and two of his sons were canal boatmen, Joseph was also a member of Aaron Scribner's extended family: Joseph's daughter Sally had married Enoch J. Morrell, a brother to Mary Morrell; Mary was the mother of Rhoda J. Carll, and the mother-in-law of Aaron Scribner. Thus, Sally was Rhoda Scribner's aunt, and Mary Morrell's sister-in-law. Mary had been widowed in 1833, after which time she came to live with her youngest daughter Rhoda and her husband Aaron Scribner. So, naturally, when the family relocated along with Mary, one of the places in the Canal region they considered was the home of Mary's relation that already lived and was employed on the canal.

A further examination of the interconnections between the Scribner, Morrell, HIbbard, and Steele family yields some tantalizing clues to a possible theory of how the Scribners and Steeles became so close upon their arrival in Macomb County, Michigan. David Scribner -- Aaron's 3rd cousin and another resident of Waterborough during his youth -- married Betsy Hibbard. Betsy had also resided during her youth in Waterborough, and was first cousin to Sally Hibbard [Enoch Morrell's wife]. Daniel Hibbard, Sally's brother, married Judith Morrell (who was Mary's Morrell Carll's sister). The close interconnections between the Morrell, Hibbard and Scribner family is clear.

The Hibbard family genealogical records reveals a fascinating marriage record between Hannah Hibbard and Philo Widrig.[2] That Hannah is connected to the same Hibbard family, albeit their common ancestor was close

1 The Steele family for reasons unknown changed the spelling of their name around the time of the Civil War. Before the war, the family almost universally spelled the name "Steel" without the "e" on the end; at the end of the war, almost all family members had adopted the "Steele" spelling. For consistency, I will refer to the family surname as "Steel" in usage before the Civil War, and as "Steele" afterwards, even though an occasional record or document may use another spelling.

2 Spelling of last name has variously and interchangeable been written as Widrig, Witrig, Weiterick, Weitherick, Weiderick and others. The Swiss pronunciation is Widrig with the romansh accent on the last syllable.

to the original emigrant during the Great Migration. But Philo Widrig has a much closer genealogical relationship to the Scribner and Steele family, and it is reasonable to think that perhaps the Scribner and Steele families were brought together through their Widrig and Hibbard connections.

My working theory -- explained previously under the Steele family -- has been a strong indicia of suspicion that the Michigan migrant Steel was John J. Steel, and that his wife was Catherine Widrig. That Catherine Widrig was the daughter of Col. George Widrig, eldest son of Michael Widrig and his first wife Magdalena Siegenthaler, born in Hassenclever, Wurttemburg, Germany on 15 January 1739/40.

Philo was a son of Jacob Widrig and Catherine Rinckle; Jacob was also a son of Michael Widrig, but by his second wife Amelia Maria Catherine [last name unknown; a native of Switzerland]. Michael Widrig was also a native of Hassenclever, Wurttemburg, Germany, born about 1726. Michael Widrig emigrated with his second wife and at least five children from Germany -- including both George and Jacob -- and came to Schuyler, a town in Herkimer County, New York.

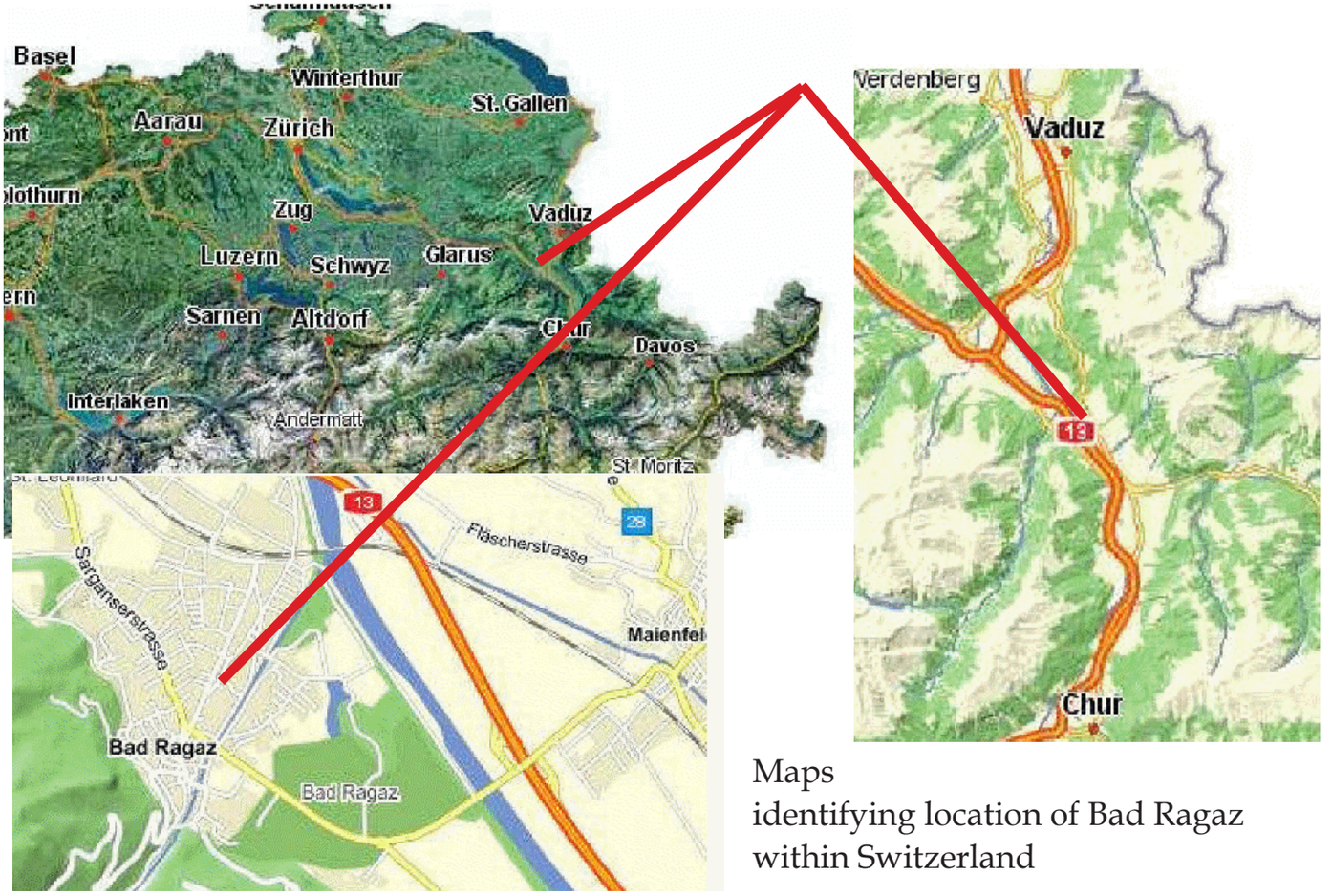
Philo Widrig and Hannah Hibbard lived in Sandy Creek, Oswego County, New York, just north of Verona, Oneida County, New York. Wood Creek, near Verona, was the location that Joseph Hibbard and his two sons settled to work as Erie Canal boatmen. Joseph Hibbard was also a member of Mary Morrell's extended family: Joseph's daughter Sally had married Enoch J. Morrell, a brother to Mary Morrell; Mary was the mother of Rhoda J. Carll, and the mother-in-law of Aaron Scribner. Thus, Sally was Rhoda Scribner's aunt, and Mary Morrell's sister-in-law. Mary had been widowed in 1833, after which time she came to live with her youngest daughter Rhoda and her husband Aaron Scribner. So, naturally, when the Scribner family relocated along with Mary, one of the places in the Erie Canal region they considered was the home of Mary's relation who already lived and worked on the canal at Verona, Oneida County.

It is not a stretch of the imagination to think that they may have stopped at Philo Widrig's home on the way to Verona, or that they were visited by Philo Widrig when resident in Verona. If my working theory of the Steel family is correct, then Philo Widrig was first cousin to Catherine Widrig who married John J. Steel.[3] The Scribner family was headed toward Michigan; if, as I suspect, the Scribner family visited the Hibbard relations at any time during their stay in Verona, it would be quite natural for Philo to advise the Scribners to "look up" his first cousin Catherine [Widrig] Steel and her family -- who had already moved to Michigan by 1834 -- when the Scribners reached Michigan. If such a meeting ever occurred, it may even have been memorialized in a letter, which could have then been sent to advise the Steel family of the coming of the Scribners.

All speculation aside, the Widrigs should be included among the list of our German ancestors from the Mohawk Valley in New York. There are so many connections and "coincidences" existing between our Steel and the Mohawk Valley Widrig family that it would be prudent to include the Widrigs among our list of ancestors. Our specific connection, I believe, occurred when John J. Steel married Catherine Widrig abt. 1797.

3 Additional circumstances lending support to the presumption the John Steel's wife was Catherine Widrig include the migration of Catherine Widrig's brother, Michael George Widrig. Michael settled in Ray Township, Macomb County, Michigan -- the same township in which John Steel purchased land in 1834 and in which John, Richard and Nicholas Steel all appear in the 1840 federal census.

Yet another bolster for this theory of intermarriage between the Steel and Widrig families comes from the marriage of Nellie Leona Norton to Alfred Jonathan Widrig on 6 Oct 1880 at Macomb County, Michigan. Alfred was the son of Jonathan Widrig, grandson of Michael George Widrig, and great-grandson of Col. George Widrig. Michael George Widrig's sister would therefore have been Catherine Widrig, the presumed wife of John J. Steel. Nellie Leona Norton was the daughter of John Norton, and the granddaughter of Hugh Norton and his wife Maria Elizabeth Steel. Maria Elizabeth is known to have been a sister to our ancestor Richard, and therefore a daughter of John J. Steel and Catherine Widrig if our theory is correct. Alfred's grandfather's sister Catherine was also Nellie's great-grandmother; the connections between the families raises even further our index of suspicion about Catherine's Widrig heritage so that I feel very confident about it.



Maps
identifying location of Bad Ragaz
within Switzerland

The Widrig family emigrated to the Mohawk Valley from Bavaria. The family's pre-emigration history is not difficult to discern because the name Widrig occurs in the whole of Bavaria only in Switzerland and there only in Bad Ragaz. The name has also been written as Widrigo, Vidrigo, and Viderigo. Today the name Viderigo still stands on a tablet on the east wall of the church in Bad Ragaz. A paper in the Foundation archive at St Gallen from the Pfäfers archive attests that the Widrigs emigrated from the Bolzen valley, that is to say the Blenio valley. The Widrigs came therefore from Tessin into present day Saganserland. There they became subjects to the Abbot of Pfäfers. The first mention of Hanspeter Widerigo is dated 9th July 1614, and is contained in the file entitled " Documents and files of the parish of Ragaz."

The Widrigs came over the Alps at a time when there was a big increase in commerce. For that reason they found sufficient business opportunities as they crossed the Tamina river. Before the French revolution they worked as agents in forwarding goods, in warehousing and in through traffic from Chur via Walenstadt to Zürich. The Widrigs chose their coat of arms according to their occupation. An eagle spreads its wings on the upper half. This indicates the political role of the Widrigs in their community. On the lower half are three small fir trees against a blue background (green crown, silver trunks and roots). The Widrigs transported wood along the Rhein and unloaded it in Ragaz and transported it on to the lakes at Walen and at Zurich.

The circumstances of Michael Widrig's emigration from Bavaria to America are described as part of the History of Herkimer County (published in 1893) [section on *The First Widrigs*], and are paraphrased here. Permanent settlement of the town of Schuyler, Herkimer County, New York began in the eastern part of town

in about the year 1764, when Peter Hasenclever, an enterprising and wealthy German from the town bearing his family's name in Wurttemberg, came to the colony and established an iron works on the Hudson River near West Point. He also established trading posts further west, and obtained a site for settlement at what is now the town of East Schuyler.

While in his home in Wurtemberg, Germany on a visit, Hasenclever described to the local German peasants the wonders of the new world in such glowing terms that a number of them consented to emigrate. Hassenclever provided them with a means for their passage to his settlement, and agreed to supply them and their families with subsistence for three years in return for their service upon arrival. Michael Widrig, his wife and his five eldest children (and perhaps a couple of nephews) came to the US under Hasenclever's sponsorship, likely arriving on September 26, 1765 aboard the ship *Polly* in Philadelphia, having sailed from Rotterdam.[4] [By inference, Michael's first wife and the mother of his eldest son George must have died in Germany before emigration, and Michael remarried the Swiss wife and produced at least four more children before emigrating. Jacob was among those four children born to Michael's second wife.] Michael Widrig settled near the Mohawk River on a farm [known as the Van Vleck Place at the time of publication of The History of Herkimer County in 1893]. The emigrants who arrived in 1765 were the last wave of Palantines to serve as a buffer for the English holdings in Albany from the French and Indians in Canada before the outbreak of the Revolutionary War.

Hasenclever's settlement was unimaginatively named "New Petersberg" [today it is located in East Schuyler]. Over thirty log cabins were built for the people employed by Hasenclever, among whom were families named Bridenbecker, Staring, Bargy (formerly written Birchi), Clemens, Widrig, Oyer (formerly written Aiyer and Irer), Finster, Keller, Steinway, and others. Descendants of several of these families still occupy land on which their ancestors first settled.

Hasenclever built an ashery,[5] probably the first frame building, and the first manufactory of any kind within the present bounds of Schuyler. He also had a store (the first in Herkimer county).[6] Potash and other products were shipped by Hasenclever down the Mohawk in flat boats, and merchandise and provisions returned in the same manner. Hasenclever also began to build a saw-mill on a small stream flowing into the Mohawk.

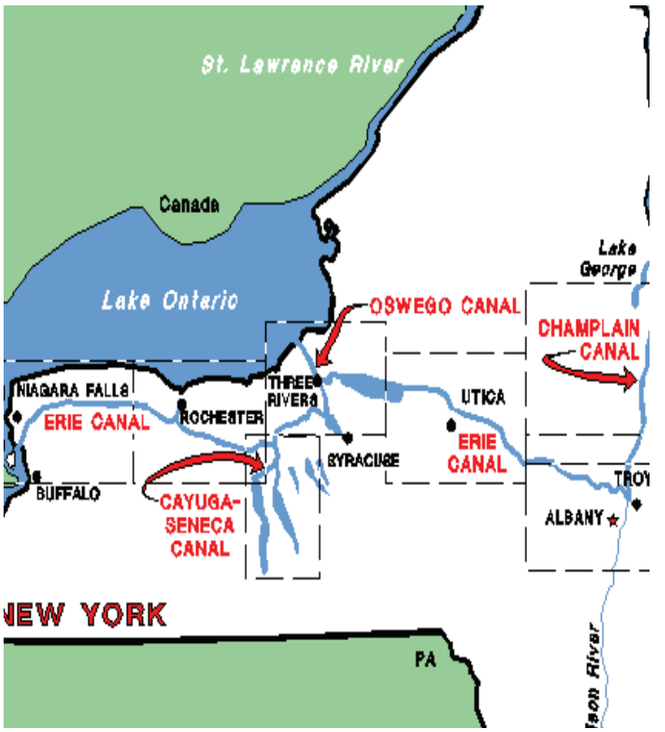
The Revolutionary War had a deep and lasting impact on what was then called New Petersberg. Early

4 Despite many sources' contention that the Widrigs "arrived in 1765," the date of Michael Widrig's arrival with his family has not been firmly established. Almost without fail, publications asserting that date are without citation to source. New York immigrations records show that a Michael Widrig took an oath of allegance in 1773, and given the paucity of the surname within the region, it is reasonable to presume that this was *our* Michael..If that is true, then the Widrigs must have emigrated as a family from Wurttemburg, Germany before 1773. The family could very well have been a part of the 1765 wave of Palatine emigration to the Mohawk Valley; Michael's eldest son Col. George Widrig [by his first wife] would have been 33 years old, and Jacob [by his second wife] would have been about nineteen years old. However, at least one source asserts that Col. George Widrig, Michael's eldest son, came to this country at the age of 10 -- which would have been in 1750. *See* Cowles, George Washington, Landmarks Of Wayne County, New York, Syracuse, N.Y.: D. Mason, 1895, ["George Widrig, born in Germany, came to America when ten years old"], 165. The genesis of the assertion of his arrival in 1765 is likely based on a Philadelphia arrival record in which on 26 Sep 1765 one "Michael Widerich" arrived on the ship *Polly* from Rotterdam, Captained by Robert Porter. While this record appears consistent with the story of Peter Hasenclever's sponsorship, it is not conclusive. For the time, however, it is perhaps the best theory we have for the emigration and arrival of our Widrig family in America. Others have disputed this theory on the grounds that there is a record in Bucks County, Pennsylvania of a Michael Widrig with a wife named Magdalena. Those sources instead cite a Passenger Ship Attestation from the MacDaud Memorial Library, recording that a Christoff Widerich came to the US on the ship *Phoenix* and arrived in Philadelphia, PA on September 1, 1754. The ship came from Rotterdam with stopovers . See Strassburger's Pennsylvania German Pioneers book 1, page 629. For the time being, I believe the 1765 arrival to be the most cogent analysis of Michael's origin.

5 The ashery stood on ground owned by Luther P. Staring at the time of the publication of the History of Herkimer County in 1893..

6 That store was situated on land occupied by the widow of D. I. Bridenbecker at the time of the publication of the History of Herkimer County in 1893.

in the struggle for independence the settlers realized their exposed situation and adopted measures for protection. A piece of ground was enclosed by high pickets and and was known as a "fort." Within this enclosure three or four log houses were built, into which the families retired at night, while during the day they worked on nearby lands. Despite their fortifications, the original settlement at New Petersberg was destroyed and abandoned during that War. As a consequence, the business of the ashery and the trading post was broken up and Hasenclever left the country for good.



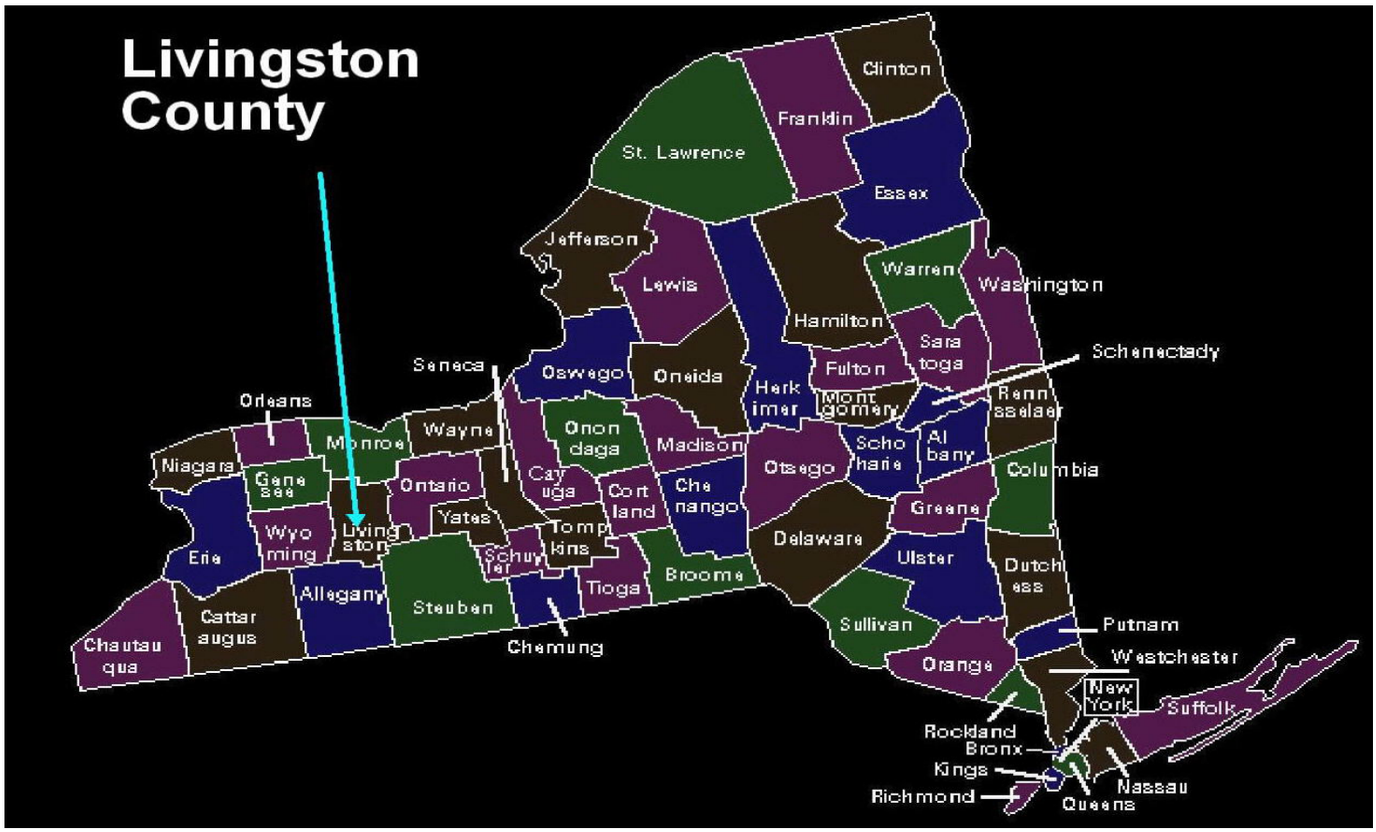
MICHAEL WIDRIG

One Michael (eather father or brother) was at Oriskiny and the other was at Fort Stanwick. Oriskiny monument show that one died there. Received pension or bounty land. 1st NY Continental Regiment. The Patriarch Michael Widrig is thought to have died about 1796 in Herkimer County. Son Jacob served Capt. under Peter Bellenger at the battle of Oriskany under General Herkimer. Conrad, Michael and George were privates in 4th Reg. Tyron Co. Militia. George was also an early political leader and Member of the New York State Assembly from Herkimer County from 1800-1807. Received pension or bounty land. Was a Col. Major or Brigadier General of Militia in War of 1812. May have had two sons named John. Member of the Dutch reform church.

* * * * * * * * * *

By 1837, Aaron Scribner and his wife Rhoda Carll and family, along with his mother-in-law Mary Morrell, had moved into the Erie Canal region close to Joseph Hibbard, and were living in Verona, Oneida County, New York, when Mary filed affidavits to receive her Revolutionary War widow's pension. While the family was still living in Verona, Sarah Jane was born in July 1839. Sometime after Sarah's birth in July 1839 and before the next June of 1840, the family moved even further into the Great Lakes region -- to Painesville, Concord Township, Lake County, Ohio sometime between February 11, 1839 [the date Mary filed her pension application] and June 1840 [before the census enumeration, at which time Aaron and family were enumerated as residents in Concord, Lake County, Ohio]. Aaron Scribner appears in the census records with correlating family information at Ohio, Lake County, Township of Concord in the 1840 Census Records (National Archives, M704, Reel 407, page 85; Ancestry Image #335 of 377). Rhoda's mother Mary (Morrell) Carll traveled with them from New York to Ohio; she appears on the 1840 Revolutionary War Pensioner Census in Ohio, Lake County in Aaron Scribner's household [See "The Pension Lists of 1792-1795," compiled by Murtie June Clark; published by Genealogical Publishing Company; available online at Genealogy Library.com). The Revolutionary War Pension Application that Mary filed based on the service of her deceased husband John Carll is published at "Abstracts of Revolutionary War Pension Applications," National Genealogical Society Quarterly, Volume 33, page 24. Mary died in Painesville, Lake County, Ohio, in 1841 (adjacent to Concord Township at that time).

Aaron's family may not have been the only Scribners to pursue opportunities in the midwest. Aaron's older brother Peletiah Scribner had fought in the War of 1812, and received a bounty land grant for his service.



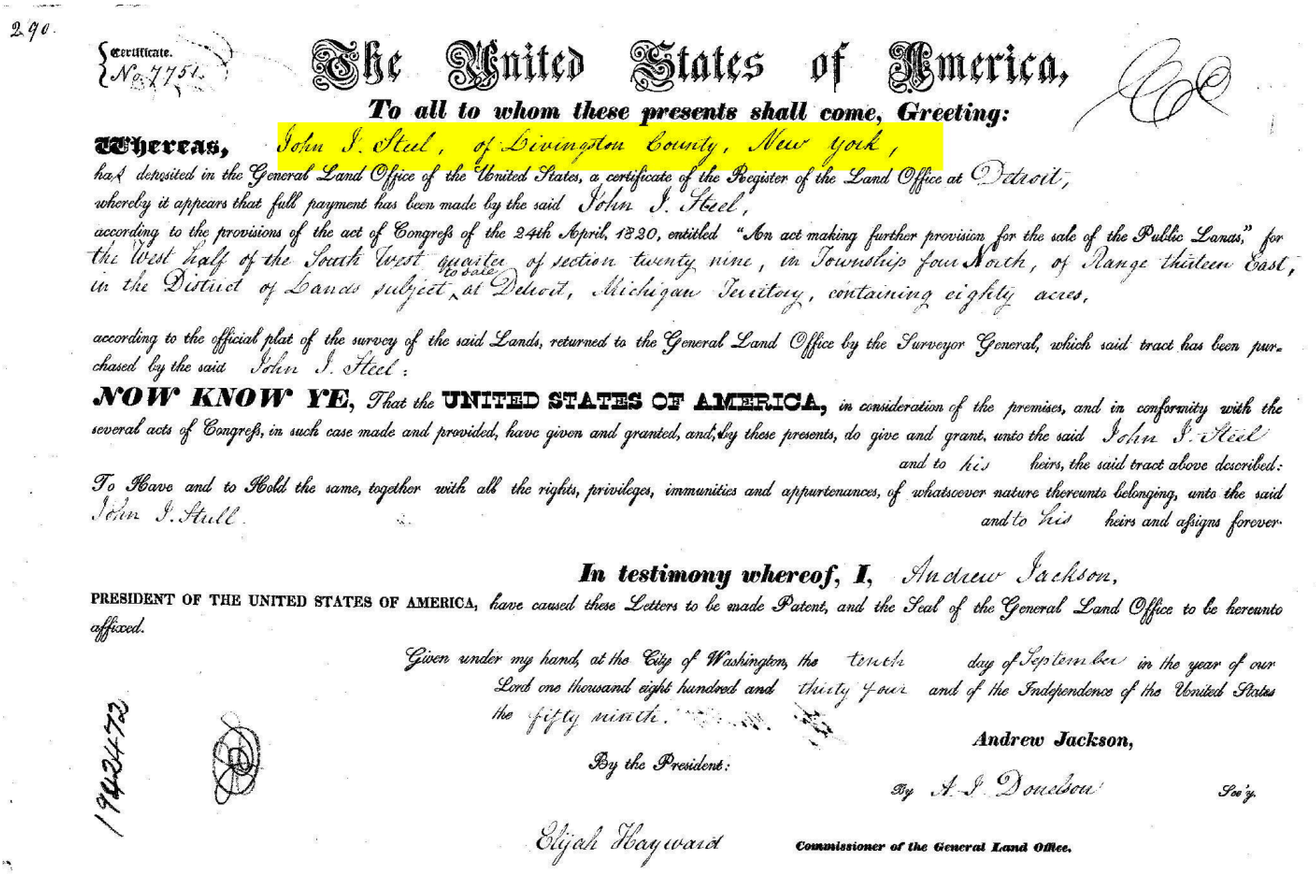
On 6 July 1818, he received title to 160 acres of land in Richfield Township, Adams County, Illinois, and was an early migrant from Maine to the region. He received the actual bounty paperwork in Zanesville, Ohio. There also exists a marriage record for a "Sally" Scribner to a man named James Fox recorded in Lake County, Ohio on November 19, 1843. Aaron had a younger sister known as "Sally."

Aaron's youngest son Samuel did not appear in the 1840 census because he was born during the residence at Concord, Ohio in 1841 (the year after the census). After Samuel was born and also after his mother-in-law Mary died in December 1841, Aaron moved his family to Michigan (within the Illinois territory); this move must have occurred between 1842-1850.

However, our Steel[7] family history in America begins much earlier -- in the Mohawk Valley of New York with the German

7 Richard J. Steel's birthdate was established for ou name File (where he died) as 24 April 1800 in New York.

Facing Page: Copy of John J. Steel's original 1834 Land Patent in Ray Township, Macomb County, Michigan stating that he was "of Livingston County, New York" at that time.



290.

Certificate. No. 7751.

The United States of America,

To all to whom these presents shall come, Greeting:

Whereas, John J. Steel, of Livingston County, New York,

has deposited in the General Land Office of the United States, a certificate of the Register of the Land Office at Detroit, whereby it appears that full payment has been made by the said John J. Steel, according to the provisions of the act of Congress of the 24th April, 1820, entitled "An act making further provision for the sale of the Public Lands," for the West half of the South West quarter of section twenty nine, in Township four North, of Range thirteen East, in the District of Lands subject to sale at Detroit, Michigan Territory, containing eighty acres,

according to the official plat of the survey of the said Lands, returned to the General Land Office by the Surveyor General, which said tract has been purchased by the said John J. Steel:

NOW KNOW YE, That the **UNITED STATES OF AMERICA,** in consideration of the premises, and in conformity with the several acts of Congress, in such case made and provided, have given and granted, and by these presents, do give and grant, unto the said John J. Steel and to his heirs, the said tract above described:

To Have and to Hold the same, together with all the rights, privileges, immunities and appurtenances, of whatsoever nature thereunto belonging, unto the said John J. Steel and to his heirs and assigns forever.

In testimony whereof, I, Andrew Jackson,

PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA, have caused these Letters to be made Patent, and the Seal of the General Land Office to be hereunto affixed.

Given under my hand, at the City of Washington, the tenth day of September in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty four and of the Independence of the United States the fifty ninth.

Andrew Jackson,

By the President:

By A. J. Donelson Sec'y.

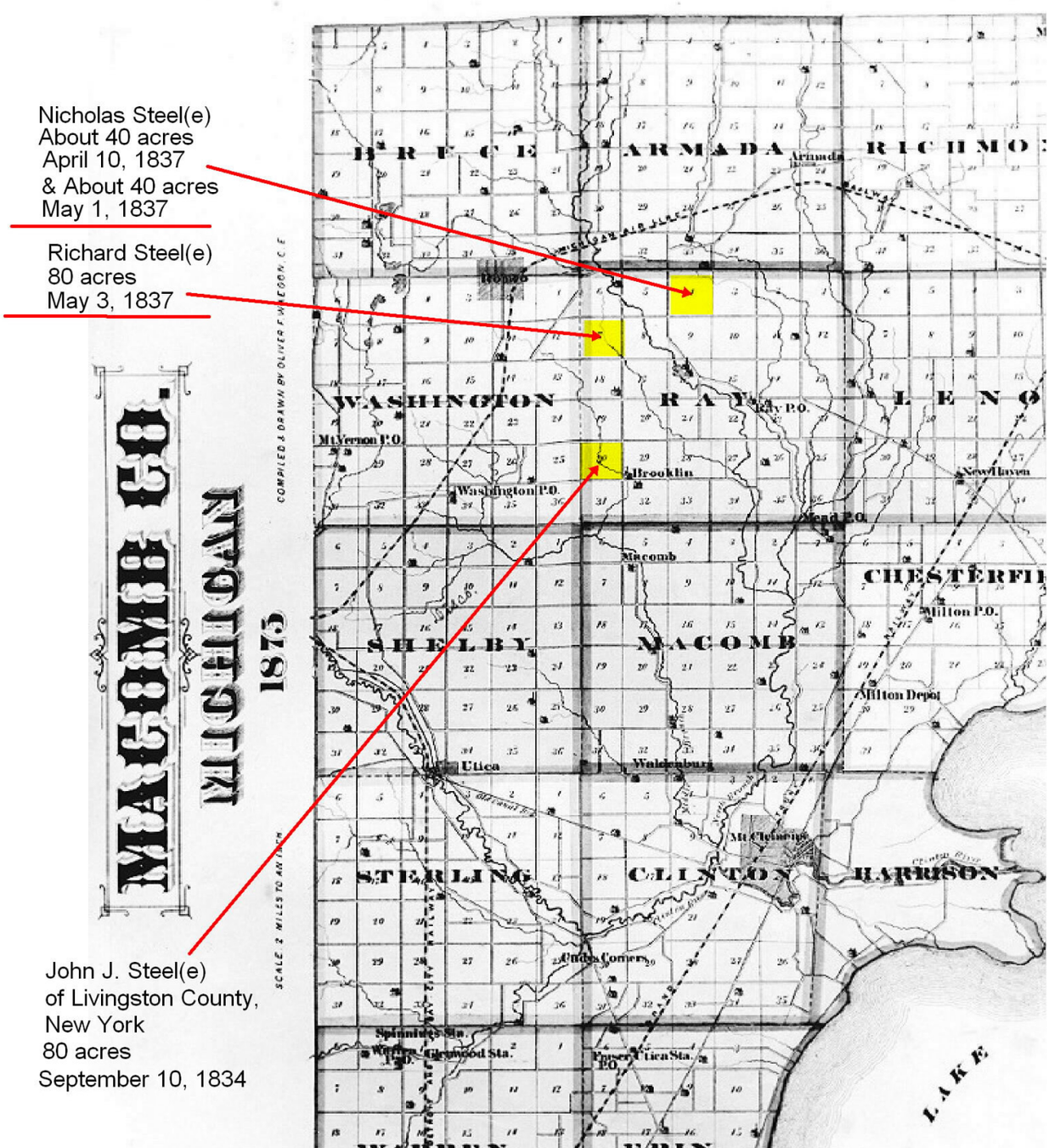
Elijah Hayward **Commissioner of the General Land Office.**

19424.72

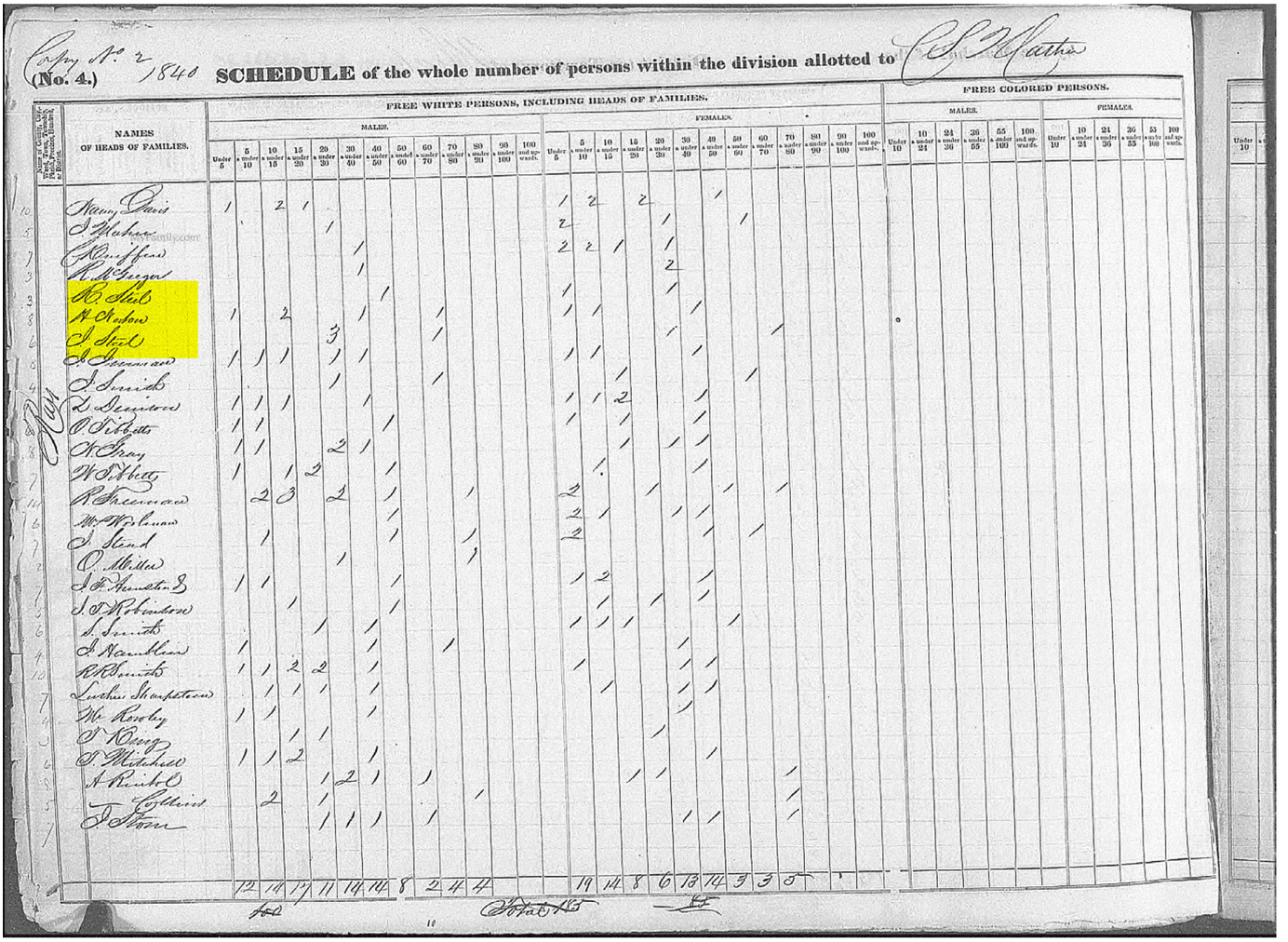
immigrants who settled there in the early 1700s.[8]

8 This theory of lineage is only a working hypothesis, but my confidence in it is fairly high. I have no direct evidence at this time that connects us to that line of Steel in a concrete way, however my hypothesis is based upon the following evidence. First, Peter Steel's father Richard J. Steel had a sister named Maria Elizabeth Steel who married Hugh Norton. Richard J. Steel was issued a land patent in Macomb County, Michigan on 3 May 1837 in Section 7 of Ray Township. By coincidence, a "Nicholas J. Steel" was issued a land patent in Ray Township in Section 4 on 4 April 1837 as well as another patent in the same section on 10 May 1837, and a "John J. Steel" was issued a somewhat earlier land patent in Ray Township on Section 29 on 10 September 1834. These patents would be extremely coincidental if they were *not* issued to related persons. In fact, the 1840 census entry for Ray Township connects all of these individuals: Richard Steel's family, Hugh Norton's family, and John Steel's family are sequentially listed (meaning they were visited in sequence -- indicating neighboring dwellings). By inference based on age, John Steel was the father; his household consisted of three males and one female ages 20-29 -- likely all children; John's age was listed as between 60-69, and no wife was present. Assuming that Nicholas was one of the three males aged 20-29, then he was born between 1811-1820, and there were two other sons living at home born between 1811-1820 as well as one daughter born between 1811-1820. The 1850 census for Macomb County is even more illuminating. In that census, Nicholas Steel has his own household, and his age was listed as 38 and his birthplace given as New York; his family enumeration included Catherine Norton -- the daughter of Hugh and Maria Steel, who would have been his niece. The other Steel family listed in the county was John Steel, reported age 30, born in New York. Both John and Nicholas have census entries that are consistent with the 1840 census entry.

To discover the identity of the female Steel child still living at home in 1840, I consulted the Macomb County, Michigan marriage records to see whether a marriage had taken place in the county after the census enumeration for a Steel bride. In addition to the Macomb


Nicholas Steel(e)
About 40 acres
April 10, 1837
& About 40 acres
May 1, 1837
Richard Steel(e)
80 acres
May 3, 1837
John J. Steel(e)
of Livingston County,
New York
80 acres
September 10, 1834
MACOMB CO.
MICHIGAN
1875
COMPILED & DRAWN BY OLIVER F. WEEDON, C.E.
SCALE 2 MILES TO AN INCH
WASHINGTON
RAY
ARMADA
RICHMOND
SHELBY
MACOMB
CHESTERFIELD
STERLING
CLINTON
HARRISON
WARREN
ERIN
LAKE
Romeo
Armada
Ray P.O.
Mt Vernon P.O.
Washington P.O.
Brooklin
New Haven
Mead P.O.
Macomb
Milton P.O.
Milton Depot
Utica
Waldenburg
Mt Clemens
Union Corners
Warren Sta.
Roseville P.O.

1840 census page with enumerations for Steele families in Ray Township,

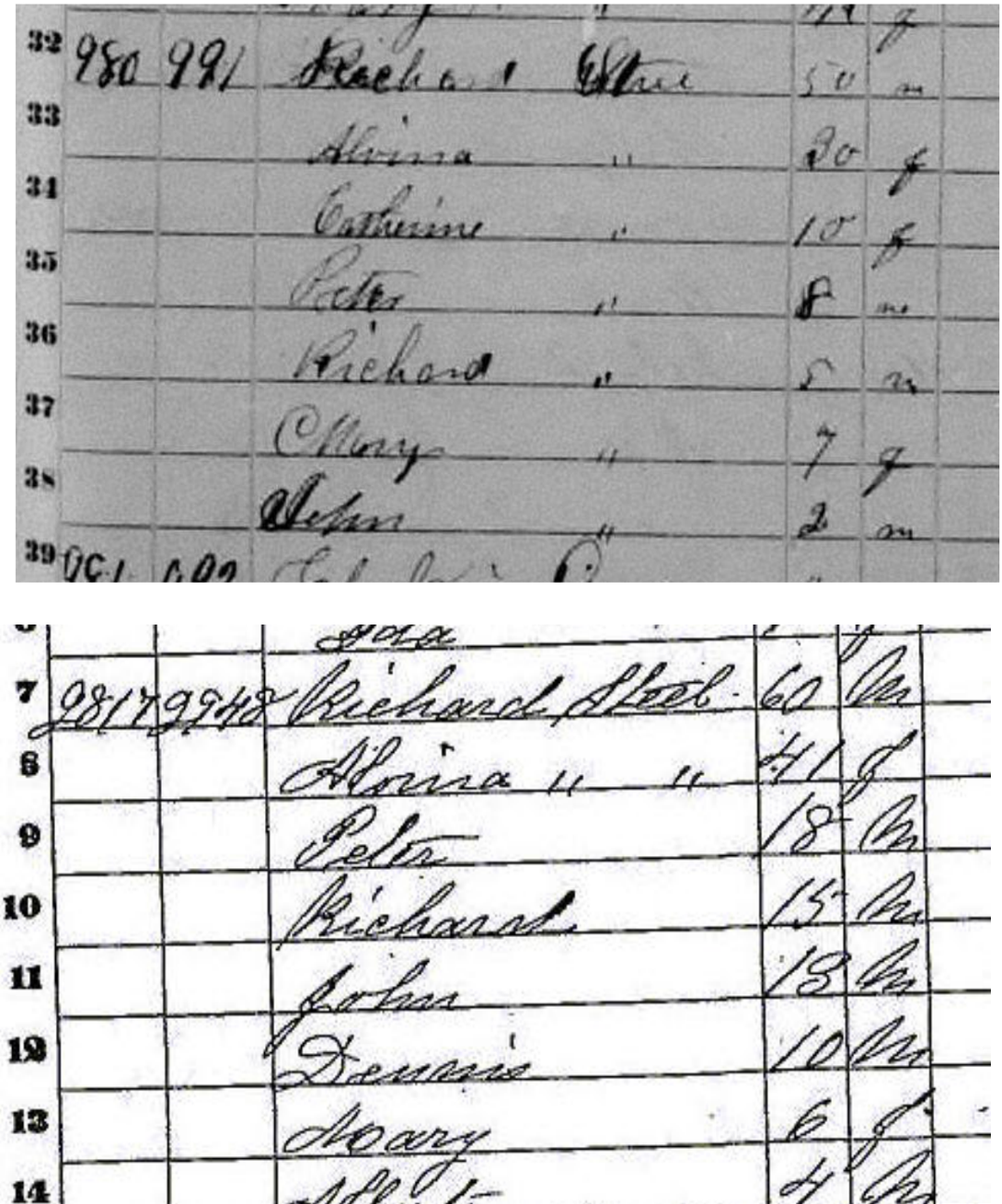


County marriage record for Nicholas to Amanda Presson [*nee* Nixon] on 23 Aug 1847, there was also listed a marriage for Margaret "Steele" in Macomb County on 13 Feb 1843 to "Edward VanTiflin." According to the marriage record, the bride was aged 25 years and the husband 23 at the time of marriage. Interestingly, an Edward "Vantifflen" was enumerated in the 1840 census record for Sterling Township in Macomb County, Michigan as a single male aged 20-30 years old.

As an interesting aside, Edward Van Tifflin is enumerated in close proximity to Samuel Axford in the 1850 census of Sterling Township. Thomas Axford was the husband of Mary Matilda Darling, a daughter of Sylvester Darling and Amy Inman. Another daughter of Sylvester and Amy Darling named Emily married Elisha Wentworth and fathered Lyman and James Wentworth; Lyman would later marry Opheline Hetsler -- sister of Minerva Hetsler, and James would later father Sarah Adelia ["Delia"] Wentworth -- who would later become the wife of Thomas Jefferson [or "Jefferson"] Scribner [and therefore also Minerva's daughter-in-law]. Of course, Jefferson was also the brother of William C. Scribner, so Delia would also be William's sister-in-law. As another interesting note, Lyman and Elisha Wentworth were both living in Rush Township, Monroe County, New York before coming to Michigan -- the same New York location from which the Van Tifflin family migrated to Macomb County. Given the breadth and complexity of the interrelationships between and among our ancestral families in pre-civil war Macomb County, Michigan, it would not surprise me to find that the proximity of Samuel Axford and Edward Van Tifflin was not coincidental, and that perhaps the Axfords, Van Tifflins, and Wentworths were acquainted or even perhaps related in earlier generations in New York.

Margaret's reported age at marriage of 25 in 1843 would correspond to an age of 22 in 1840, or an approximate birthdate of 1818 -- which is consistent with the John Steel family enumeration data in the 1840 census entry in Ray Township. By inference, Margaret's birthplace would have been New York, because her father's 1834 land patent -- which is considerably later than Margaret's birth -- listed her father John's residence as Livingston County, New York.

Based upon the accumulated information, I can fairly assert with a high degree of confidence that our John Steel family in 1840



1850 & 1860 Census entries in Ray, Macomb County, Michigan.

THE GREAT LAKES MIGRATION

As was set forth above in the Scribner Family History, the opening of the Erie Canal made the entire interior of the North American continent accessible for commerce. The Canal linked Great Lake Erie to the Hudson River at Albany, New York; the Canal provided a single continuous waterway for shipping from the ports on the Great Lakes directly to the port at New York City at the sheltered bay at the mouth of the Hudson River. What had originally been a western frontier in the Mohawk Valley was now becoming merely a waystop along the great interior waterways that linked New York to the entire continent. As expected, the canal produced an explosion in commerce and migration to the Great Lakes Region. So huge was the groundswell of migration that it affected literally every community in the New England and mid-Atlantic region.

As part of that migratory movement, sometime between 1820 and 1830, John and Catherine left the Mohawk Valley and headed toward the Great Lakes region; they initially took up residence at Covington, Genessee County, New York. While in that location, their daughter Maria or Mary Elizabeth Steele married Hugh Norton, a native of New Jersey whose brother John also lived in the area. The Steeles and Nortons were all enumerated in the 1830 census in Covington, and apparently all moved to Macomb County, Michigan in the late 1830s, and initially settled at Ray Township, where they were enumerated together in the 1840 census.

On 10 September 1834, John J. "Steel" patented a plot of land in Ray Township, Macomb County, Michigan, and was described in that patent as "of Livingston County, New York." In 1837, two of John's sons -- Richad and Nicholas -- both patented plots of land very near John's patent location. All of these family members, along with the Nortons and related families, were enumerated in 1840 in Ray Township, Macomb County, Michigan.

John and Catherine's children included [all believed born in German Flats, during their residence at Herkimer County, New York]: Richard J., born 24 April 1800; George, born 18 January 1803, Petrus [Peter], born 7 July 1804; Mary Elizabeth, born in New York [some records state the location as Vermont] on 6 May 1806; Johannes [John], consisted of a widowed John Steel, with daughter Margaret, sons Nicholas and John, one unidentified son, and nearby married son Richard Steel and daughter Maria Norton. Further, John Steel must have lived in New York at least as early as 1800 when his son Richard was born, and the family had the following contour: John was born between 1770-1780; John's children include *at least* Richard J. Steel, born 24 Apr 1800 in New York; Maria Elizabeth Steel, born 6 May 1806 in New York; John Steel, born about 1810 in New York; Nicholas J. Steel, born about 1812 in New York; and Margaret Steel, born about 1818 in New York.

Taking the information back one decade to the 1830 New York census, we can connect to John Steel's census entry in Covington, Genesee County, New York by virtue of the fact that both Hugh Norton and his brother John were enumerated in that census at the same location. From this census enumeration we can discern that John's wife was between 50-59 years old, and thus born between 1770-1780; also, that John's own age may have been misreported in the prior census [since both 1830 and 1840 census entries report his age to be within the range of 60-69]. This would be understandable if, for example, his birthdate fell exactly within the year 1770 [as I suspect it might]. In any event, this now rounds out our family substantially: we know we are looking for a Steel family with a wife born 1770-1780; a husband born 1760-1770; with children born as follows: male born 24 April 1800; female born 6 May 1806; male born about 1810; male born about 1812; and female born about 1818, and one other male born between 1810-1820.

By a process of elimination and deductive reasoning, and given the distribution of available Steel families in earlier census records in New York, in conjunction with known birth information for *this particular family,* I have established a working hypothesis that our John Steel was in fact Johannes Adam Stähli, who married Catherine Widrig, daughter of Col. George Widrig and Maria Elizabeth Bender from German Flatts, Herkimer County, New York - which has a reported family group consistent with this information.

Thie theory is also buttressed by the fact that other members of Catherine Widrig's extended family are known to have migrated from the Mohawk Valley of New York to Macomb County, Michigan, and at least one -- Alfred Jonathan Widrig -- married a Hugh & Maria Norton's gramddaughter Nellie Norton [daughter of their son John] in Macomb County on 6 October 1880.

Finally, birth records for the children of this family that are contained within the German Flats Reformed Church bear a striking parallel to this family:

Again, while this is not conclusive proof, it is quite highly suggestive and so much so that if this is *not* the correct Steele family, then the parallels are nothing short of remarkable.

born 11 August 1810; Nicholas J., born 4 January 1803; Catherina Margaretha, born 17 April 1816; Hiram, born 22 April 1818, and Margaret, born about 1822.

Although we do not have a marraige record for Richard, we know that he was most likely married in about 1839, and probably in Michigan. Richard's bride -- Alvina Harrington -- was born in 1820 in Massachusetts, but her family was likely part of the Erie Canal migration, and in New York immediately preceding their relocation to Michigan. The identity of Alvina's parents has not been confirmed, but are likely the Stephen and Betsy Harrington family that settled in Berlin Township, St. Clair County [with a son named Joel]. Alvina was born in Massachusetts in about 1819.

After their marriage, Richard and Alvina took up residence on Richard's land in Ray Township, began farming and raised a large family. Both John and his son Richard were separately enumerated in the 1840 census, and Richard's enumeration shows not only his wife, but a small daughter also [Catherine]. Additional entries are present for Mary Elizabeth's husband Hugh Norton, as well as Margaret's husband William Van Tifflin in the same Township. No further census entries can be found for John after this 1840 entry, so he likely died before 1850. We do not have a death or burial record for either John or Catherine. We do know, however, that other members of Catherine's Widrig family are known to have moved to Macomb County, Michigan also.

In 1850, the federal population census enumerated Richard's family as including Catherine [age 10], Mary [age 7], and sons Peter [age 8], Richard [age 5], and John [age 2]. By 1860, the family had suffered financial setbacks. They had relocated to Clinton Township, Macomb County, Michigan. Richard no longer had the farm; instead, he listed his occupation as "day laborer." The name of the place in which the Steele family lived was called "Frederick." The 1860 census enumerated the family as including sons Pater [age 18], Richard [age 15], John [age 13], Dennis [age 10], Albert [age 4], and Leander [age 3]; only one daughter is listed -- Mary [age 6]. [This must be a second daughter Mary because of the age disparity from the first -- implying that the first daughter Mary probably died as a child before the birth of this subsequent child named Mary].

Richard and Alvina thus had ten chldren, all born in Macomb County, Michigan: 1) Catherine Eleanor Scribner, born June 1840. Catherine married Thomas P. Scribner, a son of Aaron Scribner and Rhoda Carll; 2) Peter Aaron Steele, born between 1841-1842. Peter married Minerva Hetsler -- the widow of Charles William Scribner -- and is the father of Clinton Richard Steele; 3) Richard Steele, Jr., born June 7, 1845. Richard married Ellen Scribner, daughter of Enoch Scribner, another son of Aaron Scribner and Rhoda Carll; 4) Mary Steele, born about 1846 [died young]; 5) John Steele, born about 1847; 6) Dennis Steele, born November 1851; 7) Mary Elizabeth Steele, born 17 February 1854. Mary married several times; she married Charles Hetsler, half-brother to Minerva Hetsler, who was her older brother Peter Steele's wife; 8) Albert John Steele, born about 1856; 9) Leander A. Steele, born about 1858; 10) Caroline or "Carrie" Steele, born September 1862. Carrie married William C. Scribner, a son of Minerva Hetsler and her first husband Charles William Scribner-- who was another son of Aaron Scribner and Rhoda Carll. Alvina died in 1866, and was buried at Davis Cemetery in Ray Township, Macomb County, Michigan. The family scattered after Alvina's death. By 1870, Richard, Sr., was living with his daughter Catherine and son-in-law Thomas Scribner in Vernon, Shiawassee County, Michigan.

By 1870, Charles Scribner had died in the Civil War, and Minerva had remarried to Peter Steele [she was expecting at the time]. However, the other children were not married. Richard, Mary, Elizabeth, and Carrie were living together in another household in Shiawassee, Michigan, close to their father.

In 1880, Richard, Jr. had married Ellen Scribner. His father came to live with him, and Richard's youngest daughter Carrie had joined him and was also living with Richard's son Richard Steele, Jr. and his wife Ellen.

Catherine Steele [left] & Caroline Steele [standing]; both married Scribners

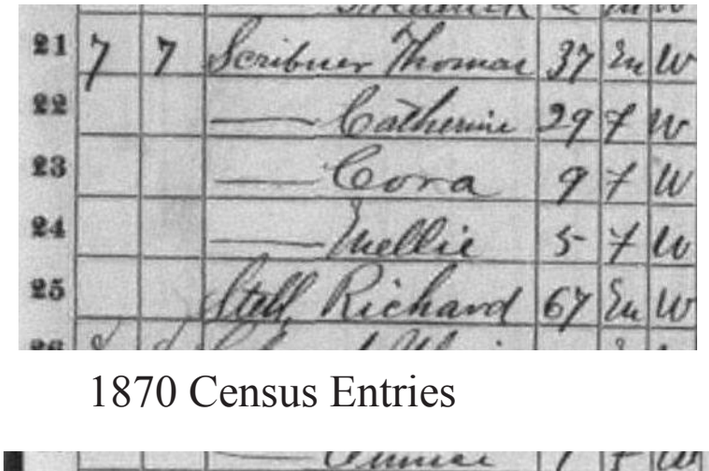
Also by 1880, Catherine and Thomas Scribner had relocated to Detroit, where Thomas had established a small corner grocery store. Peter and Minerva were living in Bay City, Michigan, and Peter was working in a sawmill. Mary Elizabeth had recently married James Stewart and was living in Saginaw. Albert Steele was living with Mary and James.

Richard, Sr. died on 29 December 1885, while staying with his son Leander and Leander's wife Mary in East Saginaw, Saginaw County, Michigan. He was buried in Greenwood Cemetery, Vernon Township, Shiawassee County, Michigan.

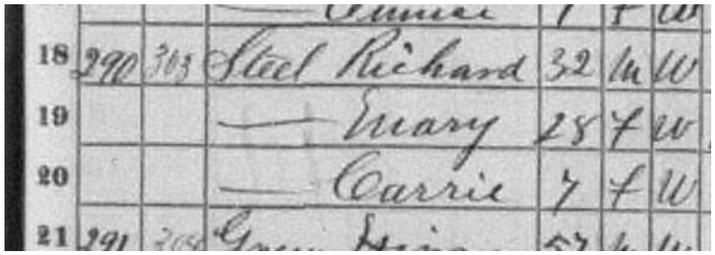
Because Peter's sister Catherine married Thomas P. Scribner in about 1860, we can easily presume that Catherine and Thomas' marriage provided ample opportunity for Peter to meet other members of Thomas' family -- including Thomas' older brother Charles and his wifeMinerva Ann {Hetsler} Scribner. Charles and Minerva were newlyweds at the time of Thomas and Catherine's marriage in 1860, and undoubtedly Peter and Minerva became acquainted before the Civil War began in early 1861.

THE CIVIL WAR

The beginning of hostilities for the Civil War began with the attack on Fort Sumpter in April 1861. On 6 September 1861 in Fort Wayne, Michigan, Peter enrolled for a 3-year enlistment of service in the Grand Army of the Republic [also known



1870 Census Entries



1880 Census Entry

as the Union Army]. On 9 September 1861 Peter was mustered in as a Private to the 5th Michigan Infantry Regiment, Company G.

The history of Peter Steele's Regiment -- and therefore Peter's military experience -- is remarkable. The Regiment left its rendezvous in Michigan to join the Army of the Potomac on 11 September. During the winter of 1861-62 it was at Alexandria, Virginia; in March, it took part in the Peninsula Campaign under General McClellan, who had been recently demoted.

As part of that Campaign, the Fifth Michigan Regiment was at the seige of Yorktown 4 April to 4 May, and participated in the Battle of Williamsburg on 5 May 1862. In the latter Battle, the Regiment charged the Confederate works and carried them with the bayonet, but in doing so sustained massive casualties. For gallantry in that action, the Regiment received congratulatory orders from General Berry, commanding Brigade, General Phil. Kearny, commanding Division, and General McClellan commended the Regiment highly to the Secretery of War. Before the close of May, the Fifth also suffered great losses in the desparate Battle of Fair Oaks on 31 May.

In June 1862 the Fifth was engaged in the Battle of Chickahominy on the 25th, at Peach Orchard on the 29th, and at Malvern Hill July 1. In those battles, the unit served in a prominent role and again sustained heavy losses.

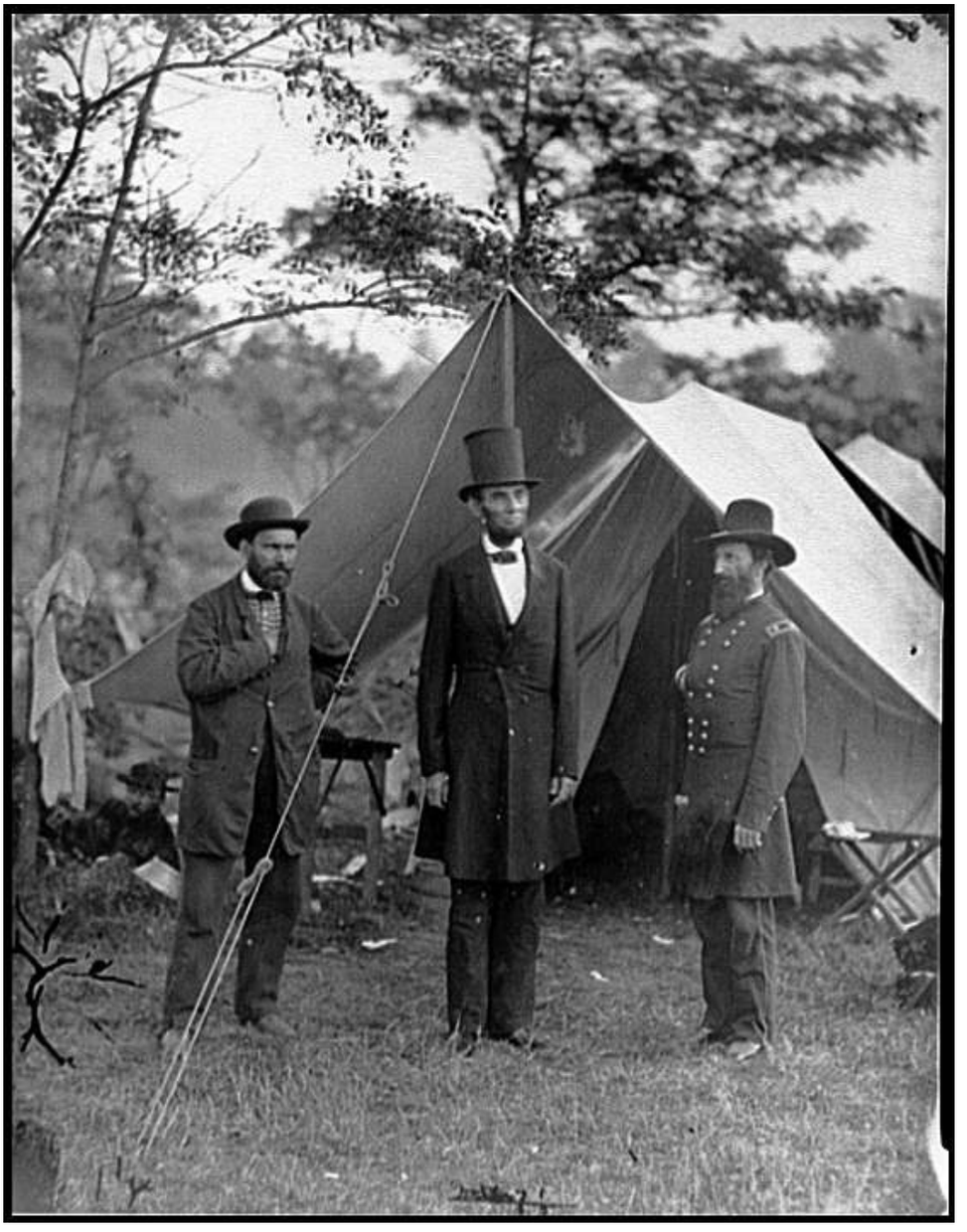
The Regiment then returned from the Peninsular Campaign to serve under General Pope in the engagements on 28 August at Manassas ["Bull Run"] (the second Battle of Bull Run), on 29 August at Groveton, and 1 September at Chantilly. In December 1862 the Michigan Fifth Regiment took part in the disastrous battle of Fredericksburg, in which the Rappahannock River was crossed and recrossed many times.

On 2 May 1863 the Fifth Michigan took part in the Battle of the Cedars and on 3 May the Battle of Chancellorsville, where many of its senior officers -- including its commanding officer -- were killed. A new commanding officer was commissioned, and the Regiment made a series of forced marches, arriving at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania on 2 July 1863 at 4 p.m.. The Regiment went into action immediately about a mile beyond Emmittsburg Pike and in one hour lost about one-half of all the soldiers in the Regiment. Nevertheless, the Fifth continued on both July 2 and 3, and followed the retreating Confederate army after the Battle at Gettysburg toward Williamsburg,

where it was engaged at Wapping Heights on July 23.

Peter Steele's Fifth Michigan Regiment had advanced from the south along the Maryland border to the Gettysburg area along Emmittsburg Pike [or "Road"]. Emmittsburg is in Frederick County, Maryland near the Pennsylvania State line; the "Emmittsburg Road" is now BR-15 or Battlefield Road 15 traversing the National Historic Military Park at Gettysburg. At the time, the corps were advanced beyond the line of Cemetery Ridge, which was quite low, but occupied the high ground along which ran Emmittsburg Road, about 4 or 5 hundred yards in advance. That position had its left flank exposed, and the flank had to be bent back at an angle through the low ground towards Round Top. The angled forces occupied a low point in a Peach Orchard, above which stands Cemetery Ridge; the Peach Orchard where Peter Steele's Regiment was positioned thus became the main part of the Confederate attack. Peter's unit's position can be identified by the curved blue angled troop designation in the illustration to the right.

After numerous marches, the Regiment was placed on transports at Alexandria, Virginia -- a port on the Potomac River -- to sail for New York to quell the riots caused by the institution of a Civil War draft.



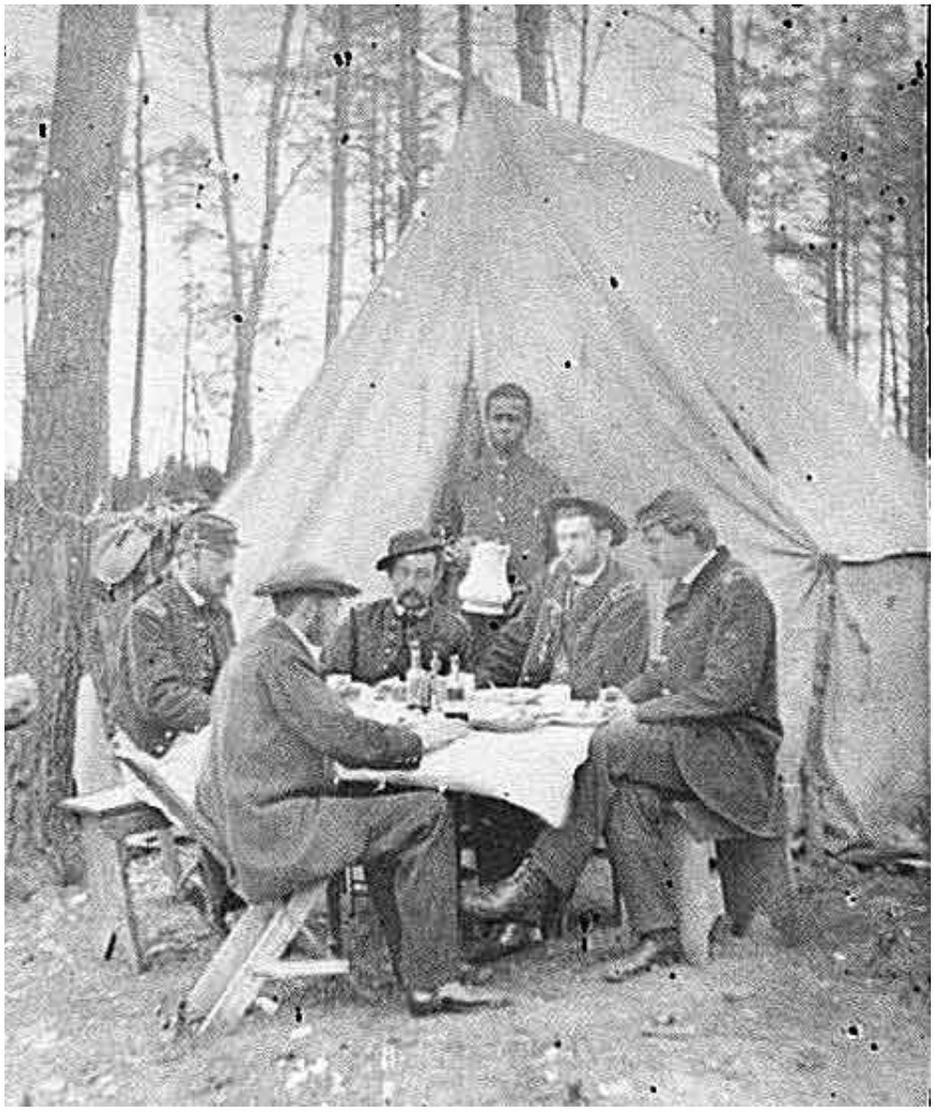
In September the Regiment again rejoined the Army of the Potomac and on 7 November 1863 crossed the Rappahannock River at Kelly's Ford. The Regiment went into winter quarters at Brandy Station, Virginia, where it remained until December where it re-enlisted and returned to Michigan on veteran furlough. Peter was re-enlisted during the stay at Brandy Station for another three-year term.

The unit reconnoitered with new recruits on 14 February 1864 at Brandy Station. In May 1864, the Regiment embarked upon the Wilderness Campaign. The Fifth marched by the way of Chancellorsville, and soon it was engaged in the death grapple of the Wilderness, which continued May 5, 6, and 7. The Regiment was constantly under fire, and

its numbers were greatly depleted by losses; it was soon consolidated with the Third Michigan Regiment whose numbers had been similarly depleted. On May 8 engaged the Confederates at Todd's Tavern, Virginia and again at Po River, Virginia; On May 12 the Regiment made a charge at Spottsylvania, and two stands of Confederate colors were captured. By 5 June 1864 the Fifth reached Cold Harbor; after fatiguing marches and hard fighting it reached Petersburg before 15 June. The Seiges at Petersburg and Richmond had already begun June 14. Peter had beaten tremendous odds, had been in many famous and disastrous battles, and lived to tell the tales without a wound. His fortunes were about to change.

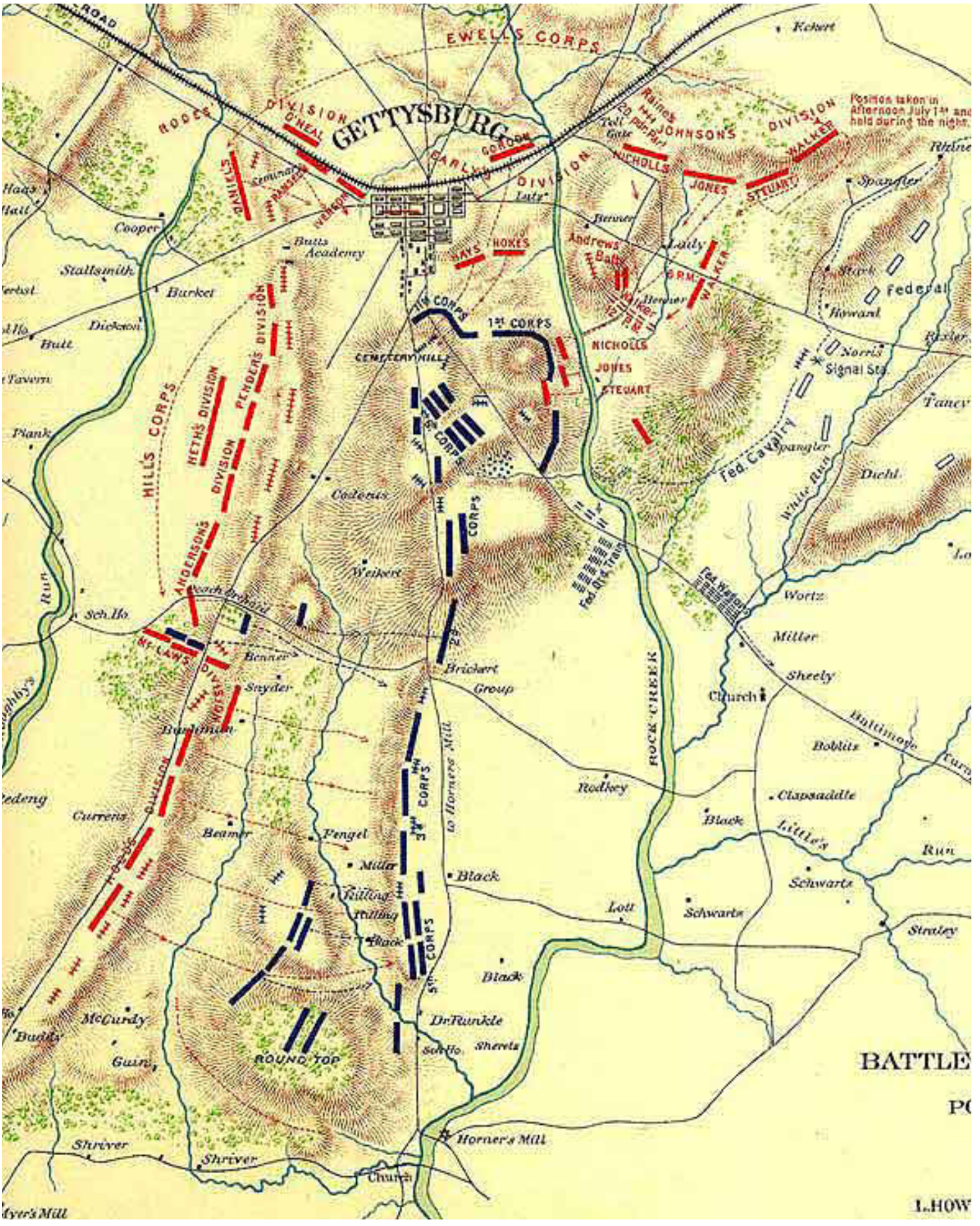
Peter was wounded during the Seige of Petersburg on 20 June 1864 when he served on the front line of a rifle pit. He sustained a gunshot wound at about one o'clock in the afternoon when he left the rifle pit to go to a tent to retrieve a bayonet. The ball passed behind the bone of his left thigh.

Clara Barton -- the founder of the American Red Cross in 1881 -- had been given permission to travel behind enemy lines to assist in providing medical supplies and caring for wounded soldiers from both sides. She was known to be present during the Sieges of Petersburg and Richmond, caring for the wounded from the Battle. It is conceivable, therefore, that she may have met or cared for Peter Steele after his sustained his gunshot wound at the Siege of Petersburg on 20 June 1864.



Peter's wound produced a partial paralysis of his leg muscle, and partial debilitation the rest of his life. After an extended period of treatment and recovery, Peter was transferred to Company C, Michigan 11th Infantry Reorganized Corps on 7 May 1865, which was assigned guard duty in East Tennessee for the Chattanooga and East Tennessee Railroad with Headquarters at Cleveland, Tennessee. That tour lasted until July, when the unit was moved to Knoxville until duty ended. Peter was discharged from service on 1 August 1865 in Providence, Rhode Island.

As soon as Peter was discharged, he came home to Michigan and immediately began seeing Minerva {Hetsler} Scribner, the widow of Charles William Scribner (brother of Thomas P. Scribner -- Peter's brother-in-law). Peter and Minerva were married at Minerva's mother's house in Utica, Macomb


EWELL'S CORPS
GETTYSBURG
RODES DIVISION
O'NEAL
DANIELS
RAMSEUR
VERSON
EARLY'S DIVISION
GORDON
Raines
JOHNSONS DIVISION
NICHOLLS
JONES
STEUART
WALKER
Position taken in Afternoon July 1st and held during the night.
Rebert
Spangler
Ritzline
Cooper
Butts Academy
Stallsmith
Burket
Dickson
Bull
Tavern
Plank
Andrews Barn
Berdan
Daily
6PM
Federal
Howard
Baxter
Norris Signal Sta.
Taney
Fed. Cavalry
Diehl
White Run
HILLS CORPS
HETH'S DIVISION
PENDER'S DIVISION
ANDERSONS DIVISION
McLAWS
1st CORPS
11th CORPS
CEMETERY HILL
2d CORPS
3d CORPS
5th CORPS
Coderus
Weikert
Beach Orchard
Sch.Ho
Run
Benner
Snyder
Bardinton
Brickert Group
Wortz
Miller
Sheely
Church
Baltimore
Bobbits
Rock Creek
Rodkey
Clapsaddle
Black
Little's Run
Schwartz
Lott
Straley
Currens
Beamer
Pengel
Miller
Rittling
Black
to Horners Mill
McCurdy
Guinn
ROUND TOP
Dr Runkle
Sherets
Shriver
Horner's Mill
Church
Dyer's Mill
BATTLE
PO
L.HOW

County, Michigan on 25 January 1866. The birth of their first child occurred soon after, it is thought, barely 9 months after Peter's discharge in Rhode Island.[9] Peter and Minerva thereafter made their home in Berlin, St. Clair County, Michigan.

Peter and Minerva gave birth to at least 7 children, but only two are known to have survived to adulthood -- Lewis Albert and the youngest, Clinton Richard. Clinton was born 12 June 1879 in Bay City, Michigan. Peter has been described as difficult -- :a devil to be with" -- probably as a result of his constant, nagging war wound. Peter's journey to the west coast was in fulfillment of a threat made to Minerva that he would remove the baby and "go so far away that you would never see us again." Peter absconded with Clinton aboard a train and arrived in Portland, Oregon

9 One intriguing question surrounds the birthdate of the oldest child of Minerva and Peter Steele. If the child was conceived during the furlough in early 1864 (and before their actual marriage), the child would have been born late 1864, and would have been reported as age 5 on the 1870 census [the ages are supposed to be reported as of June 1]. In fact, the 1870 federal census entry for the family in Berlin, St. Clair County, Michigan lists a male son named "Peter" age 5 years old. No child with that name appears in the 1880 census, which lists he family living in Bay City, Bay County, Michigan. There is, however, a listing in the family for a son named "Frederick" age 14 years old. (Note that Minerva's two sons from her first marriage are listed in both census entries; however, in 1870, they are both referred to by their middle names -- a practice both of them used throughout their lives. Similarly, Lewis Albert is referred to by his middle name "Albert" in the 1870 census and his proper name "Lewis" in 1880; from this we can infer that "Peter" was actually the middle name and Frederick the proper name for the oldest child Steele child, and he was either 4 or 5 years old in 1870.) In order for a male to be age 14 in the 1880 census, he must have been born before June 1866; the earliest a full-term child could have been born after Peter came home was 9 months after Peter arrived home after his Rhode Island discharge 1 August 1866 -- or sometime in May 1866 -- unless the child had been conceived during the prior winter furlough. In any event, for either census report to be correct, the child must have been conceived before the date of marriage of Minerva and Peter.

Images of a pipe carved for Peter Steele by a confederate soldier during the Battle of Fredericksburg, currently in the possession of Peter's gradson, Peter Aaron Steele of Orangevale, California.

Minerva {Hetsler}{Scribner} Steele

in about 1884. Peter's last known home with Minerva was in Portsmouth, a town outside Bay City, Michigan. After Peter's disappearance, Minerva made her home with her younger son, Jefferson T. Scribner -- who removed to Utica, Macomb County, Michigan in about 1888. Peter's pension file discloses that Minerva died 09 August 1890. [Editor Note: I have not been able to obtain any other documentation of her death and do not know where she is buried.]

Minerva Ann {Hetsler} {Scribner} Steele

After his arrival in Oregon, Peter purchased land at a place called "Lents" in Multnomah County. However, his civil war injury became more debilitating. In one affidavit filed in 1886, he described the effects: "[h]is whole side is weak with pain, nearly constantly and very disagreeable nervous twitchings. These keep him awake a great deal at night. He only gets naps of sleep. He is laid up about one fourth of the time because he can't work; working aggravates his nervousness. Peter was only receiving 2 dollars per month for his military disability pension; for several years before his death he sought an increase, but the claim was repeatedly denied because he could not produce "beyond a reasonable doubt" with medical evidence that the disability he suffered was strictly due to the gunshot wound and no other cause (for example, he had to disprove a venereal disease and all other causes). Finally, on 9 February 1891, while living in Clackamas County, Oregon, Peter succumbed from septice poisoning of a pelvic abscess resulting from his old wound.

When Peter realized he was soon going to die, he placed an ad in a local Portland newspaper to procure a foster family for young Clinton. Of course, had ne never been taken to Oregon, he would have had considerable

extended family in Michigan to care for the child. Unfortunately, though, Clinton was instead going to be essentially alone. His older brother Lewis was only eleven years older, and not able to take over his father's role. John and Mary Jewell answered the ad. They lived in Clark County, Washington, but were otherwise strangers. The Jewells agreed with Peter that Clinton would retain his father's surname, that he would be treated as a son in the family, and that at his majority he would be given a sum of money or a team and a rig. In that era, a guardianship without an accompanying income stream to support the child also included a form of indenture; in other words, Clinton was "bound out" to his guardian until his majority.

By all accounts, John was good to Clinton. He raised him on John's property in Clark County, Washington, and eventually deeded him some of his land holdings. Clinton was therefore raised away from his family -- with strangers -- in Clark County, Washington but came to regard the Jewells as his own family. Muriel Steele remembers that her own memories of "Grandma and Grandpa Jewell" were very pleasant. However, Grandpa Jewell never really approved of Clinton's marriage to Nancy Fenimore Gentis because she had been divorced -- whe was considered a "used woman."

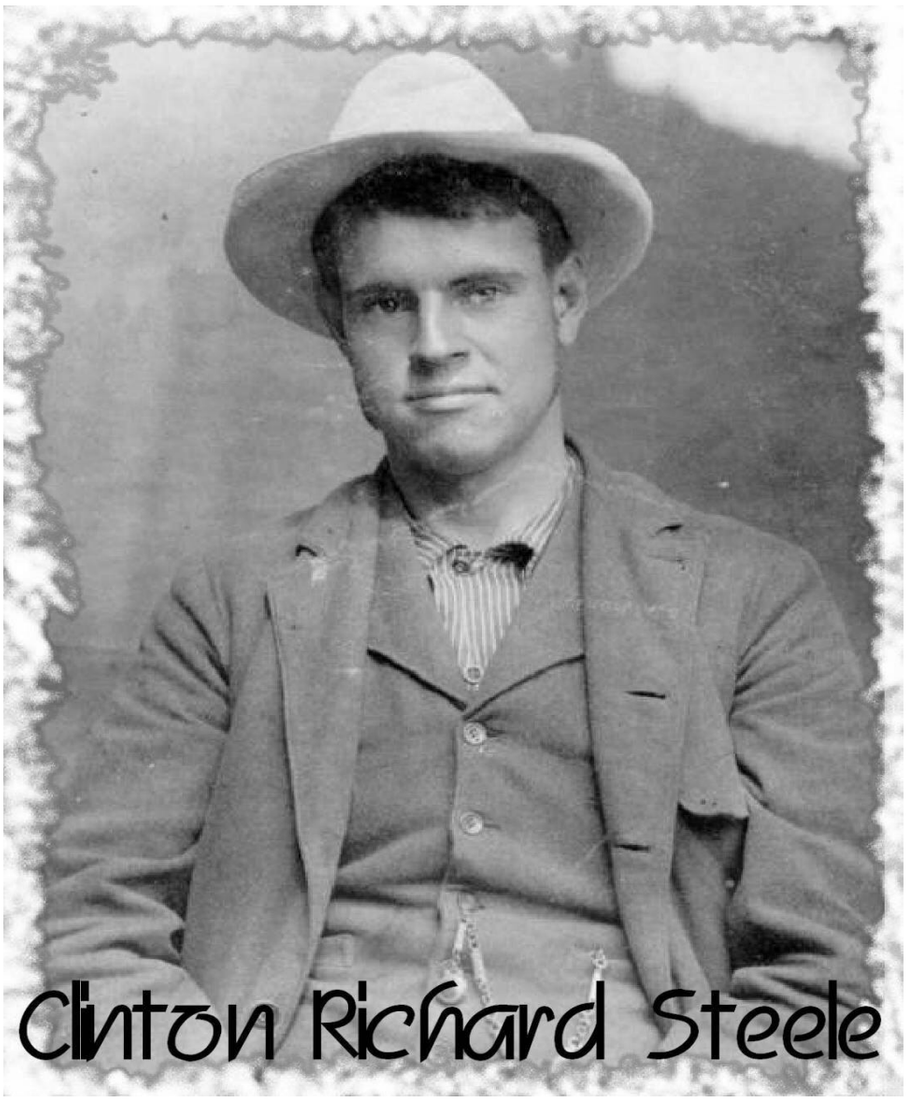
Lewis Albert Steele, Clinton's older brother; described himself as: 200 lbs, 6 ft tall, auburn hair, dark complexion, light blue eyes; "and the misses says I am good lookin'."

Part 2: Muriel's Memoires: Clinton Steele & The FENI-MORE Family

[Editor's Note: the following sequences of text are taken largely from the memoires written by Muriel Steele, daughter of Clinton and Nancy Fenimore. Her wriring is often in the first-person, and I have endeavored to leave it in tact as much as possible; so, I have used italics as the convention to denote my writing, in order to distinguish it from hers. Non-italicized segments, unless otherwise noted, are from Muriel's memoires.

It is to our eternal good fortune that Muriel Steele Smith decided at some point in her life to take a class at her local

community college that encouraged her to write about her family history. The chapters she wrote as part of that class project are incorporated here to the extent that we have been able to find and transcribe them. In addition to tales about her parents and grandparents, Muriel also included some very detailed segments about her own childhood. Muriel Steele described her father Clinton in her family memoires.



Papa grew up in Battle Ground, Washington. He was a storyteller, and we never quite knew how much of his stories to believe, but they surely made good listening. Doublin, a district consisting of a school, and a tiny Catholic church, and a lot of Irish people, was the setting for many of his stories. They would fill a book. The Jewells were strict Methodists, and the school at Doublin was a public school. Dad went there because it was close. Dad knew all the Irish kids, the Priests who came to the little church once a month. He could speak the brogue with any Irisher.

Grandpa was friendly with many of the local Indians. They visited at his farm on their way to or from town, so Dad learned the jargon. There is a story: My dad loved public speaking. He was very good, I remember. Grandma Jewell wanted him to be a preacher. So he was assisting the Minister at a church at Maple Grove, a small Protestant church in another community.

A young man, son of neighbors, got into a drunken brawl in Vancouver and killed a man. The young man was tried, found guilty of murder, and hanged. (They didn't fool around much in those days.) His parents, good God fearing people, claimed his body, but there was a problem – most cemeteries were in the church yards. No church would a allow a murderer to be buried in the cemetery. Clinton was furious. He offered to preach the funeral service for the young man. They buried him in a country cemetery with no church affiliations. He also preached himself out of any chance of ever becoming a minister.

Then he tried working for the railroad. An accident ended that. He tried to join the army during the Spanish American War. He didn't pass the physical, so he and a friend, George Baker, signed up as civilian employees, tending mules. A boat load of mules was being shipped from San Francisco to Manila. So they went. They were

two months at sea; it was very rough at times. In Manilla, they were to deliver the mules overland to a certain place. They started the drive. After a couple of days, they were attacked by natives. The mules were lost and the drivers struggled along in the jungle for a time. Eventually, Dad and George got back to Manilla. They hired on a freighter, and visited Hong Kong, Tokyo, and finally returned to San Francisco. They told such stories you never could imagine.

Dad decided to see California so he and George went to the Mexican border and started north. Dad picked up some Spanish as they worked with Mexicans.

Back home, he got the job driving the first R.F.D. in that area. So he met and married my mother with her kids and became an instant family man." Clinton married Nancy Elizabeth {Fenimore} Gentis in June 1907.

Nancy was the daughter of Nancy Elizabeth {Sharp} and Aaron Fenimore. Aaron had been a life-long farmer, although he had served as a medic during the Civil War. Aaron mustered into Captain Taylor's Company of the 18th Ohio Regiment Infantry as a Private for a three year term at 18 years of age on the 5th October in 1861 at Camp Wool, in Athens, Ohio. On 14 Oct 1861 he was at Camp Dennison. Aaron was listed on a muster out Roll dated 9 Nov 1864 at Camp Chase, Ohio; by that list, he was last paid to 30 Jun 1863. Aaron was transferred to the Veteran Reserve Corps on 17th of March in 1864 by General Order of the War Department No. 362 dated 29 Oct 1863. Aaron was hospitalized in Nashville, Tennessee beginning 22 May 1863, and for that reason did not appear on the Jan & Feb 1864 Muster Rolls. Aaron was 5 feet 6 inches tall and had a light complexion. At time of enlistment Aaron was a farmer. He had grey eyes and brown hair. He mustered out on the 9th of November in 1864 at Chevy Chase, Maryland.

Muriel Steele Smith's memoires describe how Aaron and Nancy Sharp met: Aaron joined the Union Army and was a medic. He met Nancy Sharp when she was fourteen years old and his outfit bivouacked at Nancy's father's farm. *Nancy's father Levi Sharp had been raised in the Knox Valley Hills located thirty miles from Cumberland Gap, Tennessee, and after her father's marriage to her mother Elizabeth Graves the couple originally lived in Claiborne County, Tennessee, near both of their parents. Levi Sharp then moved the family to Missouri with Elizabeth's father Anthony Graves and five or six of Elizabeth's younger siblings in the mid-1840's. They were on the road for six weeks, after which they settled in Nodoway County in Missouri. From Missouri Elizabeth and Levi moved to southern Illinois in the late 1840's where they stayed for two years. and Nancy was born during this time in Illinois on 3 Jan 1849. In the early 1850's the family returned to Tennessee and lived in Tazewell; the family then moved back to Missouri and in 1854 they bought Isaac and Rebecca Sharp's place in order to look after Levi's father. They stayed there for only two years. Levi and Elizabeth lost two children there in 1855, which caused Elizabeth to become depressed. Because of this the family moved back to Missouri in the late 1850's. In 1860 they were living in Nodaway, Nodaway County, Missouri. In 1870, they were enumerated in Everett Township, Cass County, Missouri. By 1873 they were living in Newton County; three years later Levi died of pneumonia at the age of 62. With some reasonable certainty, we can presume that Nancy's father's farm on which she met Aaron Fenimore was located somewhere in Missouri. This is further buttressed by the date and location of Nancy and Aaron Fenimore's marriage, which occurred on 17 June 1866 in Savannah, Andrew County, Missouri.*

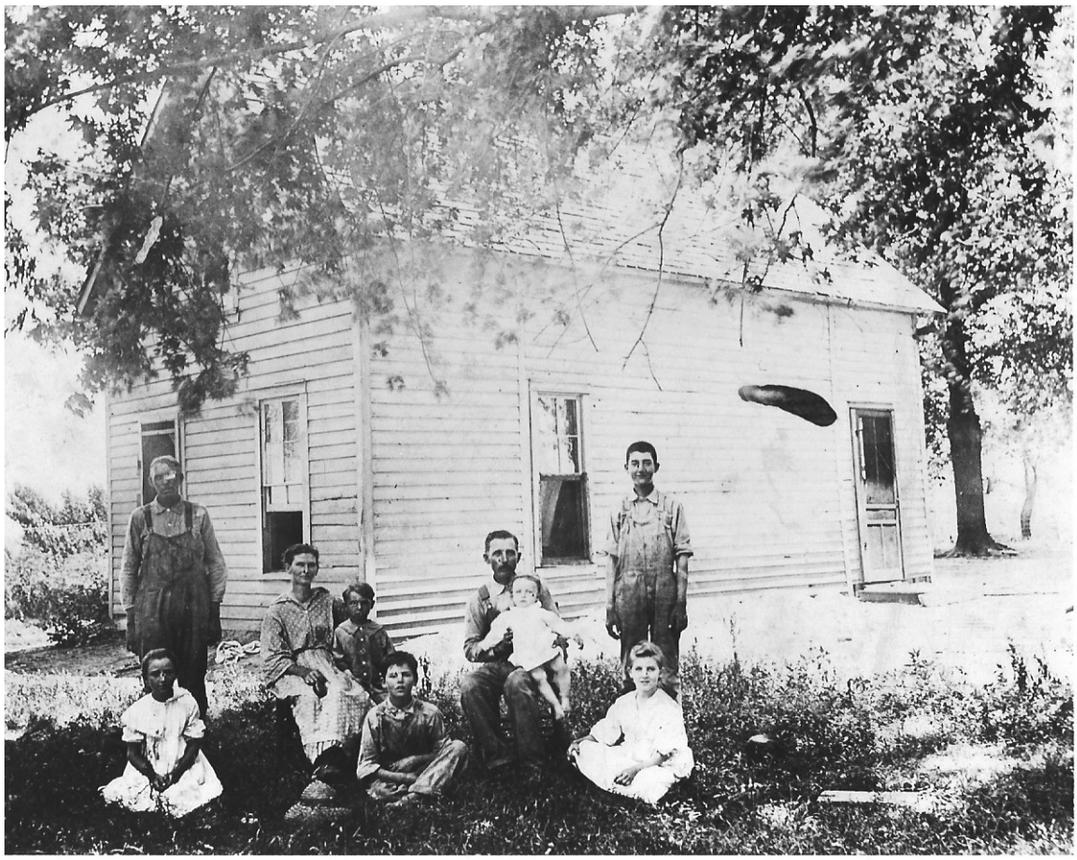
Aaron and Nancy first lived in Andrew County, Missouri after the Civil War; they lived in Neosho County, Missouri in 1875 when their son Edward Marvel Fenimore was born, and shortly thereafter moved to Kansas; they were living in Sterling, Reno County, Kansas in 1880.

Muriel's memoires contain some information about Aaron and Nancy's early married life:

Nancy Elizabeth Steele
August 25, 1917

My grandmother told us that her family had freed their slaves many years before and some of her brothers fought for the South and two fought for the North. Those were indeed trying times. No wonder Nancy said yes when, a year later, young Aaron came to claim her hand in marriage. Aaron had a job with the railroad as a section boss. They gradually worked their way westward, which accounts for the children being born in Missouri, Kansas, Utah, New Mexico, California, and Washington.

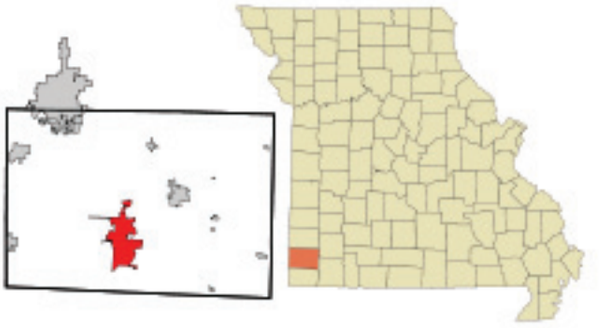
Mama was born Nancy Elizabeth Fenimore in 1872 in Missouri. She was the third child of Nancy and Aaron Fenimore. At that time she had two brothers, Milton and Levi. Eight more children were born of that union, and one child died in infancy. The baby of the family, Stella, contracted scarlet fever, which left her partly deaf. All of the children grew to adults in good health, which was not the norm for those days.



Mama told interesting stories of the winds in Kansas,

Photo of the Aaron and Nancy Fenimore home in Neosho County, Missouri, in which their son Edward Marvel was born in 1875. The home was rented out by Aaron and Nancy after moving west from Missouri.

This photo taken in 1917, Sharp cousins left to right: Eva Marie Sharpe, Ray Sharpe [in overalls], Norah Ben Sharpe, Paul Sharpe, Denver Sterling Sharp [seated]; Robert Lee Sharpe, Hubert Earl Sharpe [baby], Lewis Ray Sharpe, Sarah Mae Sharpe [seated].



Red Highlight shows location of Neoshow County, within Missouir; inset red shows location of city of Neosho within the county.

living in Adobe huts in New Mexico, and playing with Mexican, Indian, and colored children. As she grew up, the family moved always westward toward the Willamette Valley. There were times when corn meal bread and molasses were their only food, and buffalo chips, picked up on the prarie were their only fuel. Grandma [Nancy Sharp] was tiny, four feet ten, and weighed barely one hundred pounds. Grandfather [Aaron Fenimore] delivered all the babies and doctored everyone.

They finally reached San Francisco where they took a boat to Portland. They had friends in Washington, so they went there next and took up a donation land claim in Clark County on the north fork of Lewis River near Lewisville.

[Aaron Fenimore was listed in the 1890 Veterans' Census; Oregon, Clackamas County, Cascade Precinct, Microfilm Page 2.] Aaron took up that donation land claim in Dollars Corner, Clark County, Washington (recorded as #4031, Section 32, Township 4n Range 2E). The front left of the homestead is at the main cross road in Dollars Corner which now has a Realty Agency on that corner of the property as well. In 1886 Shortly after his daughter Dora was born in Dollars Corner, Washington, Aaron traded the homestead for a team of horses and a wagon and moved to Sand Hill, Oregon (now called Sandy) and by 1890 was living in Cherryville, in Clackamas County, Oregon.

Grandfather got down to clearing land and farming and the children started to school. Grandma never went to school, so Grandfather had taught her to read and write after they were married. It was very important that all the children be literate. Mama went to the third reader, but she wrote a nice hand. There was so much work to do to survive, that once a child could read, write and figure he or she saw little of school. Everyone worked very long hours.

In 1891 Aaron died while digging a well on their farm near Gresham, Oregon. The well contained methane gas. He was down about twenty feet digging away. Suddenly he gave the signal to come up. About ten feet up, the line went slack. He fell out of the

bucket back down into the well. His head struck a rock, which caused his instant death. When they got him to the surface, he was dead. On the 4th of June in 1891 the newspaper "Daily Oregon Statesman" had an article that said "Aaron Fenamore[sic], who lived near Cherryville, was on Sunday engaged with a neighbor in digging a well. After being in the well a short time, Fenamore asked to be hauled up, as he felt very faint. Just before reaching the top of the well, which is fifty feet deep, Fenamore let go and fell to the bottom, stricking on his breast. As soon as possible he was taken up, but life was extinct. Fenamore was an old soldier and a man of family, who were dependent on him."

Aaron is buried in Belle Passi Cemetery located on Belle Passi road about two miles from the city center off of front street of Woodburn, Marion County, Oregon. Aaron is buried in Section 5, lot 007. Buried right next to Aaron is his Aunt Sarah Fenimore (Bennett) who died 18 months prior to Aaron. [Sarah is Aaron's father Ebenezer's sister.] His headstone is about 3 1/2 foot tall and is made out of grey stone. It is 1 1/2 inches thick with a conventional curve across the top. On the top front of the headstone above any writting is a pair of hands holding each other. At the bottom below Aarons birth and death information is the saying "Gone But Not Forgotten."

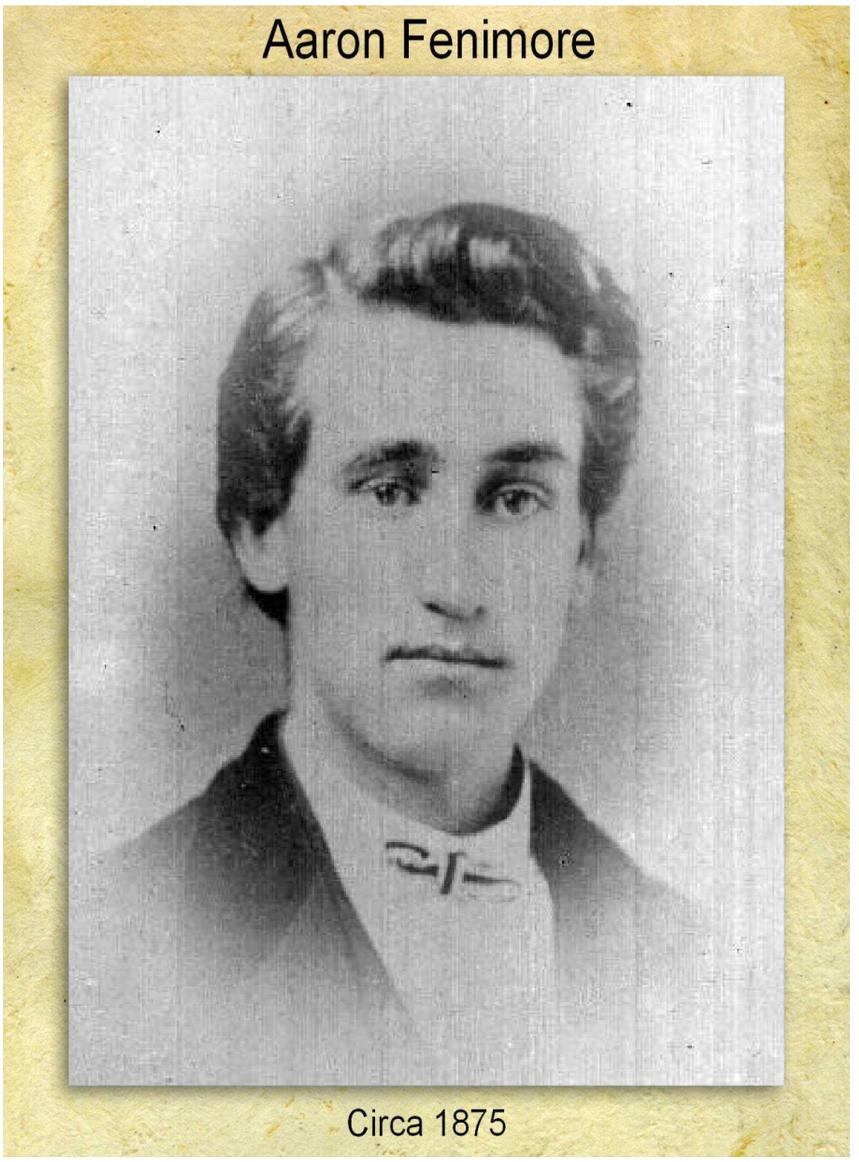
Muriel recounted the effect on Aaron's widow. Grandma was totally devastated. Her baby was ten months old, she had two more little ones under five, and some kids in school. Her three older sons helped her for a while. One of her brothers helped her, too. He gave her a team and buckboard wagon.

After Aaron's death, Nancy began receiving a Civil War widow's Pension based on Aaron's service. Shortly after Aaron's death in 1891, Nancy had moved her children to Woodburn, Oregon. She later relocated to Russelville, Multnomah County, Oregon. [According to his grandson Lloyd Fenimore shortly after his death there was a forest fire that swept through the area and had not the family left the area they most likely would have died in the fire.]

About 1892 Nancy began living with Aaron's 1st cousin Joseph Bennet. Joseph had left his wife and children alone beginning about that time. Joseph left Nancy later on and returned home for a while. around 1893. The state of Oregon removed the children that were living at home at the this time because of the living arrangements. Her Civil War pension was also discontinued when she began living with Joe Bennett. A letter written by Joseph's wife Sallie Hildreth stated that Joseph told her that he had taken a buggy whip to Nancy's children as discipline. Joseph soon left, and Nancy was able to recover both her children and her pension. However, Nancy was writing weekly letters to Joseph, which were intercepted by Sallie. By 1900 Nancy was living in Asotin Co. Washington.

Muriel's recollections continued: along came an entertaining, handsome chap by the name of Henry Symonds. Grandma fell in love with this man. Grandma sold her place and they packed kids, and camping equipment into the light wagon. They came to see Mama. Henry persuaded Elmer they needed a change, so he sold everything but the team and wagon, and the whole outfit set out for sunny California. That was a long, difficult trip. The men worked a while, here and there. They finally got to Sunnyvale, where Grandma and Henry Symonds wre married and then my sister Viola was born. She is four years younger than Hubert. When she was two months old, they started back to Washington. They were a year on the way. I know they stopped for several months in Eureka. Aunt Dora was married there."

Nancy was married to Henry Symonds on 8 Dec 1901 in Sunnyvale, Santa Clara, California. The mariage took place in Sunnyvale, Santa Clara county, California on 8 Dec 1901 by Pastor E. Simpson Robertson, Pastor of Mayfield M. E. Church, Mayfield, California. After their marriage, Nancy reclaimed her children; she and her new husband were at one time living near Sandy, Oregon. The family stopped for several months in Eureka, California, where Dora Fenimore was married. They were in Seattle by 1906; on 21 Feb 1906 the couple lived



in Georgetown (near Seattle, WA) when Nancy and her husband decided to move to Battle Ground, Washington and loaded all they could onto a wagon. So Nancy and her children boarded a train and headed South from Seattle. Her husband was to follow by team and buckboard with the household goods. Henry took the team of horses, harness and wagon and all the money belonging to them including the proceeds of Nancy's property sale and as soon as the train departed the station he decided to head another direction; he took a different route and kept on going and was never heard from again. That was the last time she or anyone she knew saw Henry Symonds.

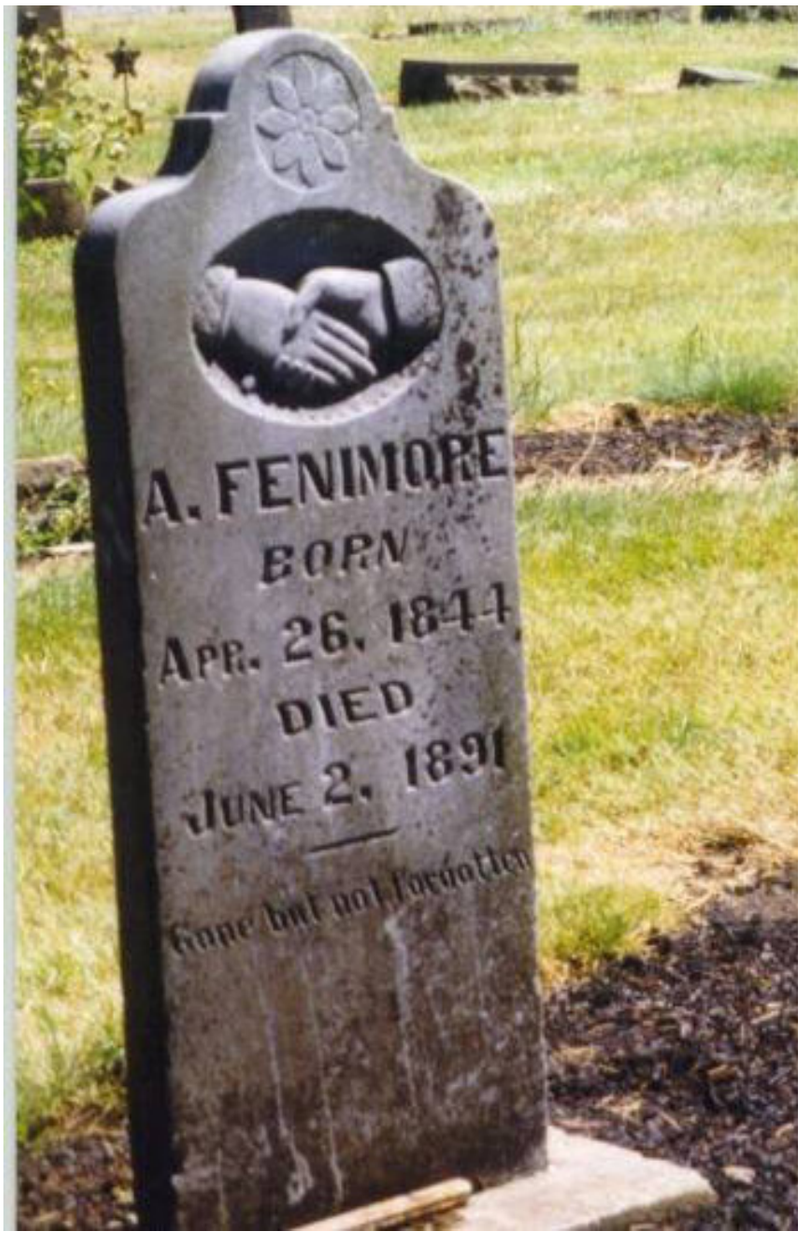
Muriel describes the result: Gone was Grandma's team & wagon, money she had gotten for her place – and worst of all, her widows pension. It was a sad day. Her sons again came to her assistance. The younger boys were growing up and they too helped. Mama & Elmer lived close by."Nancy later received a reinstated widows pension, bought a home in Battle Ground, and lived there until she passed on in 1932. She was divorced from Henry Symonds on 21 Feb 1921 in Vancouver, Clark, Washington. Nancy's last name was restored to Fenimore. Her son Levi lived with her until she died.

Family legend holds that Nancy was standing on a chair to hang a picture or calendar when her son Levi accidently discharged a 30-40 Kraig rifle along side of her and she fell off the chair and never regained consciousness. Her death certificate discloses that her true cause of death was carcinoma of stomach and liver with contributory cause of arteriosclerosis. Because she was never autopsied and the body was simply presented to the authorities, it is impossible to determine the truth of the matter.

She and other relatives are buried 3 miles south of Dollars Corner, Clark County, Washington near Battle Ground in the Wilson Bridge Cemetery -- a small cemetery in which she is located in the far right 1/3 of way up from the road and 6 or 7 graves from the end.

Muriel recounted in her memoires the family tradition about the first marriage for her mother {Aaron and Nancy's daughter Nancy Elizabeth Fenimore). When Mama was fifteen, Grandfather arranged a marriage with a young man [Elmer Gentis] who was steady, hardworking, a good farmer, honest and twice Mama's age.

Mama never talked much about her early relationship with her husband. In the first year of marriage my brother Norman was born. Two years later, little Mary was born. She died of whooping cough three months later. The next year Ella was born.



One day Elmer, Mama's husband, went to town in a heavy farm wagon to sell some grain, and buy supplies. He took little Norman, the applie of his eye, with him. It was dark when they arrived home. Elmer stopped the team at the gate to the barn, tucked the sleeping babe warm on the seat, climbed down, opened the gate, checked the team through the gate, closed it, and climbed back to the high seat. The little boy was gone. Elmer found him in the roadway, unconscious. He had bounced off the seat and an iron rimmed wheel of the heavy wagon had run over his body. He was badly injured, but no bones were broken. His recovery was slow. He grew slowly. Two years later my sister Lucy was born, but Norman continued in ill health. Three years passed, and the boy grew very sick.

Elmer had become more and more withdrawn and silent. He started working as a logger in the winter; after the fall farming was done, he would be gone for months at a time, returning in the spring to farm.

Grandma and Grandfather had proved up on their claim, sold out, and moved to Oregon. Mama was very much alone. Elmer's mother was helpful, but Mama missed her father and brothers very much. When Norman got so bad, mama wrote to her father, and he sent Uncle Levi to see what could be done. Levi brought a circuit riding doctor with him. The doctor listened, looked, and pronounced internal injuries. The only way he could know for sure was to operate, he said. So, operate he did – on the kitchen table. Mama held the lamp with a reflector; Eight year old Norman died on the table.

Mama mourned the death of her two children for all the years of her life. When people talk of going back to the good old days, the simple life and living naturally, I remember Mama and say to myself, 'No thanks.'

The year after Norman died, Hubert was born. Elmer would have nothing to do with the baby and he even said it wasn't his child. He moved the family to another farm, continued his silence when he was home, and was

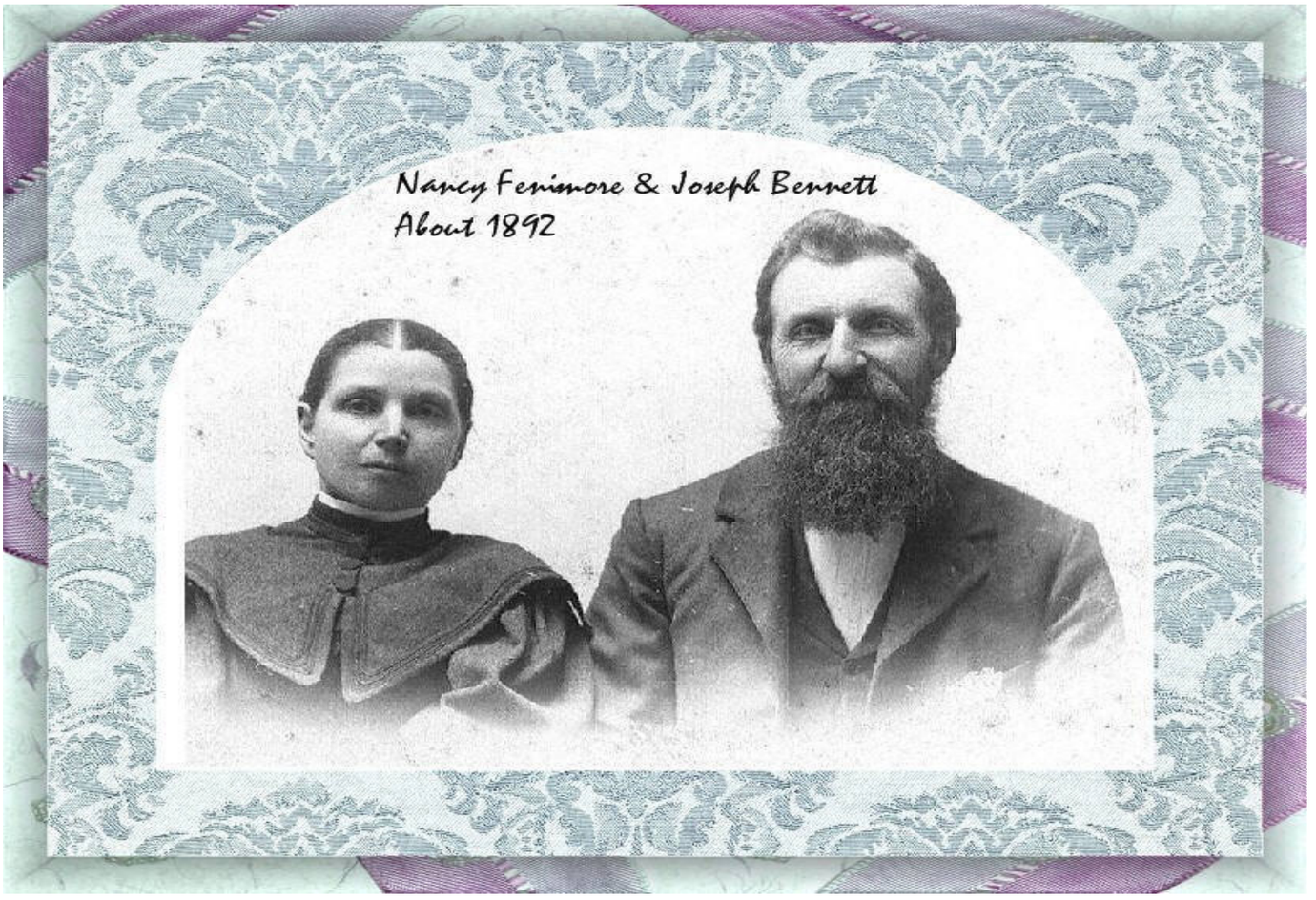
away much of the time.

Mama was a good shot and she burchered deer, hogs, calves, and chickens. She raised a garden. Still there were things needed from the store, such as coffee, salt, sugar, shoes, stockings, and material for clothes. When things got desperate, she would hitch the team to the wagon, take some wheat or oats to the flour mill, have some ground into flour, and trade the rest for merchandise. Elmer was always furious when she did that, and sometimes he locked the grainery. Mama would then chop the door down and sell enough grain to live on.

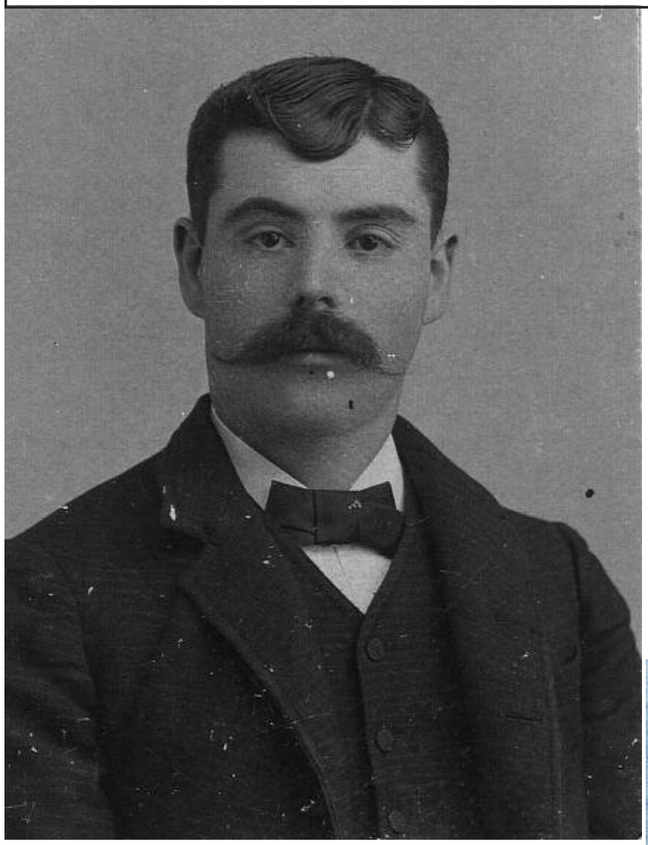
Shortly after Norman died, Grandfather [Aaron Fenimore] was killed in an accident. By the time that their grandmother Nancy Sharp Fenimore had moved to Battle Ground, Elmer Gentis and his wife Nancy lived close by but Elmer no longer farmed. The Gentis girls were now young ladies.

Muriel describes the events: Elmer went back to his old ways. Mama made a decision. Her brothers agreed to help her, so they rented a big house and Mama moved in with Grandma, got a job housekeeping where she could have her little girl with her, and sued for divorce. Divorce was a real dirty word. It simply was not done. Elmer could not believe it. He went to Grandma. Friends and relatives brought pressure on her, so Mama and the children moved back with Elmer. One month later, Mama left again. She said that she simply could not live with Elmer. She returned to her housekeeping job, and she filed again for divorce.

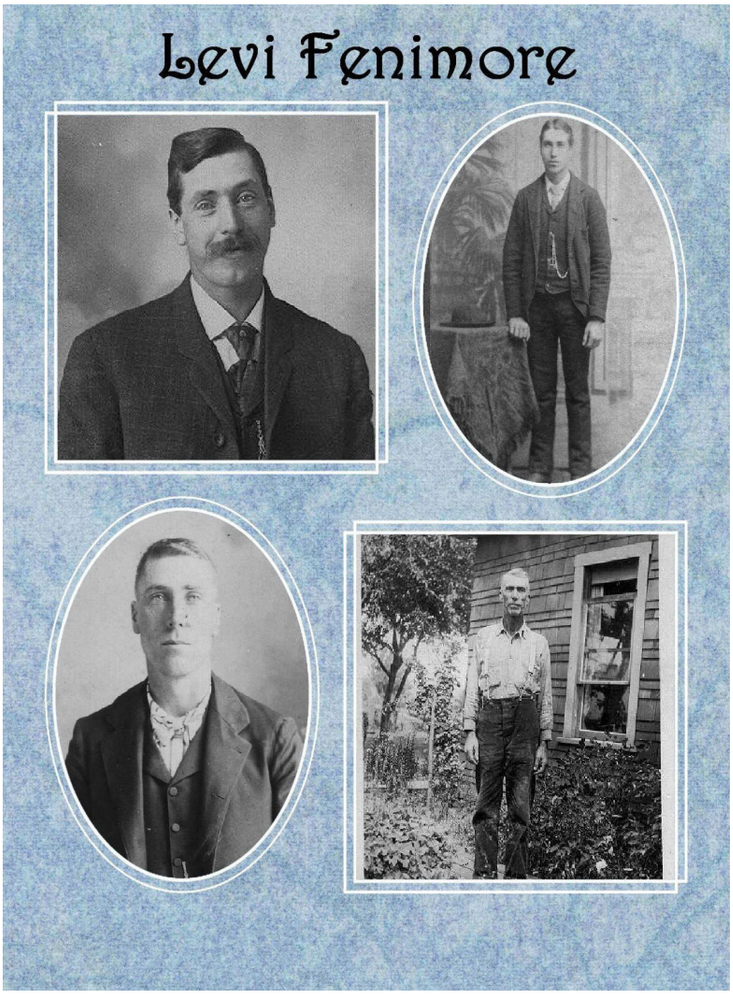
For two months things looked pretty good then, to her horror, Mama realized she was pregnant. No judge would award a divorce to a pregnant woman. Pregnant women couldn't work. It wasn't decent. Mama knew



The Fenimore Family Children, in birth order:



Levi Ross Fenimore: [6 Sep 1870, in Andrew County, Missouri - 21 Jan 1946, in Battleground, Clark County, Washington; never married] was a confirmed bachelor, but left a legacy of having been generous to a fault with needy family members -- both with his time and his resources. He lived and worked in the Battleground vicinity his entire life; he resided with his mother in her later years, and was always available to help Clinton and family when they needed help.

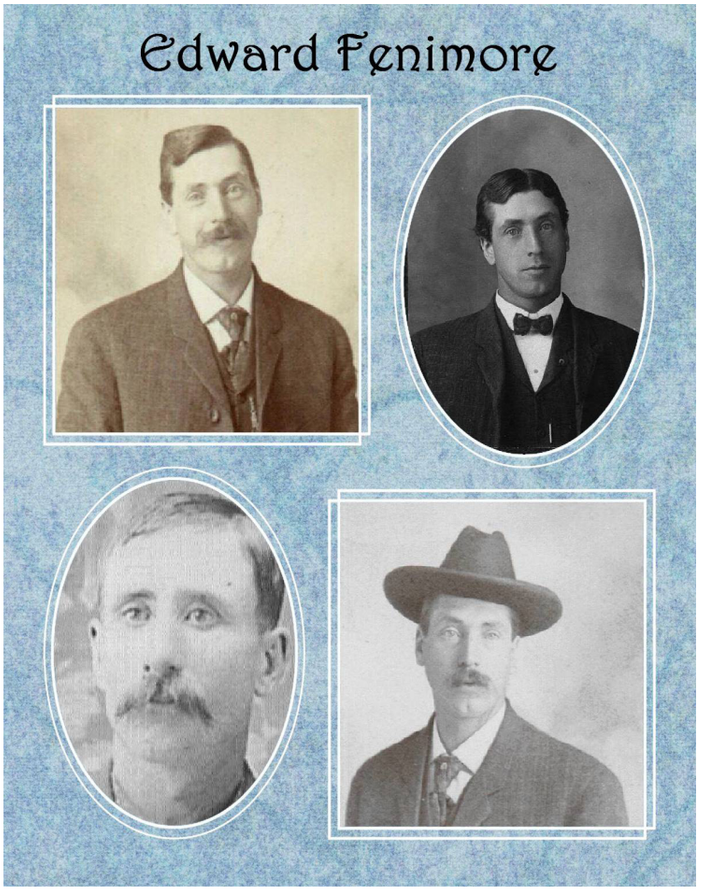


John Milton Fenimore [6 Aug 1868, Andrew County, Missouri - 27 Aug 1946, Battleground, Clark County, Washington; married Edna Fessenden, 28 May 1899 in Cora, Latah, Idaho. Stories about "Milton" [as he was known to the family] are not flattering; he was apparently not an easy person to get along with, and mostly cut wood for a living and in later years survived on Welfare. He always wore bib overalls and chambrey shirts. He was hard of hearing even with a hearing aid according to nephew Lloyd Fenimore. Edna eventually left and divorced him, because by 1906 she had become the first wife of Milton's brother Edward. John never got over Edward and Edna's "betrayal."

Nancy Elizabeth Fenimore ["Lizzie"; 28 Jul 1872, in Rice County, Missouri[1] - 1939, in Bayside, Humboldt County, California; married (1) Elmer Gentis, 12 Feb 1888 in Clackamas County, Oregon; married (2) Clinton Richard Steele, June 1907, in Battleground, Clark County, Washington]. Lizzie was the mother of 7 children by Elmer Gentis, and 5 more by Clinton Steele; All but two survived to at least early adulthood -- a remarkable accomplishment for her times. Lizzie lived to see the women's suffrage movement succeed in earning her the right to vote, which she relished.

1 Editor Note: there is no Rice County, Missouri; this information was taken from her death certificate; there is a Rice County, Kansas, and that is perhaps the correct location; it is also possible that she was born during the residence at Andrew County, Mixxouri

Edward Marvel Fenimore [6 Sep 1875, in Neosho, Newton, MO - 7 Jan 1967, in Kelso, Cowlitz, WA; married (1) Edna Fessenden, divorcee of his brother John Milton, on 20 Jul 1906, in Portland, OR; (2) Claudia Green [nee Farmer], 18 Nov. 1918, in Vancouver, Clark, WA;] Occupations: Furniture builder and Millwright; Edward was an even tempered man who was soft spoken. Edward always dressed in a shirt and a tie in his latter years even on weekends. Edward moved to Potlatch, Idaho in 1907 and lived there until his wife Edna died July 14, 1910 after being administered the wrong medication by a doctor. Claudia Green was a mail-order bride from the midwest, and was abusive to Edward's children -- unbeknownst to Edward until years later.

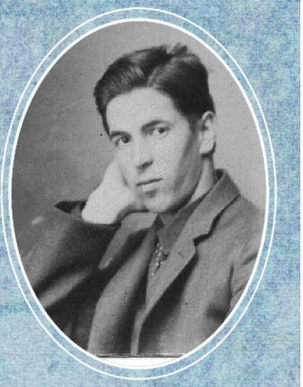


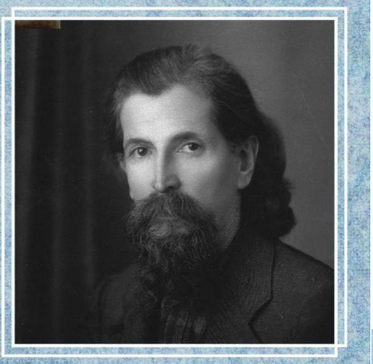
Flora Alice Fenimore [22 Nov 1881, in Portland, Multnomah County, Oregon - 11 Dec 1972, in Petaluma, Sonoma County, California; married Charles Edwin Potter]. Charles worked as a fireman; Flora and Charles bore their children, lived out their lives and both died in Petaluma, California. They had two daughters and one son, all of whom married and produced grandchildren. Most of the Potter family stayed in or near Petaluma, north of the San Francisco area..

Mary Katie Fenimore [25 Oct 1877, in Coffeyville, Montgomery County, Kansas - 7 July 1974, in Portland, Multnomah County, Oregon; married (1) Thomas Albert Evans as his 2d wife in 1892; after his death in 1910, she married William Harrison.] Thomas had had a daughter when he married Katie, and then together they had 7 more children. Tom was a plumber, and the Evans family lived in Mt. Tabor, in Portland;

Not Pictured: Frederick Fenimore [18 Oct 1879, in Missouri - 10 Aug 1880, in Kansas], died as an infant.

Orpheus Fenimore

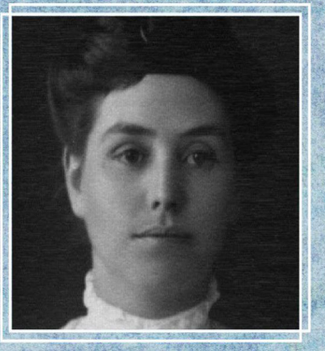




Orpheus Fenimore [6 Jun 1883, Portland, Multnomah County, Oregon - Jan 1868, in Foley, Bardwin, Alabama; married [wife unidentified], Stories about "Orphy" are not flattering; he thought he was a ladies man and he made passes at some of the female members of the family. He was warned away by male family members from making advances toward their spouses -- which were very forward as well as common until he finally had to be convinced by family members to depart the area at threat of loss of life and limb and he ended up in Alabama. He returned for a 91st birthday party in Edwards honor just before Edwards' death and within a year of his own death. Orpheus had a wife and five to seven children in Alabama, and had completely white hair and beard at the time.he died.

Dora Alice Fenimore [8 Jan 1886, in Battleground, Clark County, Washington - 23 May 1985, in Whitethorn, California; married in Eureka, California to Robert Dale Sutherland.] Dora was born on her fathers homested 3 miles west of Battle Ground, WA at a hamlet called Dollars Corner which is 20 miles from Vancouver, WA. Dora lived most of her life in Northern California in Humbolt county. In her early married life she lived in Ettersberg and in the Humbolt Red Woods then to the Whitethorn area where her husband ran a shingle mill. She and her husband reared a family of at least 9 children.

Dora Fenimore



Wallace Fenimore [23 May 1888, Sandy Ridge, Oregon - 03 September 1954, Portland, Multnomah County, Oregon; married 1st Hazel Emma Jackson sometime before 1913; she died on 20 February 1913 in Battleground, Clark County, Washington; thereafter, Wallace married Celia Smith on 12 August 1921; together, they had three daughters -- Dorothy Irene Fenimore, born 6 June 1922, Viola Catherine Fenimore, born 22 August 1923, and Hazel Lorraine Fenimore, born 10 December 1924; all three girls were born in Clark County, Washington. Wallace lived most of his life on his 37 1/2 acre stump ranch as a farmer and part time logger in the Charter Oak district near Battle Ground Washington.

Stella Fenimore , the youngest child of Aaton and Nancy, was born 13 August 1890 in Cherryville, Clackamas County, Oregon; she married Hirum Lewis Batchelder in January 1919 in Washington State. [Hirum is a direct lineal descendant of Rev. Stephen Batchelder, discussed extensively in Section 1.] Hirum and Stella lived out their lives in Clark County, Washington, where Hirum died on 26 April 1969, and Stella followed on 13 February 1984.

Nancy Feniimore & some of her children, About 1894: l to r == Edward, Orpheus, Flora, Nancy. Wallace; in front -- Stella

that in another two months she would be out of work. Also, her brothers were getting a little tired of supporting so many people.

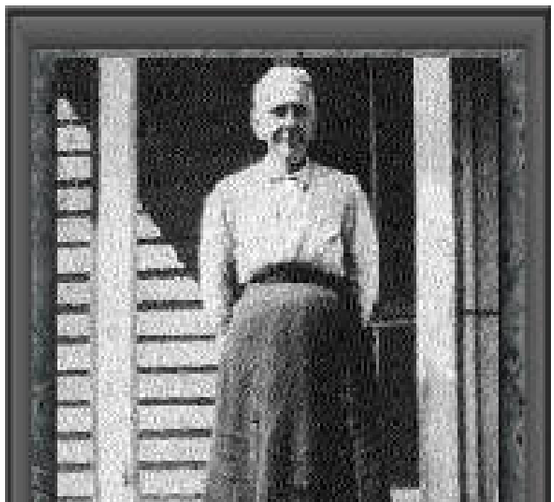
Now in those days on the farm, when Elmer was gone so much, and Mama and the children were so much alone, they had made some fast friends with neighbors Jane and Henry Womelsdorf. Mama and Jane were very close. In desperation, mama wrote to Jane about her situation, stating 'I just don't know what is to become of us.'

A couple of weekslater, a buckboard, drawn by a span of mules driven by Henry Womelsdorf, stopped at the house. Mama's first thought was that something had happened to Jane. After greetings, Henry said, 'No, no Lizzy. I've just come to take you and the children home.'

That is exactly what he did, Mama, her four children, and what personal possessions they could pack into that small wagon went home with Henry to his wife Jane and their eight children. It was ninety miles away which was a very long way by horse and wagon." When I think of "friend," in my mind its first name is Aunt Jane and Uncle Henry, whom we all knew and loved dearly. Mama stayed with Aunt Jane and Uncle Henry and she gave birth to a beautiful baby girl who she named Mildred. It took a year after Mildred was born to get her divorce.

Now, Mama had known Papa as a young roudy before she left Clark County. Now he was an older roudy, seven years yonger (than Mama). At that time he drove the rural mail route, so he saw Mama often. That seemed a secure job, and so when he came a courting, was crazy about the baby, and would accept the other children, Mama said yes. They were married. In the next eight years poor Mama had five more children. My older sisters did not like my father. They were afraid of him. They said that in those early years of marriage he was loud, bossy,

possessive of Mama's time, rude, crude, inconsiderate, and at times very mean. It looked like Mama had jumped from the frying pan into the fire.



Muriel recounts early memories in her family, including the first time her mother voted. Our home was always alive with political discussion. Uncles, neighbors, friends, Papa and Mama discussed the political issues of the day. Papa read everything he could get his hands on. Women were voting for the first time. Papa wanted to be very sure Mama was very well informed on the important issues of the day.

Electrion day arrived. Papa proudly escorted mama to the polling place. When they arrived hom after voting, Papa was jubilant. "We voted for this one, or that one." Mama said not a word until Papa asked "Didn't we, Nan?" Mama answered, "Speak for yourself, Clinton. You made me aware of issues, told me how you thought I should vote. But when I was in the polling booth, it was my decision. Mine alone." Poor papa wilted.

Somewhere near this time Grandpa & Grandma Jewell moved from the farm to a smaller place. Grandpa had been ailing a long while and now he needed more care than Grandma could give hi, so his niece and her husband. Guy and Zora Long came to live with them and help care for Grandpa. Ih return, they were to receive the small farm on which they lived. This worked out well for my grandparents, I think, but for my family it was an end of an era. Gone was our freedom to see Grandma when we wished. Gone was her generosity, her influence.

Eventually, Grandpa died and Grandma went to Oregon to live with her sister. She visited twice, I think. Dad wrote to her, and went to see her a few times. But it was a long trip. We hardly knew when she died.

About this time my brother Richard got sick. He was not a robust child, but he was so sick that for many days it was touch and go. Dr. Steckle came sometimes & only muttered, chewed his cagar stub, shook his head. We were so scared. We spoke in whispers.

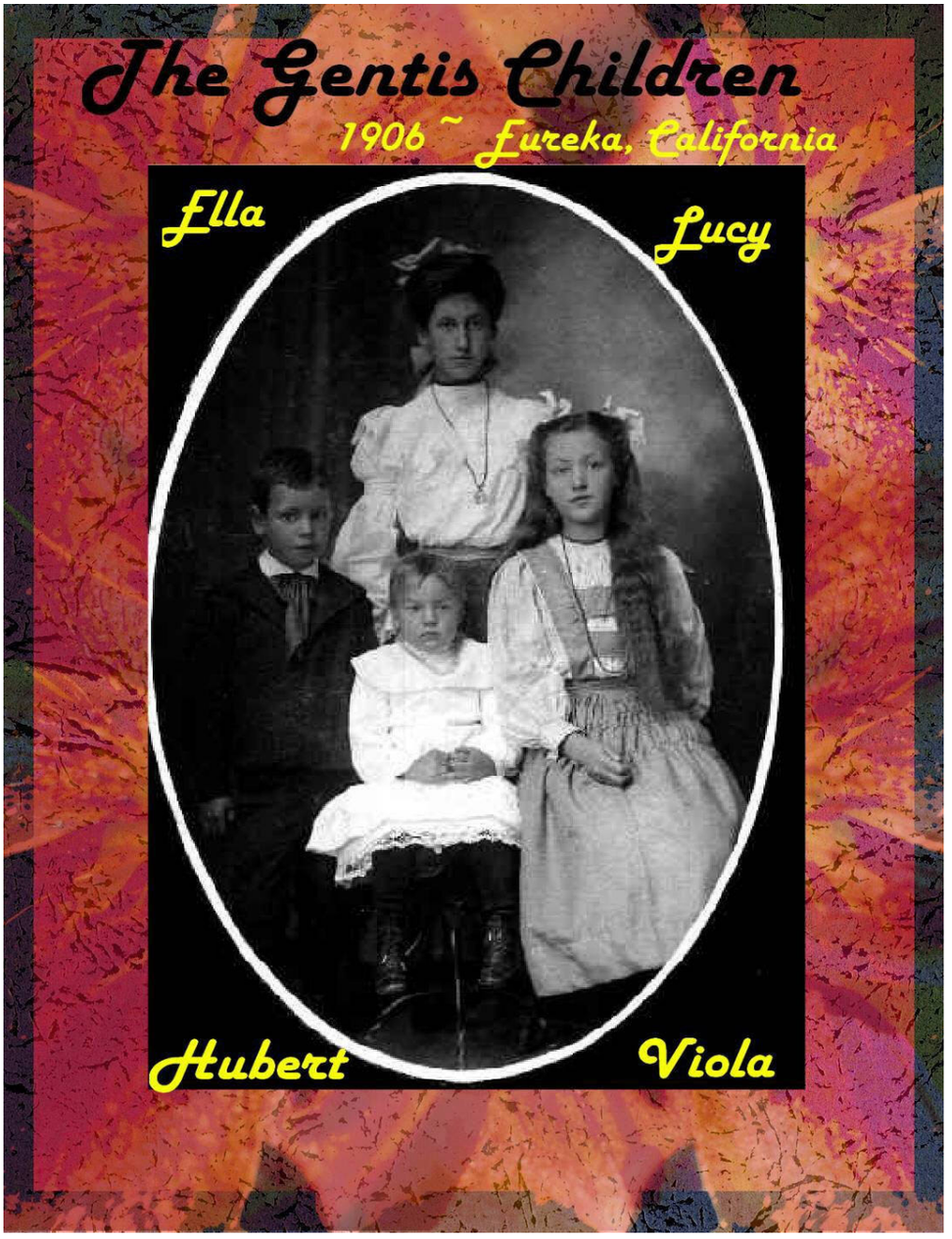
Richard's recovery was slow, and he had rheumatism ever after. Years later, when he entered the army, he was asked when he had T.B. He never had but he must have had a severe case of pneumonia. He had scar tissue in his lungs. I think mama must have been an excellent nurse to pull him through.

My dad was a great reader. And, while Mother sewed and mended, he read aloud to her. If we were present, we were required to be quiet, so we heard much. As a small child, I was treated to Grimm's Fairy Tales,

biographies of Benjamin Franklin, George Washington, Abraham Lincoln, and Theodore Roosevelt. Also stories of the French revolution and the American revolution, the Civil War, and the Spanish American war. Also the Sunday funnies, the Katzenjammer Kids, Maggie and Jaggs and Kids.

Muriel recalled one special chilhood trip the family made to the circus, courtesy of the generosity of Uncle Lewis Steele. We were going to the Barnum and Bailey Circus in Portland. Crammed into the rear seats of a livery rig were Mama, holding the baby, Richard, myself, Peter, Dixie and Mildred. Viola, my older sister, sat between papa and Uncle Lou [Lewis Steele] on the front seat. Papa was driving the team.

We had started before dawn. It was a very long journey. The excitement, preparation and early hour had left us tired and sleepy. As the rig lurched and crunched over the rough road we slept and grumbled intermittently. We stopped here and there to walk about, go potty, and eat. Passing through small towns, over creeks and rivers, and stopping to visit briefly with my parents acquaintances was all very exciting. We reached Vancouver at last, when we stopped at Grandma & Grandpa Mickey's, childhood friends of Papa's. We had a basket lunch, changed clothes and on to Portland. Crossing the Columbia on the ferry was the most exciting event in my life for quite a few years.



I don't remember very clearly the next few days. Mama and Richard stayed with her sister, Aunt Katy [Evans]. The rest of us stayed at a family hotel with Papa and Uncle Lou. I do remember that the proprietor of the hotel was Japanese and they had twin babies.

I was very afraid of the elephants and cried and spilled my soda pop on my dress. We laughed at the clowns and were breathless as we watched the trapeze artists.

Uncle Lou [Lewis Steele] was a longshoreman.

1912, Age 18

1906, Age 12

Lucy Gentis

Therefore, he stayed in Portland. The trip home was long and tiring. Papa was cross and the rain came. It got dark. Then Papa had a spill. He fell off the seat. Mama stopped the team, and somehow Papa recovered enough to get back into the rig. He was terribly sick, though, so mama drove. We got home, and Mama had to return the team and rig to the livery stable. The girls were worried about Mama walking the mile and a half home alone. Everyone was very happy when Mama walked in the door. Dr. Green, who ran the livery stable, had brought her home in the rig. The whole trip was Uncle Lou's treat.

The family pleasures and struggles were keenly and deftly described in Muriel's chronology, including a passage about picking Trilliums and having difficulty with her brother Stuart's milk formula.

Picking trilliums in early summer was always a pleasant outing. But at six o'clock in the morning, before breakfast? I could not understand why Uncle Lou hurried us out. Where was mama?

We went clear up to the Denison place to the woods. We played, took maps, ate some goodies Uncle Lou had in his huge pockets, and then we picked trilliums, arm loads of them. It was hot and I was tired so Uncle Lou perched me atop his huge shoulders for the return trip home. About a quarter of a mile from our house we met a neighbor boy who always teased us.

As Bill approached us he said 'You have a new baby brother, and his name is Stuart Miles. How many miles do you suppose he's walked?'

Clinton Steele was a rural mail carrier in Battle Ground, Clark County, Washington, beginning about the turn of the century; this photo was taken circa 1930.

We thought he was teasing again, so we yelled back, and threw rocks at him until Uncle Lou put a stop to that. When we reached home, sure enough there was Stuart Miles, tiny and blanket-wrapped, beside Mama in her bed.

Stuart was not a thrifty baby. Mama couldn't nurse him, and our cow's milk didn't agree with him. Mama was very worried. He was living on barley water and losing weight.

Mr. French was a batchelor who was renting my grandfather's dairy farm. He stopped by one day because he had heard about the difficulty with the baby's diet. He brought a small pail of milk from his nurse cow. He was sure this milk was just right for our baby. It agreed with the calves, and a baby was a baby. He was right. Twice a day we went to Mr. French's dairy to get the baby's milk. We became very fond of Mr. French's special cow.

A few years after that, Mr. French moved to the Hanson place, a few miles further away, and we seldom saw him. One sad day the milk man found Mr. French dead in his barn. Someone had beaten that poor, kind old man to death. We were much poorer. We had all lost a friend.

Muriel also recounted the aftermath of World War I in 1919. 1919 was a very exciting year. The war in Europe came home to us when our own young men were sent over seas. The news papers were full of it. Dad read every word aloud to my mother and we heard it all – the atrocities, battle progress, everything.

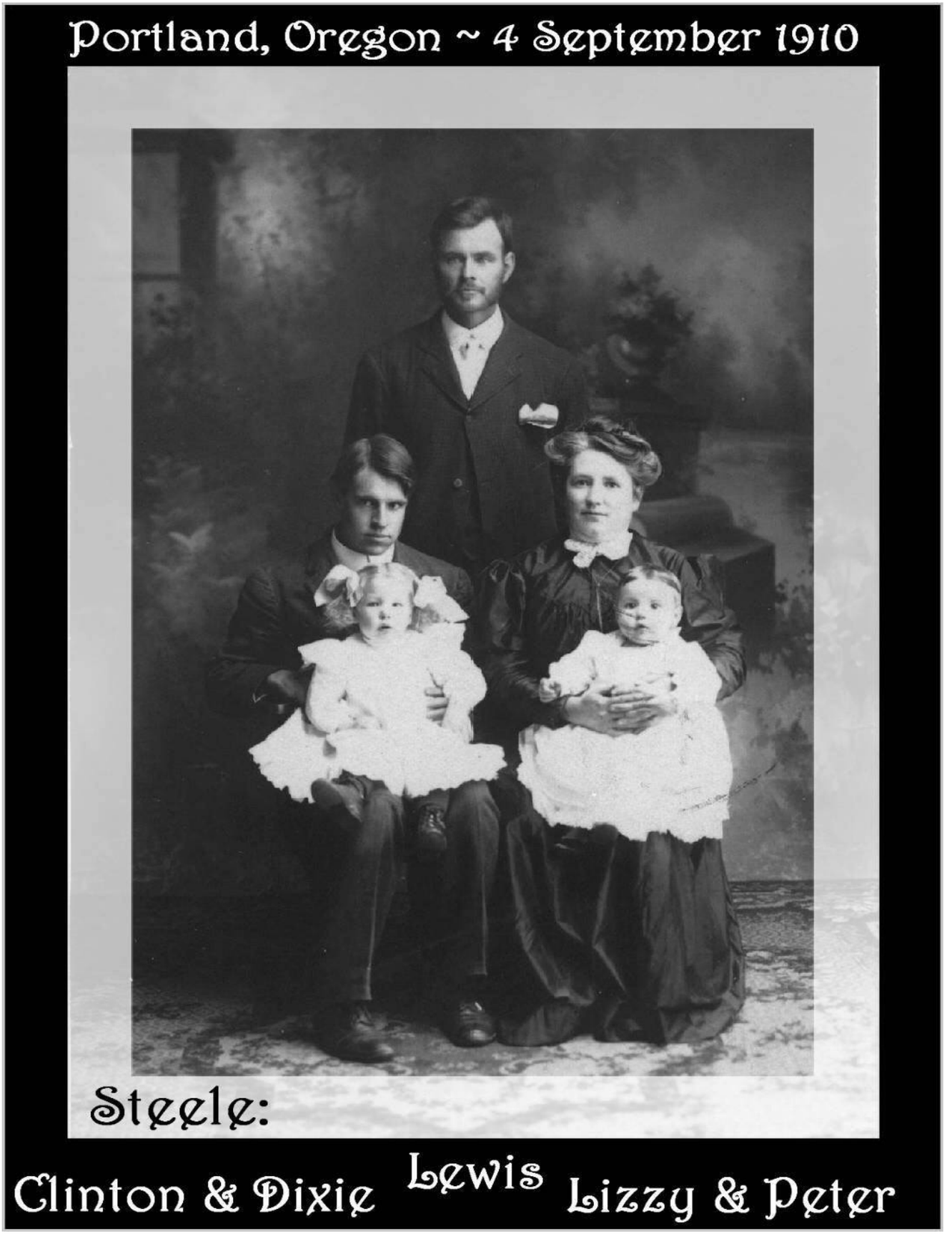
My Uncle Wallace [Fenimore], mama's youngest brother, had been drafted. He was slightly deaf, and couldn't believe it when he was drafted. He had been working as a saw filer in a logging camp. He got three dollars a day – a very high pay for those days. In the army, he did the same work for twenty one dollars a month. He was furious. Nevertheless, when he was discharged and came home in his uniform, he was our Hero returning from the war. He brought with him the Spanish Influenza.

Uncle Wallace lived with Grandma [Nancy Sharp Fenimore] on a little farm about six miles up country from us. We heard he was sick, so mama went to help Grandma take care of him. She returned after a few days. Uncle Wallace was improving and mama had a houseful of small children. A couple of weeks later, mama got sick. Uncle Levi [Fenimore] was with us. Uncle Lou [Steele] came home. Then Pap got sick, and everyone of the kids got sick, all six at once. There was no doctor in our town. Mama was out of her head with a high fever. Papa tried ot get out of bed and fell flat on his face. A doctor from Yacolt came by and he carried Mama to the hospital. Papa said 'No! If she is to die, it will be like a Christian in her own bed.' The doctor washed his hands of our house and left.

Papa's decision was not without reason. People went to the hospital to die. Rumor reached us that the hospitals were much over crowded. People were dying like flies everywhere. Two young men, returned from France, the Meyers boys, died on their way to the hospital. Their father and brother had taken them by team and wagon to the Odd Fellows Hall in town where they were kept, with other patients, until a motor ambulance arrived from Vancouver, fifteen miles away to take them to the hospital. So many neighbors lost loved ones.

We were all sick in bed, and so scared Mama was going to die. Then Drs. Leaser, brothers, came to town. One of them, Robert, came to out house. He looked the kids over and said we were on the mend. Stay in bed another day and in the house a week, he said. Papa was improving also.

Mama had been unconscious for a couple of days. Her fever raged. Dr. Leaser and Uncle Levi hung blankets between her bed and the window, then they opened the window wide to that cold January weather. They


Portland, Oregon ~ 4 September 1910
Steele:
Clinton & Dixie
Lewis
Lizzy & Peter

Clinton Steele Family, June 10, 1912
[Back L to R] Hubert Gentis, Lizzy Steele, Clinton Steele;
[Front L to R] Viola Gentis, Mildred Gentis, Peter Steele,
Dixie Steele, Muriel Steele

Lizzie & Clinton Steele; Caroline {Steele} Scribner

put hot bricks in her bed."

The doctor said there would be a crisis about midnight. Mama's fever would break and she would probably improve, or she would die.

Uncle Levi sat with Mama through the night. Uncle Lou kept the fires and no one slept. Stuart, the baby, was fussy. Dad took him in bed with him. Uncle Lou made tea.

Finally Uncle Levi came out of Mama's room. He was crying. Dad swore and said 'Oh my God.'

Uncle Levi said, 'No, no, Clint. Her fever broke. She is sleeping naturally.' We all cried and went to sleep.

Mama's recovery was slow. For many days Mama couldn't speak aloud, so she whistled when she wanted someone. Dr. Steckle returned to town and came to see mama. He said she must have complete rest away from the family to regain her health.

As my [half-]sisters grew up, they had left home. Lucy and Viola married, Ella worked as a typist in Seattle. So it was arranged for mama to go to Seattle and stay with Ella for a while.

Mama had lost so much weight she was skeleton thin and her once abundant iron gray hair had fallen out. She was totally bald so she wore a scarf on her head. Some neighbor ladies and mama reconstructed some clothes to fit her. She couldn't leave the baby, so one day early in April, Mama and Stuart boarded the train for Seattle.

Papa went off somewhere to work in the woods; Uncle Lou went back to Portland to resume his work as a stevedore, and we were left with Uncle Levi. He was wonderfully kind and gentle. I don't remember much about that summer, nor do I remember exactly when mama came home. I do remember that when my first year in school started in the fall, mama wasn't home. Uncle Levi went to school with me the first day. But he wasn't Mama.

Our mother never allowed a child to start to school until the age of eight because she had a belief that when a child went to school he began to leave her. Also she believed children were not ready for school at six.

I was a big kid, so it was very humiliating to be in a class of six year olds. My sister Mildred made us play school every night. She was a good teacher. I could read, write, and knew some math, including most of the times tables.

After a few months in school we had an outbreak of itch. It was very hard to get rid of. Mama boiled clothes

in a boiler on the stove a lot. I was out of school a long time. When school started the next year I was in the third grade.

About this time there was much unrest. Labor unions were being formed. There was a lot of violence in the cities. The socialist party was much in the news. There was an organization, Independent World Workers, IWW's or Wobblies, they were called. [Transcriber's note: the proper name was "Industrial Workers of the World."] I think it was an arm of the Socialist party but I'm not sure. Uncle Lou was a Wobblie. He talked about it sometimes to my dad and uncles.

One day Dad received a letter from the Portland Police. Uncle Lou was in the hospital. Dad and Mama went to Portland to see him. He didn't know them. The police had fished him out of the Willamette River after a labor riot. He had head injuries. He never knew any one nor who he was after that. He was sent to the state hospital in Salem. Mama and Dad went to see him a few times. He worked as a yard man at the hospital, and was pleased to have company, but he never knew them. He died after a year or so in his sleep, they said.

Muriel also related a particularly memorable period of time that occurred in about 1922.

I was now big enough to pick prunes and potatoes. We planted a big garden, weeded and hoed it. Mama

A 1916 Steele Family Watermelon Feast

Front l to r: Mildred Gentis, Dixie, Pete, Muriel Steele; Back l to r: [Ella?], [Hubert?], [Lucy?]; Lizzy holding newborn Stuart; Orpheus, Nancy Fenimore

always kept a lot of chickens, a couple of cows and a horse. We had no running water and no electricity. Everyone had chores from an early age. We worked very hard, played very hard, went to school and Sunday School. Our parents were strict disciplinarians. Papa was brutally strict with the boys, Mama was strict, never cruel.

Papa's spells got worse. He had trouble getting work. The doctors could do nothing for him. Dr. Steckle thought he should be committed for the safety of the family, but Mama wouldn't allow it. Uncle Levi had gone to Eastern Oregon to herd sheep. Mama wrote to him about Papa, so Uncle Levi came home and took Papa away with him to the sheep camps. I'm not sure, but I think Papa was gone a couple of years. Life was much more pleasant when Papa was away. I don't know how we managed. I think it was at this time that Papa became Dad."

I was in the fifth grade. Life was going along. There were about thirty-five kids in our class. A girl named Annie sat in front of me. Her brother Harry was also in our class. Their parents were from the old country – Hungary, I think. They were good kids. Annie was also very bright. These kids walked to school with their little brother, Pearley. They lived on another road in a wooded area about ten miles from town.

One day about five o'clock in the evening Annie's mother came to town, inquiring of everyone, 'Have you seen Annie? She didn't come home from school.'

Annie was tracked as far as the woods. The children always took a short cut by way of the railroad track. The sheriff in Vancouver was called. The men in town formed a search party and started searching the woods. The

sheriff arrived and got some order.

Annie's mother kept stating that she knew that Annie was dead and kept screaming that "Teddy did it." Now Teddy was a retarded Youngman who lived with his aunt and uncle on a farm about half a mile from Annie's father. Annie's mother claimed that Teddy had chased her a number of times. Everybody knew Teddy as a quiet, pleasant young man -- a bit simple – quite harmless. We were never to make fun of hor put down in any way, people who were different – retarded people, foreigners, Chinese, Mexican, nor Negroes. Our parents were very definite about that. So we were shocked by the accusation. About nine o'clock they found Annie's body dead in the woods. She had been brutally beaten, raped, and her throat had been cut. Teddy was in search party. It was said that Annie's mother would have killed him on the spot if she hadn't been restrained.

Teddy was arrested on the spot. In a short time, he was tried, found guilty, and hanged. What I remember most vividly was Annie's funeral. Everybody attended – the whole school. It was open casket and we marched past that casket and gazed on the poor battered face no one could recognize. Then we stood there, while the priest blessed and sprinkled holy water. We watched the casket lowered. The priest ten took a shovel and put the first earth into the grave, sprinkled holy water again. I had nightmares for years. I can still hear the hollow sound of earth on the coffin. I have never attended a funeral since, unless it was a close relative. I made sure my children were never subjected to such horror.

That seat in front of me remained vacant the rest of the school year. I think I grew up a lot that year. I was eleven years old.

Muriel, Dixie, Mildred, Lucy, Ella, Lucille [Hubert's wife

Dixie & Mildred

1916: Lizzy Steele & Children

[From Left:] Dixie, Rich, Lizzy, Stuart [baby], Muriel, Pete; Mildred Gentis in back

CLINTON"S RECOVERY

When Mildred, my sister, was a sophomore in high school, she went to live with Ella. She wasn't getting along with Dad and we were having a real tough time financially. After a while she got a job as a mother's helper, and live-in baby sitter. These people were wonderful to her.

Dixie went to live with a cousin we knew very well when she graduated from the eighth grade. They had four little girls and needed help with them.

That left just four kids at home. Pete, my brother, was just great. We got to know each other very well. Richard and Stuart were still the 'little boys.' I was the only girl, so most of the help with the house work fell on me. I'm afraid I didn't do a very good job. There was just too much for a kid. Mama had very bad legs, she had to spend some time in bed, and she was on crutches sometimes. I missed so much school I don't know how I ever got a grade, let along pass to the next class, but in proper time I finished the eight grades.

It was during my year in the eighth grade that a neighbor told my folks about an old doctor, a chiropractor,

who had come to a near by town and was a god send. He was curing people of everything. They wanted Dad to go see him. First Dad said no. After much persuasion he said 'Why not. What have I got to lose?' By this time his spells had gotten so frequent and severe he hardly left the place. He felt so sick, he wasn't able to do much at anytime.

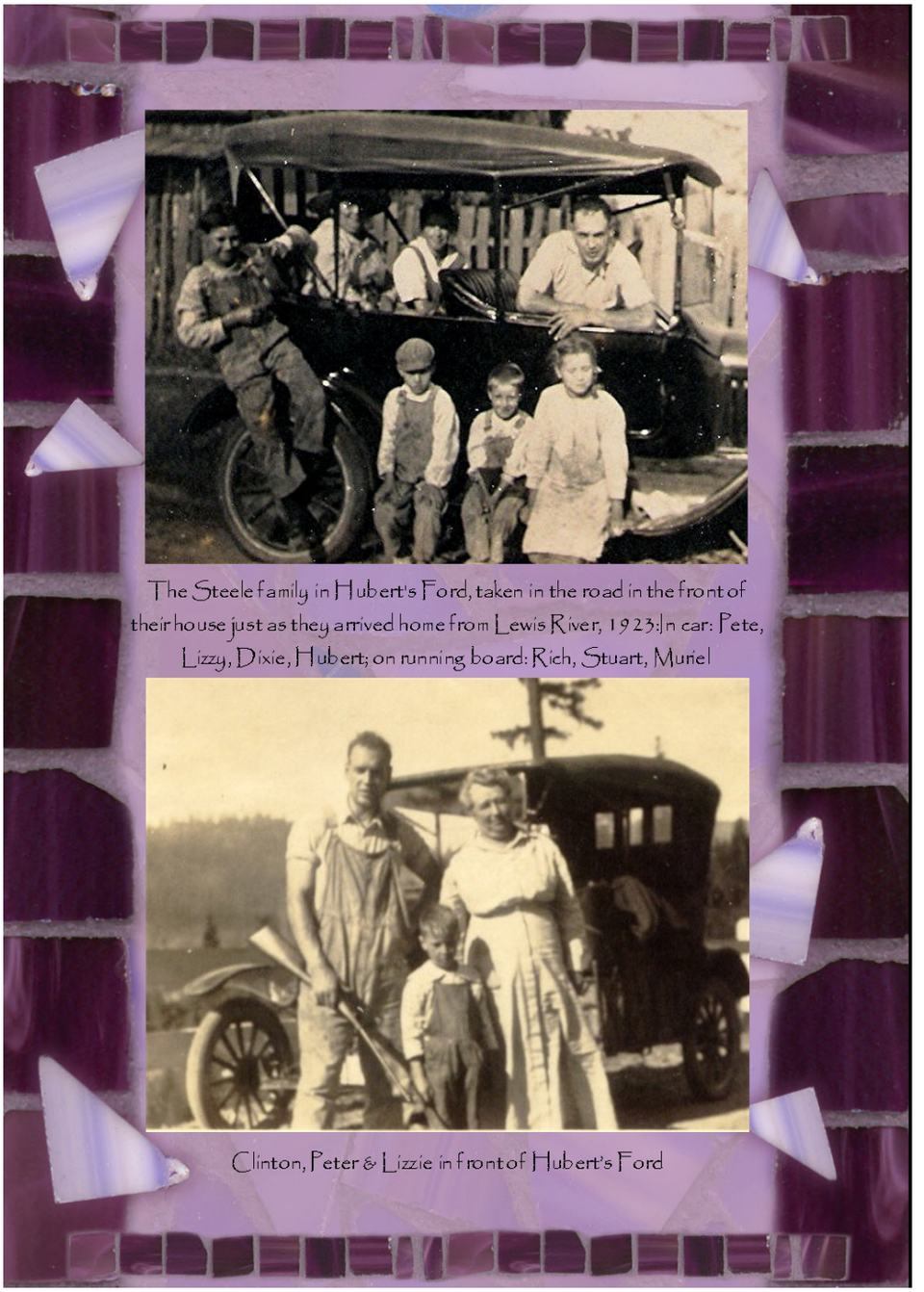
After the second visit, the doctor told him like it was. He'd be willing to try to help him. The spells would increase in frequency and intensity, and he might die in one. Dad must promise to come every week for a year. Well, every time he had a spell we thought he might never come out of it. Dr. Steckle, our MD had told us that. So Dad started treatment. The old doctor was right. Sometimes it seemed he was in spells more than out. He felt awful. He was faithful, and at the end of a year, the old doctor said, 'We did it, Clinton. You're cured.'

Dad said, 'Sure Doc; Thanks' not believing a word of it. But he never had another spell as long as he lived. He died thirty five years later of a stroke at the age of seventy-nine years and ten months.

For nine tortured years he had lived in his own hell, and ours, too, sometimes. The cause had been pressure on a nerve at the base of the brain, probably caused by an accident. Kids don't understand those things. It was years before I had anything but tolerance for my father.

The years of torture had taken their toll. Dad had lost complegely all confidence in himself. He hadn't worked at a decent job for so long that he no longer believed he could. Most people still would not hire him, not believing he was cured. So he continued to do day work when he could get it, and cut cord wood when he had to. He was still awfully grump with the two young boys, but he had quit pounding on Pete.

MURIEL MOVES TO THE BIG CITY

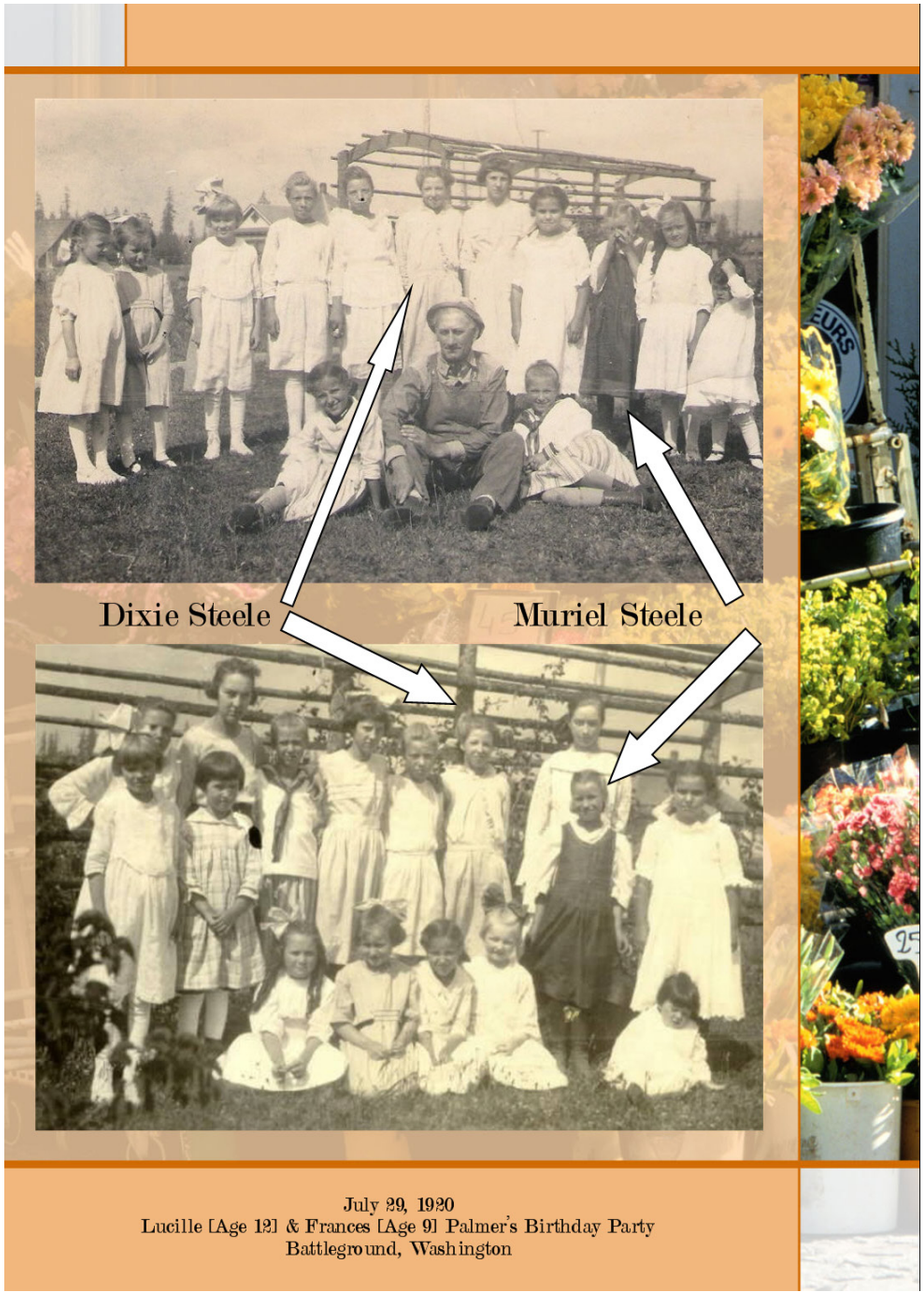


The Steele family in Hubert's Ford, taken in the road in the front of their house just as they arrived home from Lewis River, 1923: In car: Pete, Lizzy, Dixie, Hubert; on running board: Rich, Stuart, Muriel

Clinton, Peter & Lizzie in front of Hubert's Ford

Muriel Demaris Steele was born in 1911 in Battle Ground, Washington, the 10th of 12 children. No one argued that Muriel was exceptionally bright, but due to family circumstances, she often missed school to care for family members, and at 14, she left Battle Ground to live and work in Seattle, where she attended high school through 10th grade while she worked as a nanny and housekeeper for 2 families in the Seattle area. Muriel describes the events in her memoires.

I finished grade school in June and went to Portland with friends. I answered an ad in the paper and started my first job away from home. I worked in a fruit stand on 82nd Ave. for six weeks then I went home for a week end. Mildred, who was in nurses training in Seattle, was home on vacation. Dixie had come home after three years away. She was homesick, and wanted to stay home and finish high school. Not me. I wanted to go. Mildred said, 'Why don't you take my old job with Mr. & Mrs. B. in Seattle? They have twins now and really need help.'



July 29, 1920
Lucille [Age 12] & Frances [Age 9] Palmer's Birthday Party
Battleground, Washington

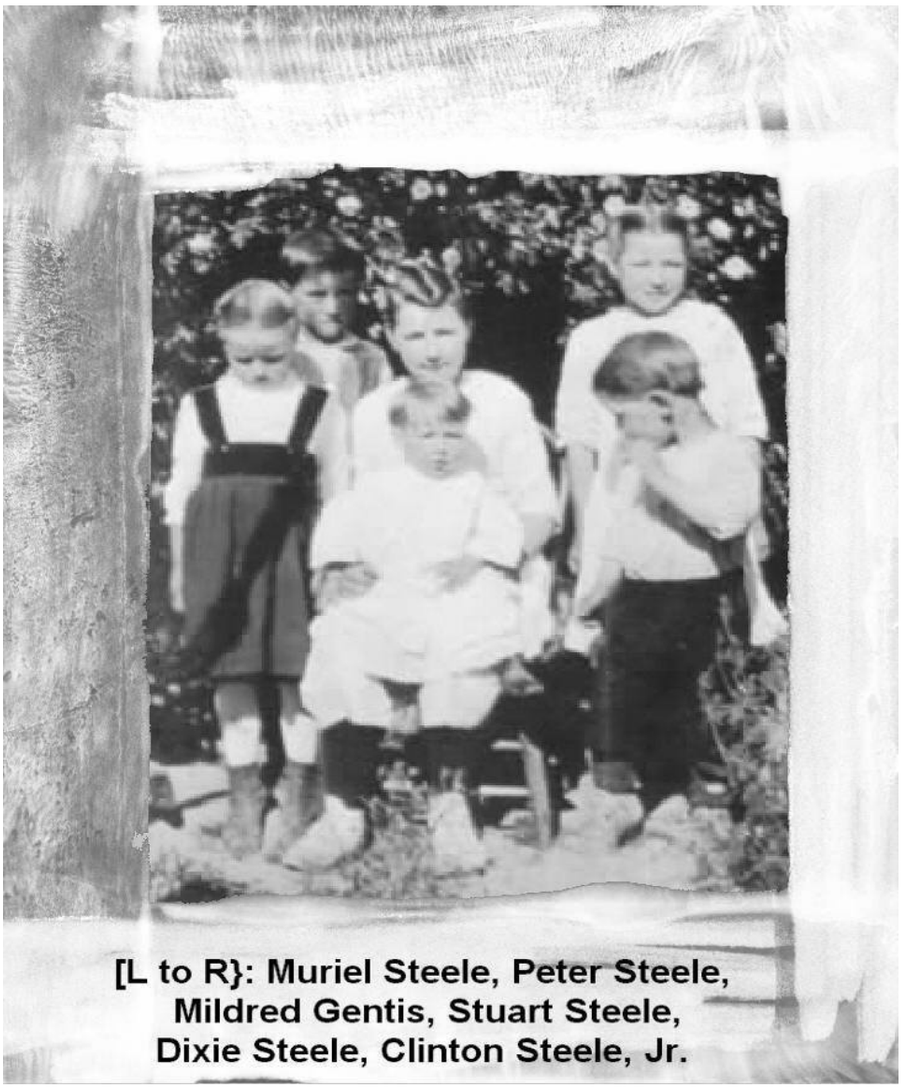
So it was arranged. I quit my job in Portland and in the middle of August, I took a bus for Seattle to work for people I had never seen, and to go to school. I earned ten dollars a month and found it was the start of a whole new way of life for me.

Mr. B. met me at the bus. We traveled what seemed to me a long way to their home. The house was so big and so beautiful, I could only stare. There were five bedrooms on the second floor, hardwood floors, area rugs, polished furniture. I was completely overwhelmed.

The family consisted of Mr. & Mrs. B., their daughters, June and Helen, ages six and eight, the twins, Charles and Mary Lois, age five months, Mr. B's father, Grandpa B and his youngest daughter Joyce, who was unmarried and going steady.

It took me a while to get oriented. Every thing was so strange. I was indeed a country hick. Everything was wrong – my clothes, what few I had, my shoes, coat – everything, even my haircut. Mrs. B and Joyce

were very nice and very patient. By the time school started I had my hair cut, new shoes, and a couple of new dresses. I had learned the house had routine and my place in it. I was mostly expected to help Mrs. B. with the babies. I went to school at eight-thirty and because I was working, got an early dismissal at school, I was home at twelve-twenty. I had no study hall at school. I was supposed to study for an hour and a half in the afternoon, and again in the evening. The twins went down at two. Mrs. B. played bridge three or four afternoons a week. Helen came home at two. She was supposed to practice piano for half an hour, then play quietly in her room for an hour. Jane came home at three. She practiced piano for half an hour. Then the twins got up and on nice days, we all went for a walk. If it rained or was cold, we all played with the babies, or read kid stories. I got on fine with the kids. We all loved the babies and most days had a great time. I did no studying in the afternoons. At night I always fell asleep before I finished my assignments. I learned to do a lot of work in class, read while I fed a baby the bottle and study Latin vocabulary while I folded diapers.



[L to R}: Muriel Steele, Peter Steele, Mildred Gentis, Stuart Steele, Dixie Steele, Clinton Steele, Jr.

In our little high school at Battle Ground there were about a hundred kids. At Roosevelt in Seattle there were twenty-two hundred. I got lost every day for a week until finally the Dean of Women called me into her office. To find out why I was late to class so often. I told her, she laughed and said I should have come to her before. How could I? I'd never heard of a Dean of Women, except in college. She assigned me a senior sister, without shom I'd never have made it through the year.

Freshmen were supposed to take four solids. Because I had such a short day, she suggested I drop Ancient History, which was my eight thirty class, and take music appreciation, an elective, instead. Permission was granted. Of course, I'd have to make up the history sometime later. I still think that music class was the best thing that ever happened to me in Seattle. I got to see ballet for the first time. We went to quite a number of concerts, and four operas. That teacher was the greatest. I flunked Latin the second semester but took it the next year and did O.K.

I got very home sick in the spring. As soon as school was out I headed home. Dixie had graduated, and had gotten married soon after and moved away. I worked part of the summer in the cannery in Vancouver, and stayed

home the next year and went to school. It was a bad year for me. My year of discontent. I didn't belong home any more. I didn't belong any where. I had to do something.

Pete, my brother was very popular. He was happy, busy, working at something all the time. He was on the school teams. We went to quite a few country dances. He was patient and encouraging. He graduated that year. I think he went to work in the woods.

With Pete gone, I couldn't think of going back to school at home. Pete said to stay and finish high school. Too bad if I didn't like it. Do it!

My sister Viola and her husband Bill, and son, Dick, visited us that summer. Mama told her I didn't want to go back to school. Vi asked me what I was going to do. I didn't know. Could I go to San Francisco with her? Sure, if I wanted to work, I could get a job in the store where she was a supervisor. I'd live with them, mind her, as she put it. I was under age.

Mama said no, no. She told me she didn't trust Bill, it was no kind of life for me. I was too young.

I had seldom argued with mama, but this time I flat told her if she would not allow me to go with Vi and Bill I would run away. Dad muttered, swore, and took off to the woods.

I went to San Francisco with Vi, Bill, Dick, and Tilly, their bull dog.

The car was crowded, the weather unbelievably hot, the road rough and dusty. We'd been traveling two days. In Red Bluff California the car refused to go. Bill was a mechanic of sorts. He worked on the car for a day and a half. We boiled all day, and slept in the park at night. We ate deli food. It took us five days to reach S.F."The trip to San Francisco took five days.

The ride across the bay was great. I'd read, and heard people talk about the ferry for years, and here I was. The whole experience was very romantic in my young mind.

Vi lived in a comfortable apartment on the fifth floor at Post and Jones.. The cable car ran in front of the building. Vi had to go to work, so she turned me over to Dick, my ten year old nephew. He knew his way around. We rode the cable car, spent some time at the beach, and played around in Golden Gate Park for a couple of days. Bill stayed around the apartment. He said he was looking for a job. He was a truck driver.

I visited my sister Lucy, and my brother Hubert and his family briefly. I liked Hubert. He was a lot like mama. He took me to the wrestling matches. He also gave me a temporary job in the ice cream plant where he was foreman. He wasn't supposed to hire relatives, but since our last names were different, and we didn't recognize each other at work it was no problem. I worked there about a month. Then the store started hiring and I went to work at the Emporium Department Store in the basement, wrapping for delivery.

Bill continued to stay around the apartment. It soon dawned on me what was going on. Bill was a bootlegger! He made bath tub gin and got liquer some where and bottled

it in his room. He had a code for orders, and made many deliveries. He hit a lot of night spots, and passed out his cards – Bill, the radio man, complete service, telephone number.

I talked about my big discover to Vi. She looked at me a long time, then said, 'So. Sure I know. I don't like it. I work. What do you want me to do? You just do your work, mind your own business, and keep your mouth shut. You wanted to get away from Battle Ground. Well, this is the real world. Every one is not nice. Keep your nose clean and you'll be all right.'

She was right, and so was Mama. And I was a fool. But I had a job. I was making friends at the store. I dated a few times. One Saturday night a bunch of kids were going to a party. I had a blind date. Vi said, 'Okay, just be home by midnight.'

There were three car loads of kids. We drove a while. I asked where we were and was told 'There's this place.' It was on the Russian River, quite a ways. We swam, ate, danced, and drank. I soon found out my date was married. I got worried. It got late. I wanted to go home. People began to disappear. My date was drunk and said we'd go home in the morning. I ran like a rabbit. I found myself on a dock, and broke the heel of my shoe. Some of my party were hunting for me, calling, calling. A lot of boats were tied up. I jumped down into one of them and hid there. I finally slept. When I woke up it was morning there. No one was about; everything was quiet. I started walking. After a while I saw a man and a woman working on a boat.

They looked me over pretty carefully. I was a mess with my wrinkled party dress, carrying my shoes, my hair not combed. I asked the time. It was seven a.m. Where exactly was I? I told them my

7/22/1928: Lucy, Pete, Ella

Stuart, Rich, Lizzie, Clinton

Lizzie & Stuart

Lizzie & Mildred Gentis

Lucille, Betty, Hubert, Lizzie, Ella

Santa Cruz, California; April 1926

poor little story. They listened, gave me a cup of coffee and walked with me to a telephone and stayed until I got Vi on the phone. The man even took the phone and told Vi exactly where we were. Then after telling me to be sure and stay where I was until Vi came, they went back to their boat. Vi and Dick came after a long time. I expected Vi to be very angrey. Instead she was quiet. She asked if I was all right. She asked if I knew now what 'keep your nose clean' means? 'Rule one,' she said, 'never get in a car unless you know where its going to take you. You're learning.'

Bill started drinking. When he drank he got mean. He slapped Vi for no reason and made passes at me. He got arrested for possession of liquor and was put in jail. Vi left him there for a few days. We had such a nice time when he wasn't there. I asked Vi why she didn't leave him. She just said, 'I can't.' I asked her why she brought me here. She asked if I'd have run away. I had no answer. She said, 'Bad as this is, it's better than nowhere.' Life wasn't bad most of the time. I went out some. The work at the store was difficult. Most of the people were as young as I was. A crazy kind of aura hung over everything. Life was so different. I was excited for a while, but was never really a part of it.

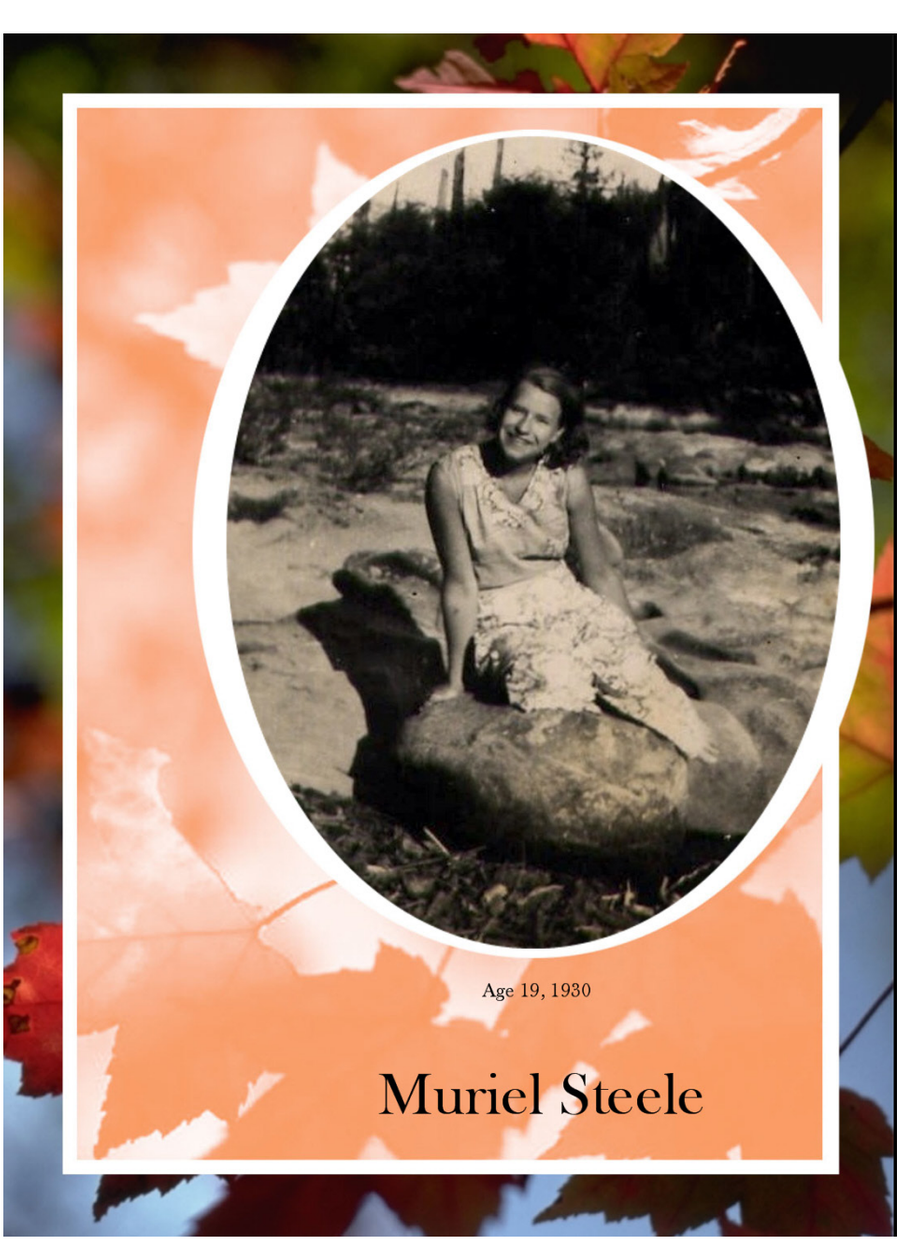
Then at a party I met Bob. [LCF Note: Marty Fenimore later discovered from Clark County records that the real name of " Bob" was William Poulis.] In the roaring twenties here was a quiet man of undetermined age. He was quite good looking, he spoke with a slight accent. I was flattered when he asked to see me home.

We dated a while. We had dinner at quiet places. We discovered Russian Hill, China Town. Our dates

were always short and proper. Vi got very curious, demanded to meet the mystery man. By the time she finally met him I was completely entranced. Vi simply fell apart. She didn't like him. She told me to never see him again. She said he was a no good parasite. He said he wanted to marry me; he just hadn't gotten around to asking me. Vi said men like him didn't marry girls, just promised to. She demanded a promise that I would never see him again. I just laughed at her, and told her I was going to marry him. She said over her dead body. She called the bus depot, threw some of my things into a suit case, and quite simply talked and bullied me onto the bus for Portland. She put some money in my purse. Her parting advise was 'Go home and grow up.' I went home.

Mama was glad to see me. She listened to me and decided to wait to hear from Vi. I never got to read Vi's letter. Mama read it a couple of times, and handed it to my dad. Dad read it and calmly walked to the stove and dropped the letter in the fire.

I was tired. I had no idea what I was going to do. I helped mama and read and visited with dad. I saw a few of my friends. They were all in school.



One morning about two weeks later there was a knock on the door. Dad opened the door. A familiar voice said, 'Mr. Steele? I'm Bob. I've come to ask you if I may marry your daughter.' Dad just said. 'Come in.'

Bob told Dad he had an interest in a wholesale business that dealt in little novelties. Mama listened a lot. That night she said she'd have to agree with my sister. Dad said 'Listen to your mother.' Now it was my turn to do the bullying. I won. Two days later we four went to Vancouver, and with my parents' consent we were quietly married in the Judges chambers. After an early dinner, mama and Dad went home and Bob and I took the train to S.F.

We checked into a small hotel. Bob was gone a lot. He had no regular hours. I asked questions. 'Be a good girl, be quiet.' I explored downtown San Francisco. I shopped for new clothes, went to shows. I visited some of the girls at the Emporium. When I told Bob he got angry for the first time. 'You stay away from those

people. What do you want? Do you need more money? Here.' He handed me some bills. 'Go shopping.' But I hated shopping!

I began to realize some things. There was always plenty of money for the first time in my life. I had no friends. I was married to a man who I knew nothing about, who cared nothing about me. I was a possession. I was alone in a big city, and I was homesick. I swallowed my pride and called Vi. She said 'You made your bed, now lie in it.' And hung up. I called my sister Lucy. She had talked to Vi. She invited us to dinner because she wanted to meet Bob.

Bob thought it was a good idea. He called Lucy's husband and they agreed on Bob's suggestion. We'd go on Sunday for a long ride and diner. It was a good day. Lucy was very proper, sedate. Henry was perfect for her. A few days later Lucy called me. We went to lunch.

Lucy got to the point. 'Was I happy? No? Then get out now. You're young. You made a mistake. Don't waste your youth and your life on a man with no possible future. He's all window dressing. Nothing there. I spent nearly twenty years with a bum, a total waste. Don't do it.'

I thought about what Lucy said. A few days later Bob said he had a surprise for me. I was surprised when we picked up Vi and Bill. We went to a night spot out on skyline, had a nice dinner, saw a good floor show, and started home. It was very foggy. There was a very bad accident. The car was totaled. We were banged up. Vi was hurt the worst. I stayed with her a few days to help.

Vi and Lucy didn't get along. Lucy could not stand Bill. She called him 'The Beast.' I told Vi what Lucy had said. Vi said, 'She's right, you know – but this is your life, your future. You have to make up your own mind. You have to live your own life.' I had to think about that. I tried to talk to Bob. He had no idea what I was talking about. Just be a good girl.

After another week I was going a little mad. I packed a small bag of practical clothes, took twenty dollars, and left. I'd made my decision.

I had been married six weeks. I had no plan. I just knew I wasn't going back. I went to a show. I stayed until the last show was over. I walked down Market Street. I came to an all night theater. I went in an stayed till about ten the next morning. I went and got some food and walked around. In the afternoon I went to another all night theater. I knew no one would find me there. I moved to different parts of the theater, freshened up in the rest room, ate peanuts.

In the morning I bought a paper, looked under help wanted domestic. I answered an ad for a nurse maid. Recommendations. Yes. The place was in the Precidio, a military base. The Captain would pick me up. I got some stationery and wrote myself a nice recommendation and signed Mrs. B.'s name. I asked the Lord for forgiveness for the use of someone else's name. I knew I was good with babies. I used Lucy's name as a local reference. I called Lucy and told her what I'd done. She said fine. She knew I'd left. Bob had called her. 'Just don't change your mind.' I worked for the Captain and his wife for a couple of months. I learned a lot. I met other domestics while taking the children for airings, we were quite isolated. On days off I took the bus to town and visited Vi and Lucy. Lucy said, 'If you don't like it, leave. Try something else. Get into some night classes. Make something of yourself.' Vi said, 'Do as you please.'

So I quit, got a real reference this time. I felt I needed to learn something about praise, charm, grace. I reasoned the best way to learn was to live with it, so I answered several ads for domestics, no children. I finally took a position with a Jewish family, in an exclusive part of town. I was the only maid and lived in. Boy, did I learn a lot.

The family was different. I really learned to respect Jewish people. I loved their different ways, their compassion, love of family. But after a while, the isolation got to me again. So after a few months I quit again. I got another good reference. I kept those references for a long time. When I felt down I'd look at them and think, I can

do something right. I'd been getting twenty-five dollars a month and room and board. No expenses but bus fare. I'd saved my money. I was using my own name. I'd decided to live in town, so I expected to get some work in a store. I got a room in a family neighborhood hotel, and started looking for a job.

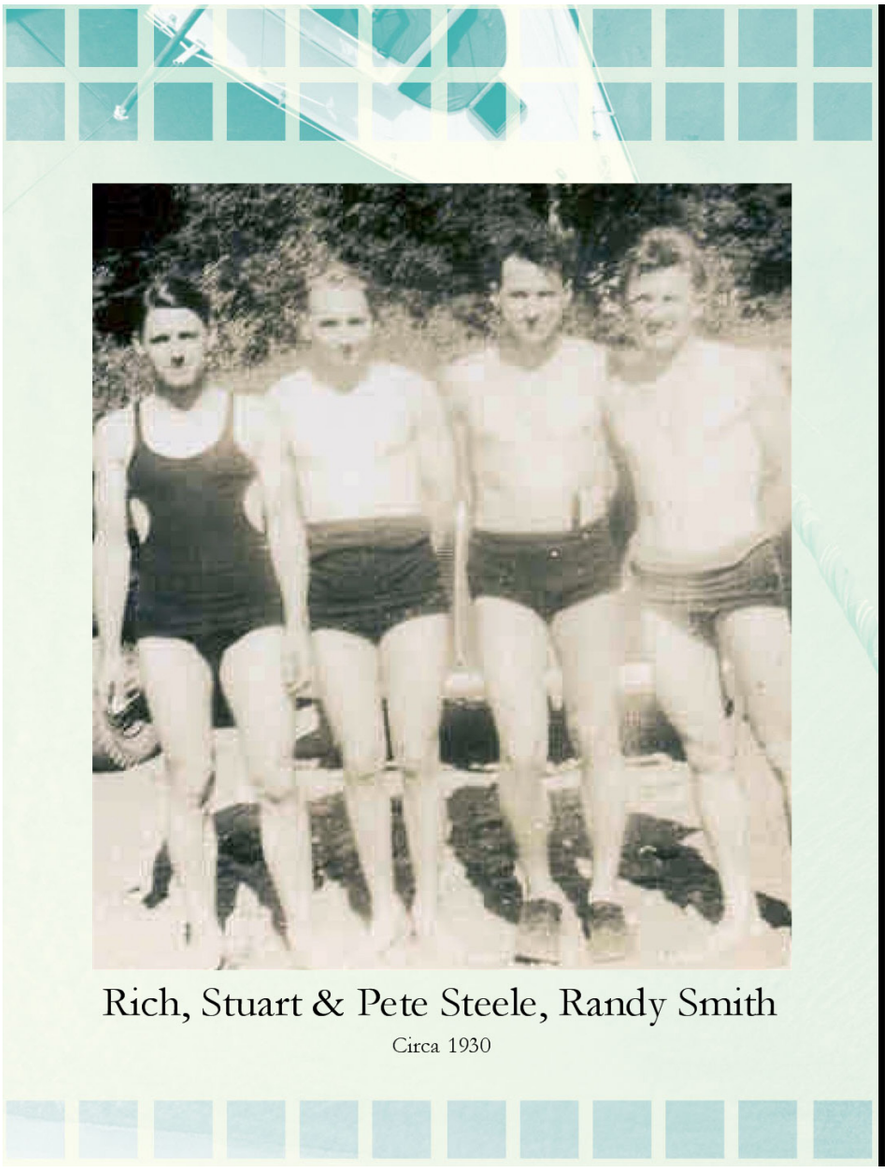
The following is Muriel's history, as related by her daughter Gloria at her Memorial Service. [Editor's note: again, I will here use the convention of italicizing my own text, but leaving Mutiel's text, and Gloria's History, in normal typeset.]

In 1932 Muriel was working as a waitress in Redmond, Washington (a suburb of Seattle), where she met and later married Randy Smith, a graduate of Hastings School of Law in San Francisco and an upcoming businessman from Eureka, California. The newlywed Smiths moved to Arcata, Humboldt County, California, and shortly thereafter Randy brought home their first dairy calf. In the years to come, Muriel would milk thousands of Jerseys, process hundreds of thousands of tons of milk, clean the barns to Grade A standards, attend hundreds of county and state fairs, feed dozens of hired hands, and help raise upwards of 20 of other people's children.

After 6 years of marriage, Randy and Muriel had their first child, Randy Jr. and, 6 years later, daughter Gloria arrived. Still, a farm and 2 children seem do-able for the average person. But Muriel was anything but aver-

age.

Muriel tells of some mischief that occurred during their residence in Arcata.



Rich, Stuart & Pete Steele, Randy Smith

Circa 1930

In the long ago we were living on a small farm in an area known as the Arcata Bottom. The soil was sandy and rich, the grass lush, the climate mild and equable.Dairying was a way of life. There many Portuguese immigrants had settled there, dairymen from the Azores. These people were industrious, honest, fun loving, and English illiterate.

Sometimes, even the best operators need the help, skill and advice of a veterinarian. There was a shortage of such help in our area – so that there was a rejoicing when a young man set up practice in town.

Our new vet was very young, just out of school. A home town boy, he knew many farmers. When he came to our farm, we were unimpressed. In fact, very disappointed. He was very aggressive, self assured, rude, very impressed with his own importance. Soon we began to hear reports from our neighbors. The vet was very unpopular, especially among the Portuguese, who were the bulk of his clientele. After about six months, some of the young Portuguese men decided to teach him a lesson.

Late one afternoon, he was called to the farm of Manuel Santos to treat a sick cow. When that was finished, Manuel asked the vet if he would bump some of his cows.

Bumping is a manual method of determining if a cow is carrying a calf. The vet had bragged that he was always 100% correct with this method. Manuel had his herd in the barn, forty cows in a line, heads in stanchions. These cows were as alike as peas in a pod.

'Sure, why not,' was the vet's reply.

Manuel pointed out this one, this one, and so down the line. Once in a while Manuel would ask.

'You sure, doc? I'm worried about that one, Do her again.'

So the vet would poke again to reassure Manuel. They finished the line and walking back to the door, behind the cows, Manuel pointed to an animal.

'Doc, make sure on that one again.' The vet impatiently stepped between the animals, made his examination and said, 'Just like I told you Manuel, seven months in calf.'

'You sure, doc?' asked Manuel again.

'I'm always sure,' replied the vet, as he stepped to Manuel's side.

The Smith Family, circa 1949

The Ranch at Grants Pass, Oregon: Randy, Muriel, Gloria & Randy, Jr.

'You look, doc' said Manuel, as he pointed to the animal. The vet looked once and then he looked again. He was looking at a young bull.

The story went the rounds. That young vet was laughted out of the county.

LIZZIE;s DEATH

`Lizzie was on a visit to her daughter Muriel in Bayside, Humboldt County, California when she died. Muriel lived in Arcata, Humboldt County, California in 1939. Lizzie Fenimore was sent back north and is buried in the Wilson Bridge Cemetery just outside of Dollar Corner Clark Count. Buried next to her is Clinton Steele. Nearby are brothers Levi and Milton. The cemetery is located very close to the old Clinton Steele place.

* * * * * * * * * * * * *

Randy Sr. was the oldest of 7 boys. During and after World War II, the couple would house, feed, and support every one of those 6 younger brothers-in-law. When the Smith boys needed money, or food or help in any

Nancy Elizabeth [Fenimore][Gentis] Steele

way, Muriel was there. In many ways, Muriel became a 2nd mother to most of them. In her memoires, Muriel tells about a Smith family gathering during the World War II years.

The whole Smith family was gathered at our farm for a lamb barbecue. We had raised and butchered the lambs and prepared a pit in which to roast the meat. The occasion was a get-together for Alex, my husband [Randy's] brother, who was leaving for the service. Alex was the first to go. He was twenty-one years old. Alex was bright. He had graduated from college, taught school a year, and gotten married.

We had a wonderful day, the last in which all the boys were together for many months. A few weeks after the family get-together, Alex was accepted for officer's training school and life settled into routine.

One hot day, Randy had gone to the office to work. My niece Betty, who was spending a month with us, my small son Randy, Jr., age 3, and I had spent a productive morning caring for the calves, chickens, lambs, making jam and doing various other chores about our small farm. It was a day like any other day.

Betty, who was fifteen, wanted to go swimming. We got into our swim suits about noon. Betty got young Randy up from his nap. While she dressed him in his swim suit, I went out to a field to change some irrigation. Soon Betty and Randy Jr. joined me, waiting impatiently for me to finish so we could get on down to Mad River, which flowed through our farm.

Suddenly, Betty screamed and pointed. I turned and looked. The house was a sheet of flames. We rushed to the house – too late. Our neighbors had called the fire and my husband.

* * * * * * * * * * * * * * *

In 1947, Muriel and Randy took in a 15 year old cousin from Idaho who needed a place to stay. Wanda

Brown, now Wanda Bradford, moved in and never left. Muriel really did become Wanda's second mother and the two maintained a very close relationship until Muriel's death. With Muriel's and Randy's help, Wanda would finish high school, graduate from Humboldt State College and teach for 34 years. Through Wanda's personal and professional trials, Muriel was close at hand, becoming Wanda's closest friend and confidant.

Those who knew Muriel during the dairy years knew a woman who never slept. Muriel was in the barn morning and night, carrying milk buckets, cleaning calf pens, hosing down the milk barn, hauling hay, or feeding the bulls. In her off hours, usually in the middle of the night, she wall-papered, ironed, baked, built kitchens, chopped wood and sewed. In summer, she gardened and harvested, and canned peaches, jams, and a lot of green beans. Some have said there's not been a person who worked, physically, harder than Muriel.

In 1949, Muriel and Randy moved their family and their herd of 60 Jerseys from Arcata, Humboldt County, California, to Grants Pass, Josephine County, Oregon. It was in Grants Pass, during his 6th grade year, that Randy would meet his future bride, Saundra Altheide. No one knew then, watching the neighborhood group of rag-tag middle-schoolers swimming in the Applegate River or chasing cows through a field, that Randy and Sandy would someday enjoy 40 years of marriage. Grants Pass was the home in which Randy also became involved in 4-H. There, he began showing his Jerseys, and won a number of awards with the cattle and in showmanship at the Josephine County Fair.

Dixie Elizabeth Steele
Battleground High School. 1927

In 1952, three years after arriving in Grants Pass, the family again moved the entire herd, this time to Canby. When the family moved to Canby in Randy's freshman year in high school, he joined Future Farmer's of America. Through high school, Randy worked very hard on his parents' dairy farm, and in the summers he continued to exhibit his animals at the Clackamas County and Oregon State Fairs. Randy became an expert showman and judge. He won numerous awards, including State Champion Dairy Showman and, along with his teammates, the State Dairy Judging contest. He attended the National FFA convention in Kansas City, Missouri where he was presented with the prestigious American Farmer Award, and he competed in the National Dairy Judging contest in Waterloo, Iowa.

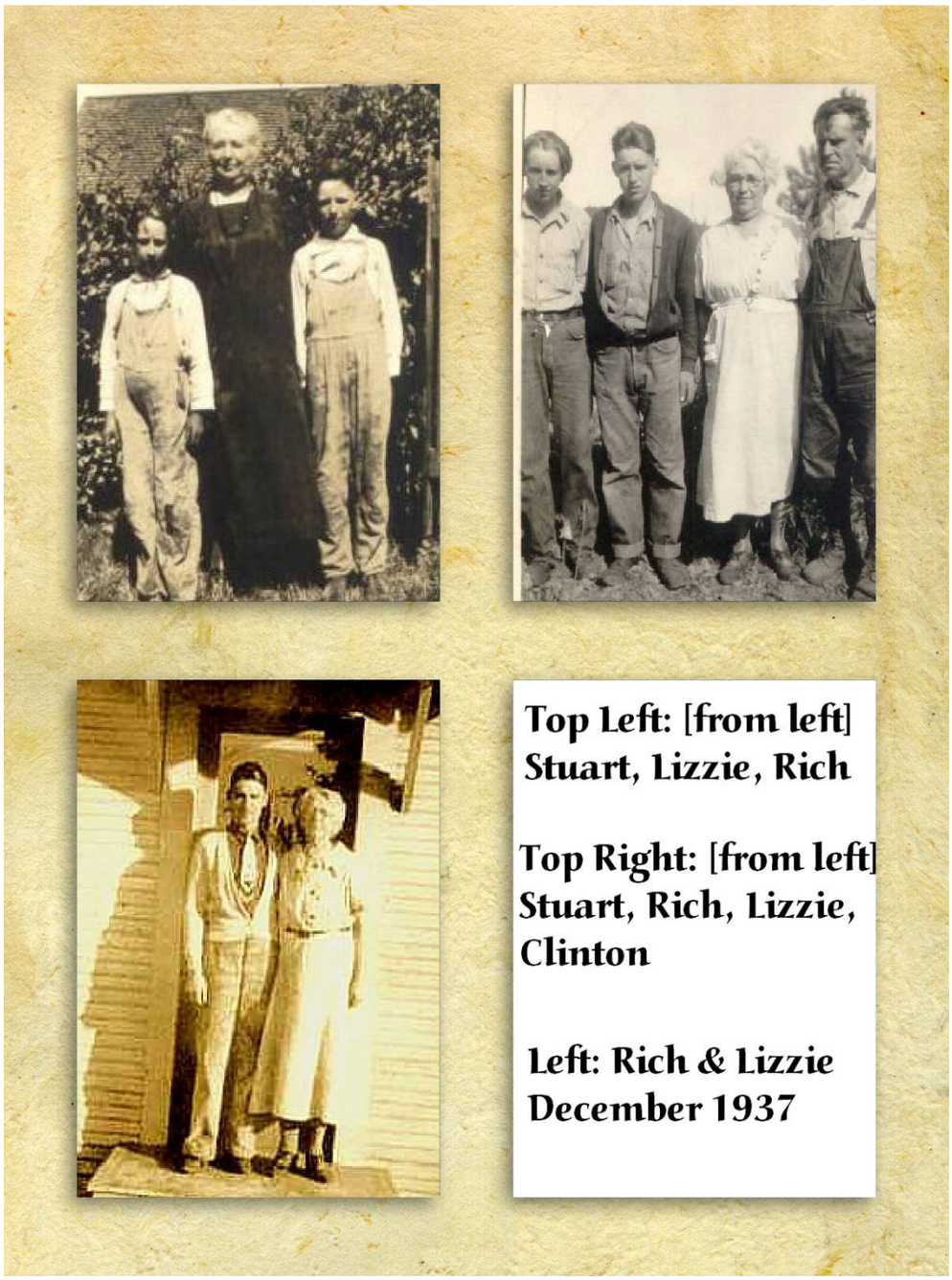
In 1957, the family and the

cows moved again, to settle permanently in Bridgeport, where Muriel continued to contribute to the success of the family farm, which grew to nearly 100 head of stock.

The 50's, 60's, and 70's would see a stream of young nieces and nephews being sent to the farm, often children of the very Smith boys who had been helped so much during the 40's. Some of these kids came to Oregon to have fun, but most came to be fixed.

There was Penny Smith, same age as Randy, Jr., whose mother had been Muriel's best friend in Eureka. Penny's mother had died at an early age, and Muriel stepped up, filling the void, inviting the child to stay with her during many summers.

There was Mike Smith, the boy who, today, would be diagnosed as ADHD, in those days was just called naughty. Muriel kept Mike. Fed him. Washed his clothes. Taught him some manners.



There was one of the Scribner boys -- a son of Tom and older brother of Grace -- whose father was a Communist. He spent a lot of time milking cows during the year he spent with the Smiths.

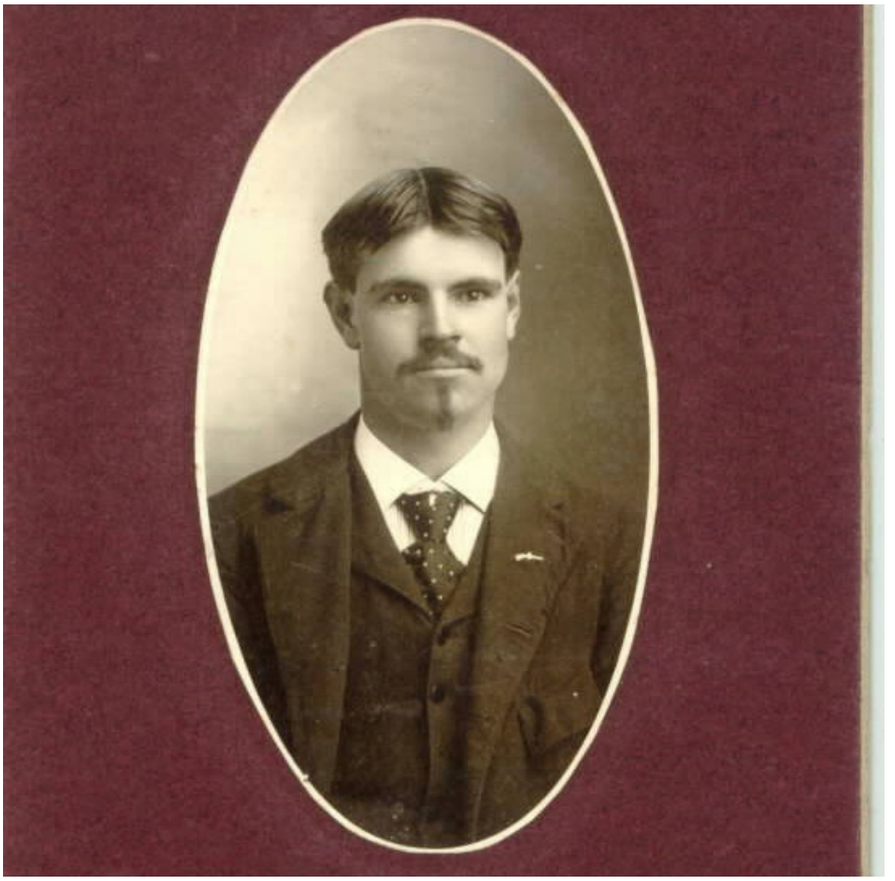
There was little Billy Steele, who came to the farm in the summers mostly to drive the tractor, and got a good dose of solid country living.

And there were the girls: Betty Jean and Judy Steele had also lost their mother. Muriel loved those girls and worked with them, especially with Betty, throughout their lives. Today, Betty McQuilken credits Muriel with seeing her through numerous challenges and helping her set the course of her life in a positive direction.

Nancy Smith was sent to the farm after running away from home. Her stay with Muriel gave her time to re-evaluate her life.

Grace Scribner had lost her mother -- Muriel's older sister Dixie -- at the tender age of 2. Grace would often look to Muriel for motherly love and advice. And, she brought her husband and young children [our Cooper family] to the Dairy Farm in Bridgeport regularly when she and her husband were living in nearby Corvallis.

And there was Donna. Donna's mother had also died when Donna was very young. This child came to stay for one summer when she was 5. She would return to the farm and Muriel's care for 3 months every summer until she graduated from high school. As a 3rd grader, Donna would spend the entire year with the Smiths. Muriel didn't really have much to offer, except her love, her guidance, her support, and lots and lots of canned green beans.



Somewhere amongst all those nieces and nephews were Muriel's real kids. Randy Jr. worked next to his parents on the farm and would eventually take over the farm operation. When son, Randy, wanted to get a little better acquainted with his grade school sweetheart, Muriel offered her home as a stop-over until the girl could get a job and find a place to live. Muriel would eventually become Sandy's mother-in-law, and Muriel would come to love Sandy as she loved her own children.

In 1961, Randy married his grade school sweetie, and soon after found himself at Fort Ord, California,

in the Army. Fortunately, that stint didn't last too long, and the couple moved, with their new baby, Kevin, to Bridgeport where they began a long and very positive involvement with the Bridgeport community. In 1967, their 2nd son, Brian, was born.

Lucy Resch; Ella & Bill Bramhall

Evergreen Highway; September, 1945

In the 60's, as the dairy operation began to wind down, Muriel took a job at Oregon Turkey Growers, and later became a psychiatric aide at Fairview Training Center, where she worked for 12 years. She adored the children she worked with, often bringing home delightful stories of their antics.

When Randy and Sandy became parents, Muriel took on the role of Grandma with great joy. The two boys, Kevin and Brian, were daily visitors to Grandma's house, and at family dinners on Sundays, they would enjoy Grandma's cooking: fried chicken, mashed potatoes, home-made dinner rolls, fresh garden salad, and a lot of green beans. Of course, Muriel would have baked a cake - from scratch - always from scratch.

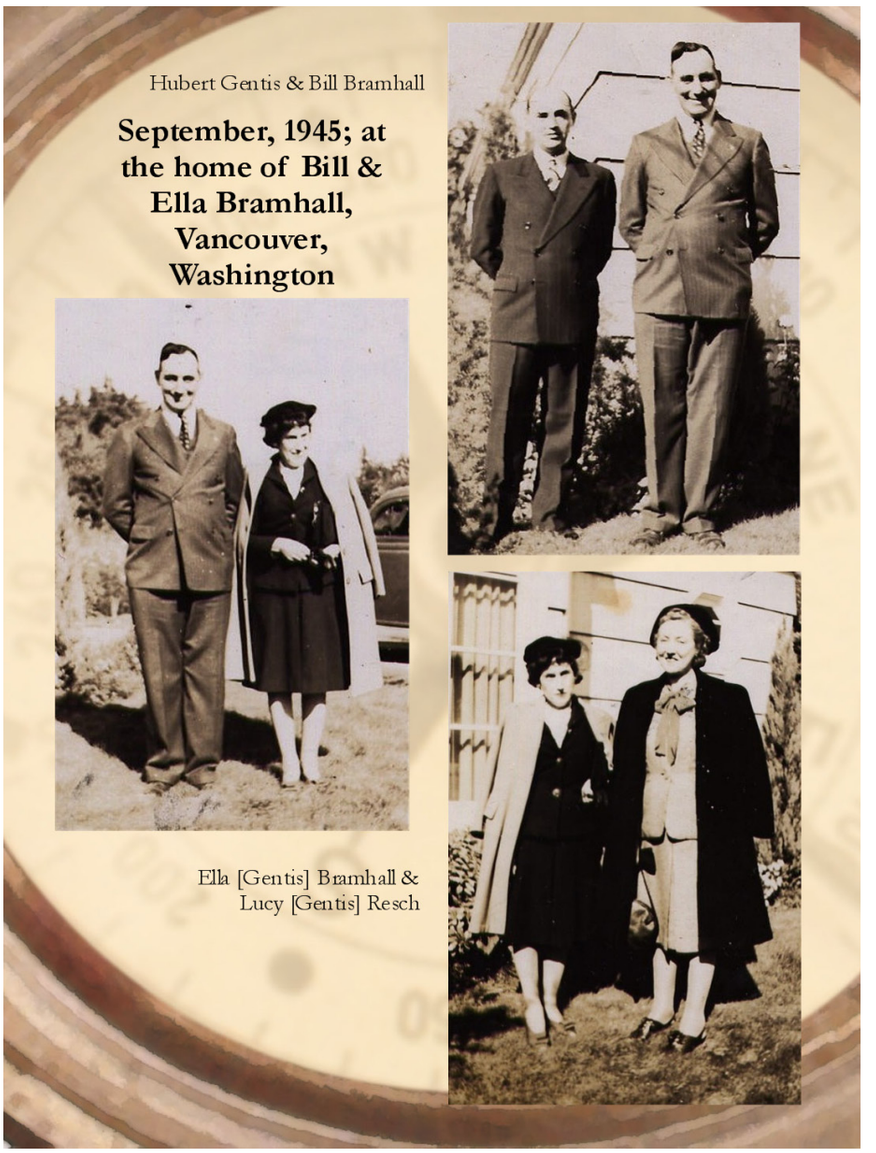
On the really special occasions, like Sunday mornings, Muriel baked, again from scratch, the most mouth-watering, huge, frosted cinnamon rolls anyone could imagine. Somehow, those rolls seemed to just magically appear on those mornings, but the reality of it is that Muriel often awoke at 3 or 4 in the morning to have these treats on the table, hot out of the oven, at breakfast.

Daughter Gloria would eventually become a teacher, which made Muriel extremely proud. Muriel had always supported Gloria's activities, getting her ready for her dairy showmanship competition at the State Fair and at-

tending plays Muriel didn't really like. Muriel took 3 deep breaths when her daughter spent a year in San Francisco during the 60's. When tough times came during Gloria's first marriage, Muriel would drop everything to move her daughter - 3 times. There were never any questions asked. But when Gloria presented Muriel with her first and only granddaughter, Annie, Muriel was ecstatic. Muriel taught the child to kneed bread dough, and stitch together an apron, and plant squash from seed. Once again, Muriel's home became the child's haven.

In her later years, after retiring from Fairview, Muriel became a voracious reader. Reading, and her interest in the church became her solace in what continued to be a strenuous life. When Randy Sr. suffered a stroke, this woman, who had always taken care of others more than herself, became her husband's nurse and caretaker. Her devotion to her ailing husband astounded the family. For 8 years, she rarely left his side, keeping Randy in the home through his decline, until he died in 1987.

Randy, Jr. ran the family Jersey dairy farm in Falls City, Oregon with his father, Randy, Sr., until Randy Sr. died in December 1987. After Randy, Sr. died, Randy and Sandy decided to move off the farm. He sold the dairy farm in 1988 and moved with his wife Sandy to Dallas. After the move, they both took jobs: he worked as a school bus driver and at the bus barn; she as an aide for the school district. Randy succumbed to Kidney Cancer on February 26, 2002 in Dallas.



Randy Smith Biography [read at his Memorial Service]:

"The Lord is my rock…my strength, in whom I will trust," Psalms 18. If ever there were a verse, or a phrase, that captured the temporal journey of Randy Smith, it is this: "The Lord is my rock...my strength, in whom I will trust."

Randy's time on this earth spanned 63 years, and in those years he lived humbly providing service to his community and to his God, serving as an example for any and all who had the pleasure to know him.

Randy was born in Arcata, California in 1938 to Randolph and Muriel Smith. He is survived by his wife, Sandy, two sons, Kevin and Brian, Brian's wife Nancy, and 4 grandchildren, Nathan, Cooper, Casey and Emma. Also surviving is one sister, Gloria.

The Smith family, Randy Sr.,

Hubert & Mabel Gentis with baby Bill, Ella Bramhall, Muriel & Randy Smith, Henry & Lucy Resch; In front - Rich Steele

Steele Family Members, About 1937

Muriel, Randy Jr. and Gloria moved from California in 1949 to Grants Pass, Oregon. It was there, during the 6th grade year, that Randy would meet his future bride, Saundra Altheide. No one knew then, watching the neighborhood group of rag-tag middle-schoolers swimming in the Applegate River or chasing cows through a field, that Randy and Sandy would someday enjoy 40 years of marriage. But the Lord, they say, works in mysterious ways.

While living in Grants Pass, Randy also became involved in 4-H. There, he began showing his Jerseys, and won a number of awards with the cattle and in showmanship at the Josephine County Fair.

When the family moved to Canby in Randy's freshman year in high school, he joined Future Farmer's of America. Through high school, Randy worked very hard on his parents' dairy farm, and in the summers he continued to exhibit his animals at the Clackamas County and Oregon State Fairs. Randy became an expert showman and judge. He won numerous awards, including State Champion Dairy Showman and, along with his teammates, the State Dairy Judging contest. He attended the National FFA convention in Kansas City, Missouri where he was presented with the prestigious American Farmer Award, and he competed in the National Dairy Judging contest in Waterloo, Iowa.

In 1961, Randy married his grade school sweetie, and soon after found himself at Fort Ord, California, in the

Army. Fortunately, that stint didn't last too long, and the couple moved, with their new baby, Kevin, to Bridgeport where they began a long and very positive involvement with the Bridgeport community. In 1967, their 2nd son, Brian, was born.

For many years, Randy operated the dairy with his father. It was a good life. He had a loving wife, 2 wonderful kids, parents close by, lots of work to do, and square dancing on Saturday nights. Randy Smith was dedicated to his family. He was a hard working, honest to the core, salt of the earth kind of man. He loved working the land, and raising the cattle, and he especially enjoyed putting up the hay each summer.

After many years of working the dairy, Randy decided to seek work off the farm. He began logging, and he enjoyed not only the work, but also the close friendships which developed during that time.

After Randy and Sandy decided to move off the farm, he took a job as a school-bus driver. He adored the children, often bringing home stories of their good deeds, their antics, and their trials. He felt a personal connection and responsibility for each child's well-being.

Anyone who knew Randy knew that he was a very spiritual man. During the early days on the farm, he at-

[Rear:] Hubert & wife Mabel [holding baby Bill], Bill & Ella Bramhall, Randy & Muriel Smith;
[Front] Rich Steele, Lucy {Gentis} Resch **Steele Family Members, About 1937**

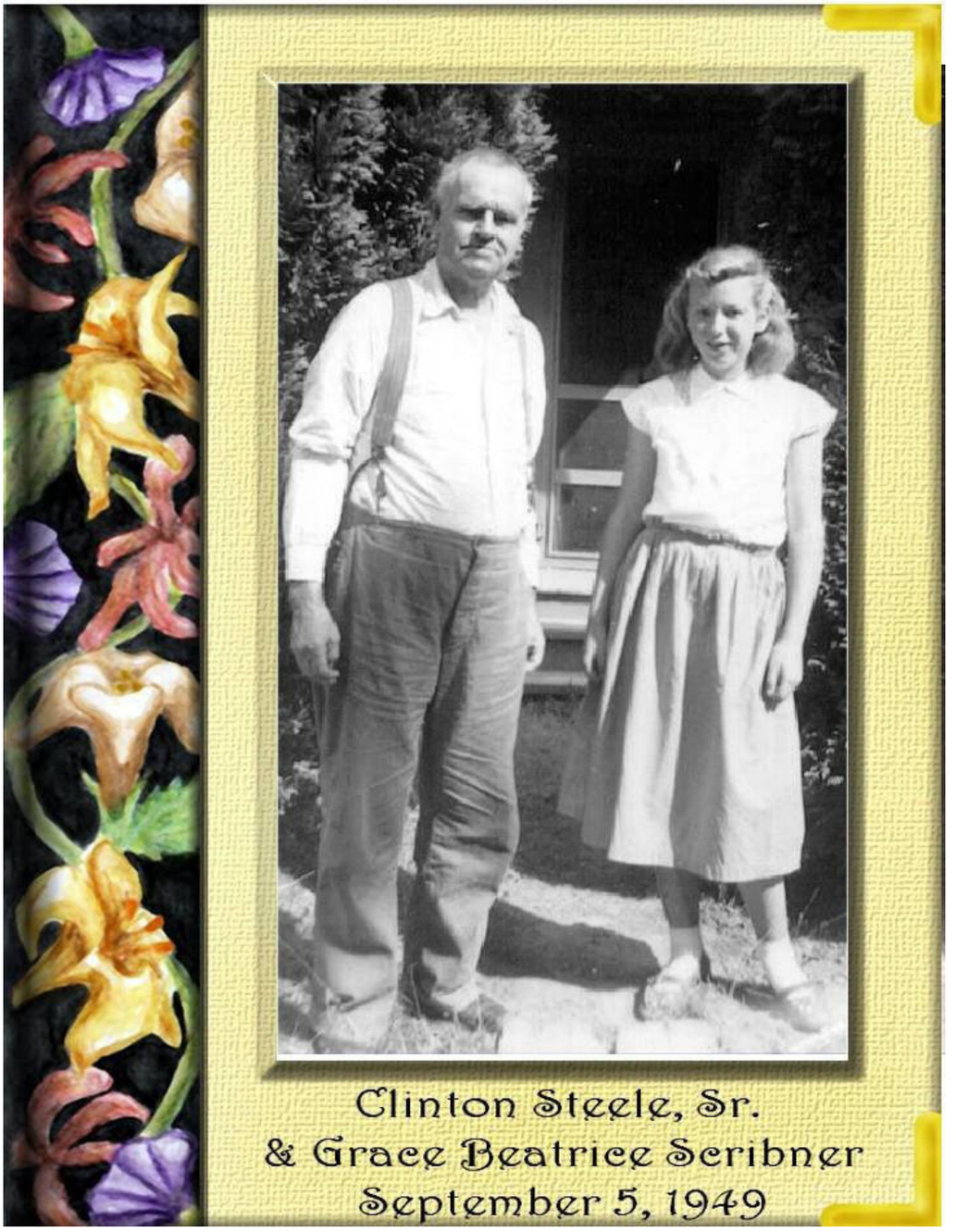
tended church most Sundays, in Salem, but his need for spiritual fulfillment was not being met. There was a void in his life; but as the Lord would have it, in 1979, his life took a very good turn.

Randy's sister, Gloria, remembers the day very well. On their way home from a Marriage Encounter weekend, Randy and Sandy stopped at Gloria's for a visit. Never one to say much in those days, on this day, Randy wouldn't stop talking. He was so excited about the weekend. He had experienced a spiritual awakening. He felt closer to his wife, and to God. He flushed and gestured and talked and talked. When they left, Gloria couldn't help but wonder, "Gosh, what's the matter with HIM?"

The following weekend, Randy began attending the Bridgeport Community Chapel. There, he found his spiritual home and an extended family, which came to fill a big space in his life. In time, the church would come to - in his words - "be our life."

When Randy began attending Bridgeport Chapel, services were held in what is now the reception hall. When the new church was built, Randy carried lumber and drove nails to help create the structure you're sitting in today. Over the years, Randy served the church in many ways, as worship leader, as elder and he especially enjoyed being a member of the Missions Committee. For years, he was -really - the chief bottle washer at the Camp of the Risen Son, and one year, Randy and Sandy chaperoned a mission trip to Mexico.

In the 23 years that he attended Bridgeport Chapel, Randy grew in his spiritual understanding. Not long ago, Randy said, "Church is demanding. You have to decide where you're going to place it in your life." In Randy's life, his belief in God came first. His faith, his service, and in these last few months, his courage set an example to those of us who knew him. Randy Smith was an example of grace and of trust in God's love, an example of kindness and acceptance, and of selfless, humble, devoted service to God. The Lord was Randy's rock, and, by example, Randy blessed us by truly being a good Christian man.



Part 3: The FENIMORE Family: From Quaker Roots

Our Fenimores were Quakers from Banbury, England who emigrated to Burlington, New Jersey during the lifetime of George Fox. Their earliest history in New Jersey and Pennsylvania until the time of the Revolutionary War is outlined in Part 1, above in the discussion of New Jersey's founding.

Our recent Fenimore history is established by the patriarch, Aaron Fenimore, father of Nancy Elizabeth Fenimore who married Clinton Steele. We know that Aaron Fenimore met his wife Nancy Sharp when his civil war unit was bivouaced at Nancy's father's farm during the Civil War. Because Aaron's unit never served in Missouri, we can deduce that they must have met when the Sharp were living in Tennessee. From this starting point, we can trace the Fenimore family backward from Aaron to the Quakers in Pennsylvania.

Feb 1932: Fenimore Family in Battleground

Wallace, Levi, Katie, Lizzie, Stella, Dora, Ed

FACING PAGE:Back: Bill Bramhall, Levi Fenimore, Hiram Batchelder; Middle: Milton Fenimore, Ella Gentis Bramhall, [Claudia?], Stella Fenimore Batchelder, Wallace Fenimore, [???], [???], [???], [???]; front: [???],]???],]???], [???], [???], [???]

Aaron Fenimore mustered into the 18th Ohio Regiment Infantry at 18 years of age on the 5th October in 1861 at Camp Wool, Athens County, Ohio as a Private. On 14 Oct 1861 he was assigned to Captain Taylors Company of the 18 Regiment of the Ohio Infantry at Camp Dennison. Aaron would serve out a three-year enlistment during the civil war. His Civil War papers describe him as being 5 feet 6 inches tall, with a light complexion. The papers list his occupation at time of enlistment as that of a farmer. He had grey eyes and brown hair. We can track Aaron's civil war adventure through his unit history, as recorded in Dyer's Compendium. Aaron's regiment, the 18th Ohio, was organized on August 6th, 1861, at Athens, Ohio, for three years service, under Colonel Timothy R. Stanley. The unit mustered at Athens, Ohio from August 16 to September 28, 1861. It then Moved to Camp Dennison, Ohio, and the organization there was completed November 4, 1861. Based on his enlistment date of October 5th, Aaron must have joined the unit when it was organizing at Camp Dennison. The unit became attached to the 8th Brigade, Army of the Ohio, and served under General Mitchell in Kentucky, Tennessee and Alabama. The unit moved to Louisville, Kentucky on November 6, and then to Elizabethtown, Kentucky on November 15. That regiment then served its duty at Elizabethtown and Bacon Creek, Kentucky, from November, 1861, to February, 1862. Beginning in December, 1861, the 18th Ohio Regiment became attached to the 8th Brigade, 3rd Division, Army

Feb 1932, Fenimores in Battleground

Wallace & Celia; Levi; Katie Evans; Lizzie Steele; Claudia, Stella Batchelder, Edward, Lewis Batchelder, Richard [Dick] Thomas, Pete, Muriel & Stuart Steele, Robert Sr., Dora & Bob Sutherland Jr., Rich & Clinton Steele; In front l to r: Vola, Hazel & Dorothy Fenimore [daughters of Wallace & Celia]; Dorothy Sutherland [next to Lizzie]

of the Ohio until July 1862. The unit advanced with the 8th Brigade, 3rd Division, on Bowling Green, Kentucky, between February 10-15, and then on Nashville, Tennessee, February 18-25. They were part of the occupation of Nashville, Tennessee between February 25-March 18, 1862.

. The unit served reconnoissance to Shelbyville, Tullahoma and McMinnville, Tennessee between March 25-28. They were sent to Fayetteville April 7, and were sent as an expedition to Huntsville, Alabama between April 10-11. The unit participated in the capture of Huntsville on April 11, 1862. They then advanced on and assisted in the capture of Decatur on April 11-14. The unit participated in operations near Athens, Limestone Bridge, Mooresville and Elk River between May 1-2. They were near Pulaski and Bridgeport on May 1, but had moved to Fayetteville by May 31. The unit was assigned as part of Negley's Expedition to Chattanooga between June 1-15, and were at Battle Creek till July 11. Aaron's unit became an unattached unit of the Railroad Guard, Army Ohio, and served guard duty along the Tennessee & Alabama Railroad from Tullahoma to McMinnville until September, 1862. The unit was assigned to the 29th Brigade, 8th Division, Army Ohio when it retreated to Nashville, and was involved in the siege of Nashville, Tennessee between September 12 and November 7, 1862.

The unit was then assigned to the 2nd Brigade, 2nd Division, Center 14th Army Corps, Army of the Cumberland, and stayed at Nashville until December 26, at which time they advanced on Murfreesboro between December 26 and 30, 1862. Aaron Fenimore's unit then participated in the Battle of Stone's River between December 30, 1862 and January 3, 1863. After that Battle, his unit was attached to the 2nd Brigade, 2nd Division, 14th Army Corps, and served duty at Murfreesboro until June, 1863.

Aaron was hospitalized at Nashville, Tennessee beginning 22 May 1863, and he was still there in January and February of 1864 [when he was still absent from the muster rolls for his unit]. We can therefore deduce that Aaron's illness occurred sometime during his unit's service in middle Tennessee at Murfreesboro during May 1863 when the unit was performing duty at Murfreesboro. This is also likely the time that Aaron met Nancy Sharp. In fact, the unit was in middle Tennessee until August 16, 1864. A muster out Roll dated 9 Nov 1864 at Camp Chase, Ohio states Aaron was last paid to 30 Jun 1863, still as a Private. He was transferred to the Veteran Reserve Corps on 17th of March in 1864 by General Order of the War Department No. 362 dated 29 Oct 1864. Aaron had been on the sick rolls most of the time he was on duty in the military after the Battle of Stone's River and the unit's duty at Murfreesboro. We know from Muriel's history that Aaron Fenimore served as a kind of local "doctor" to the people in his Oregon community. The family legend is that Aaron had trained and served as a medic during the war, and that is where he learned his skill. That might also explain why he spent so much time in the hospital at Nashville.

Aaron was born 26 April 1844. He was the youngest of nine children born to Ebenezer Fenimore, Jr. and Nancy Mowbray. His father Ebenezer, Jr. died on August 29, 1854 at the family home in Chillicothe, Ross County, Ohio. By the 1860 census, Aaron was living with his widowed mother Nancy [nee Mowbray], in Union Township, Ross County, Ohio and they were working their farm next door to Aaron's brother Ebenezer Fenimore III and his wife Elizabeth (Day). The nearest Post Office was at Frankfort, Ohio.

Aaron's family were among the earliest settlers in the Military District of Ohio, where bounty land warrants were traded following their issue from Revolutionary War service claims. Aaron's grandfather, Ebenezer Fenimore, Sr. purchased almost 1700 acres [1690 2/3] on April 20,1803 from [Judge] John and Catherine Wilkins who lived in a borough of Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. The land he purchased was located in Union Township, Ross County, Ohiom and had been surveyed by the founder of Chillicothe, Ohio, General Nathaniel Massie. The land was located on the North Fork of Paint Creek on a stream called Dry Run about five miles south east of Frankfort, Ohio. The location is today identified along Byers Run, five miles west of what is now Chillicothe, Ross County, Ohio. The land deed was written in Pittsburgh and recorded in Ross County, Ohio.

Ebenezer moved his family from their home in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania to the new land in Ohio sometime after that 1803 purchase, and thereafter established his fam on that land. His move is documented in "The Mowbray Journal," Vol 1, No. 2, Aug. 1976, on page 18. That farm became the home for the Fenimore family for several generations; Aaron's father Ebenezer was the first child in his family born on the new farm, and lived out his life, married, and raised his family in the same area. Thus, Chillicothe, in Union Township, Ross County, Ohio is the place where Aaron was born and raised. His family is consistently enumerated in the U.S. Census entries in that location up to 1860 at the beginning of the civil war.

The elder Ebenezer Fenimore, Sr. was buried in August, 1854 in the Bowdle-Morrison Graveyard just outside of Chillocothe, Ross County, Ohio. Upon his death, Ebenezer left the farm to both Ebenezer, Jr. and his brother Henry. Ebenezer was left all residual land after a specific legacy given to brother Henry in their father's will dated April 12, 1841. Ebenezer, Jr's resulting farm consisted of 284 1/2 acres and was located next to his brother Henry's farm. Unfortunately, Ebenezer, Jr. died only about 3 weeks after Ebenezer, Sr. died, and Aaron was only age 10. Thus, for much of his adult life, Aaron's mother was a widow.

Before Ebenezer Fenimore, Sr. moved to Ohio, he had been a prominent citizen of Allegheny County, Pennsylvania. In 1793, Ebenezer was listed as Ensign Ebenezer Finnemore in the militia of Allegheny County, Pennsylvania. Ebenezer rose through the military ranks and by the War of 1812 he was a Brigadeer Quartermaster. In 1798, Ebenezer Fenimore owned a log cabin in Pittsburgh and was one of only a few homeowners on the tax rolls. Details from that tax list [name spelled "Ebenz Finnamore"] establish that Ebenezer's cabin was 22' by 24," was two stories high, had nine windows and 108 lights, and stood on a 4800 sq. foot lot. The home and land were stated to be worth $500.00, which was a considerable sum at that time.

The local newspaper Scioto Gazette summarizes Ebenezer Fenimore Sr.'s life in the area after the move to Ohio. In 1808, Ebenezer ran for Ross County Commission, and thereafter served in that position for many years. Based on his service in the War of 1812, Ebenezer was issued a bounty land warrant, which he sold to John Hough of Chillicothe, Ohio. Mr Hough had also purchased a warrant issued to Ebenezer's son William for his service in the War of 1812. Family tradition holds that Ebenezer and his wife Mary [Rhett] are buried on his land near Chillocothe, Ohio..

Part 4: The SHARPS & GRAVES - The Regulators and Our Carolina Cumberland Connection

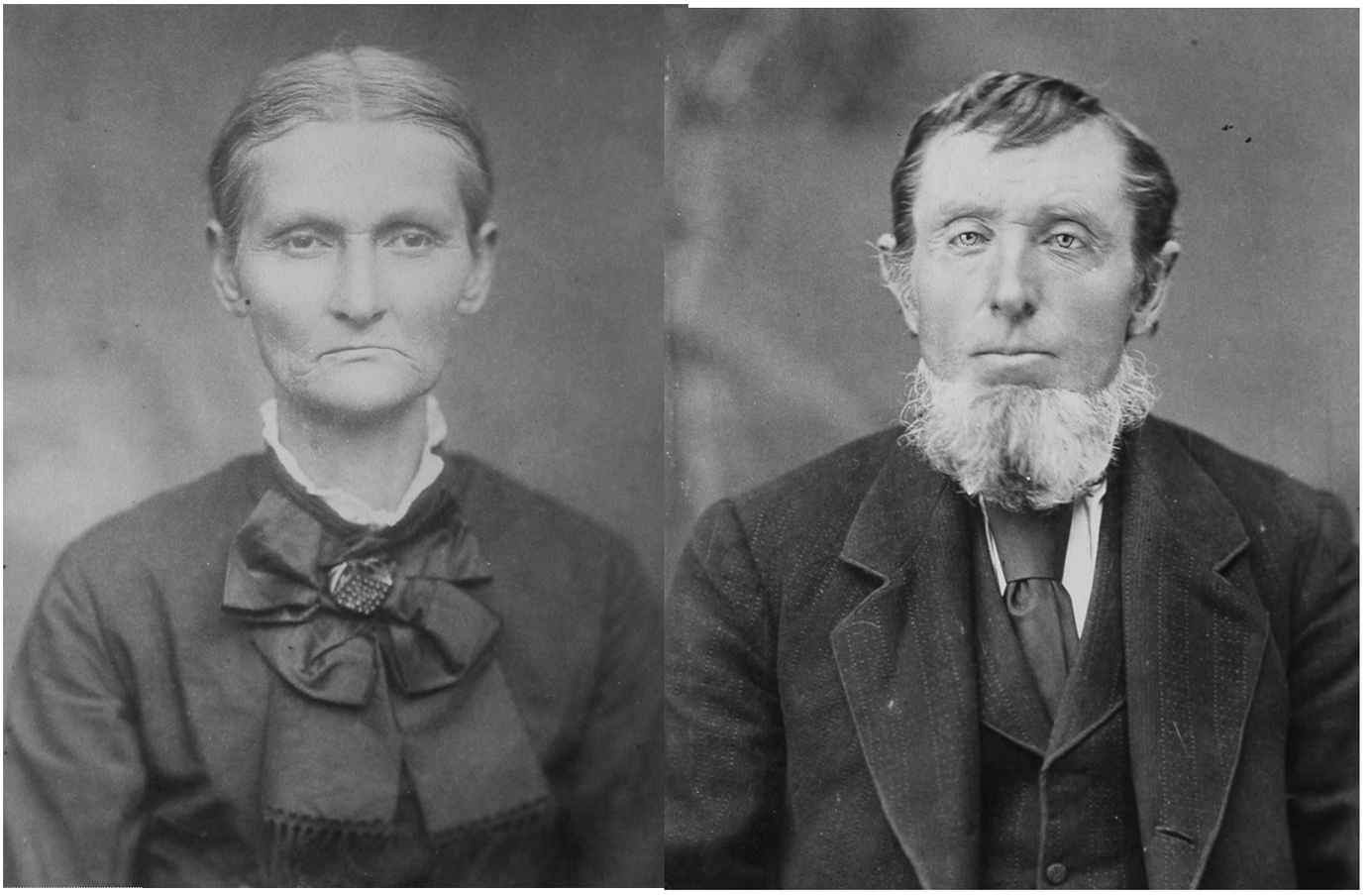
Nancy Elizabeth Sharp -- the wife of Aaron Fenimore -- was the daughter of Levi Sharp and his wife Elizabeth [Betsy] Graves. The Sharps and Graves were very close; both Elizabeth and her sister Rebecca had married Sharp boys. In fact, their father Anthony Graves was himself the son of Sarah [Sallie] Sharp, the sister of Levi's grandfather Heinrich [Henry] Sharp, Jr. Both Sarah and Henry were the children of Heinrich [Henry] Sharp, Sr. and Barbary Graves!. It is commonly believed that Henry and Barbary were the children of the immigrants of both families.

Above: Elizabeth [Betsy] & Levi Sharp, the parents of Nancy Elizabeth Sharp; Below: [Nancy [Sharp] Fenimore Symonds (left) and her daughters Stella Batchelder, Lizzie Steele

THE SHARP FAMILY

German through-and-through are our Sharp and Graves and other inter-related families[1]. Beginning --- like so many other such families -- in the German Palatinate, emigrating to Holland, and journeying from there to America by way of England, Like most other ethnic Rhinelanders, our Sharps arrived in the Port of Philadelphia and settled, first, in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania. We only know our Sharp lineage for certain beginning with

1 The original Germanic spelling of the surname was "Schaup," "Scharp," "Scherb," or "Scherp" with other similar variants; the surname has become Anglicized as "Sharp" or "Sharpe." Other Germanic surnames that have been Anglicized (and from whom we are also descended in our German-originating Sharp lineage) are Coble [originally "Kobel"], Moser, Other Germanic family names revealed by our family research in that lineage also include Keck, Rotter, Geisler, Volckel, Sonss, Weber, Eckersweiler, Mittelmeyer, Kunkel, and Loeser, among others.



Above: Rebecca [Graves] & her husband Isaac Sharp; Rebecca is the sister of Elizabeth Graves, and a daughter of Anthony Graves; Isaac Sharp is the son of Henry Sharp and Elizabeth Black; Henry was the son of Caswell Conrad [or Coonrad] Sharp and Sallie Gibbs; Caswell was the son of Heinrich Sharp, Sr. and Barbary Graves; thus, Caswell and Henry Sharp, Jr. were brothers; Isaac's father Henry and Levi's father John Honus Sharp were their children and therefore first cousins; Isaac and Levi were thus 2nd cousins.

Isaac Henderson Sharp & wife Nancy Elizabeth White family, about 1887; back left to right - Theodosia, Nancy [mother], Margaret, Catie; front left to right: Hattie[?], Isaac [father], Corum, Whitie, Celia[?]; Isaac Henderson Sharp is a descendant of Ernst Sharp, the original 1738 immigrant.

Henry Sharp, Sr., born 4 May 1753. He is believed to have been born and married in Pennsylvania, but the location and nature of his origins are the subject of much disagreement among Sharp family researchers.

In my view, the most plausible theory is that Henry was the son of Isaac Sharp. a Palatine German emigrant aboard the *Queen Elizabeth*, on its arrived in Philadelphia on 16 September 1738 with 3 other related Sharp males. Henry was born in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, where his father Isaac died. Henry and other members of their tight-knit German community left Lancaster County and relocated down the Great Carolina Wagon Road before the American Revolutionary War, thereby migrating into Montgomery County, Virginia and Orange County, North

Alexander Hamilton Sharp Family: back left to right: Sarah Jane Sharp [daughter of Levi & Elizabeth, sister of Nancy Elizabeth Sharp Fenimore]; John, Ruth, Jacob, Alexander Hamilton Sharp; front: Anna, Mary, about 1885. Alexander Hamilton Sharp was the son of William Sharp, brother to Heinrich Sharp, Jr. and Sarah Sharp who married Anthony Graves; Alexander was the cousin of Levi's father Johannes Honus Sharp; Many of these Sharp families lived together in the vicinity of Neosho, Nodaway County, Missouri after removing from the Knox Valley, Tennessee.

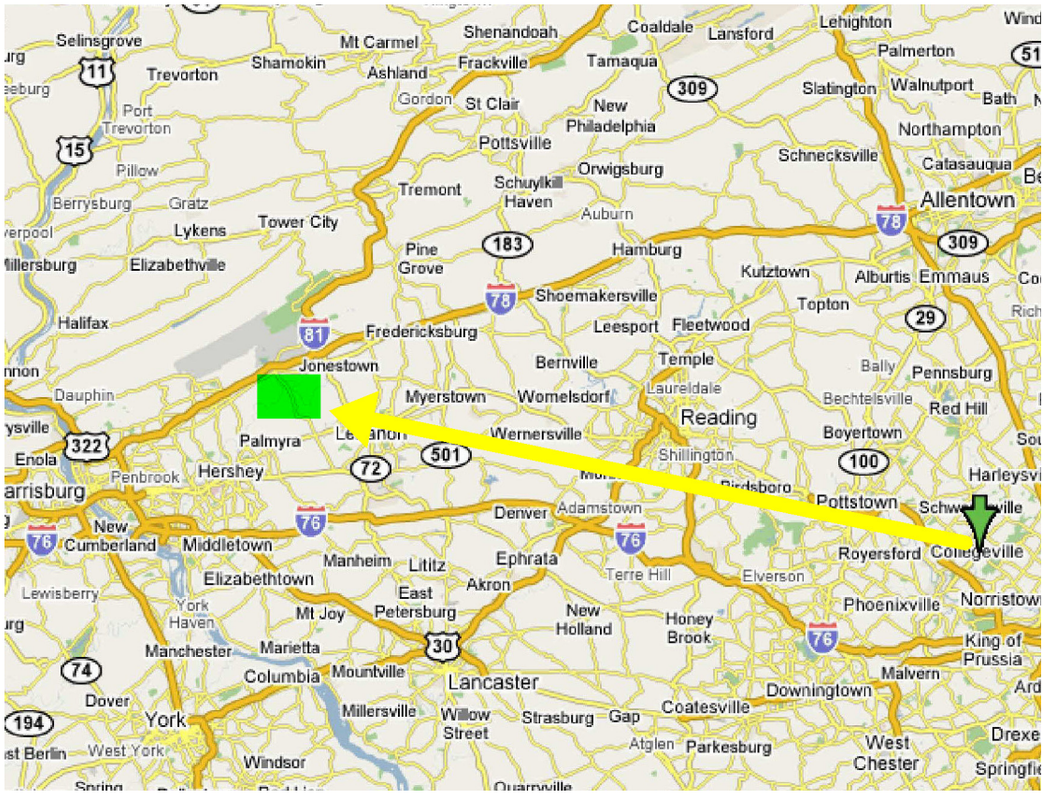
Carolina. Thereafter, some of those German families migrated through the Cumberland Gap down the Wilderness Road to the Knox Valley area of middle Tennessee. Later generations of Sharps located even further west.

There is little doubt that our Sharps were ethnic Germans. George Sharp and his wife Catherine Elizabeth Kirk were known to have owned a German Bible, and the Sharp families were members of ethnic German communities and churches. In fact, they lived in communities where little English was spoken and German religious traditions were predominant. For example, in 1797, the Davis Creek Church was built at Speedwell, Claiborne County, Tennessee on land donated by Phillip Ausmus, a Dunkard preacher. Records from the church show that among early members of this pioneer church were a number of Sharps and related families. The Dunkard sect was founded in Westphalia, Germany in 1708. Johann Peter Ausmus and his two sons Phillip and Benjamin emigrated from Germany, and landed at Philadelphia on October 4, 1752.

Nevertheless, several competing theories of our origin exist; so, before I begin a detailed description of what I believe to be the most salient history for our Sharp family, I will endeavor to describe the alternative theories that have been propounded by other researchers. One source states that Henry Sharp Sr.,'s father was named William Sharp.[2] Yet other theories are that he was named Benjamin Sharp and was from Ireland; that he was actually the Sharp brother immigrant named George, and that Henry, Sr. was a brother to John, Aaron and George Sharp[3] as well as Elizabhth (Mrs. Nicholas Counts).

2 Our Union County Heritage, Vol. II, Page 199.

3 Stockwell, Roy, JOHN GRAVES (17003-1804) & HIS DESCENDANTS, (Kansas City, MO: 1954; Available Online at HeritageQuest.com), at page 170 quoting William Carroll Graves.



Map showing relative locations of Collegeville and Trappe area and East Hanover Township, within Pennsylvania -- locations of Sharp families after arrival in Philadelphia.

What we know for certain about Henry is that he lived in Orange County, North Carolina and Montgomery County, Virginia. The Roy Stockwell book has the following information about Henry: "Sometime prior to 1785 he lived in Orange County, North Carolina, as is indicated by a record stating that on June 3, 1786 Henry and Barbara Sharp of Botetourt County, Virginia, deeded to one Michael Holt land situated in Orange County, N.C. As his name does not appear on the tax lists of Orange county after 1782 it is probable that he left Orange County about that time for Virginia. His name appears on a tax lists for Botetourt County, Virginia for 1782-87. In the Brief of Deeds of Montgomery County, Va., Nov. 2, 1796, appears this entry: "Henry Sharp and his wife Barbara to George Williams, 112 acres on Stinking Creek." At this time Henry was a resident of Knox County, Tenn. Tax records seem to indicate that he left Virginia for Tennessee in 1789."

THE SHARP IMMIGRANT

Our most plausible immigrant Sharp ancestor was Isaac Sharp, one of four Sharps who arrived at the Port of Philadelphia on September 16. 1738 after transporting from Rotterdam, Holland, by way of Deal, England. At age 26 Isaac Sharp was on the "List Of Foreigners Imported In The Ship *Queen Elizabeth,* Alexander Hope, Master, From Rotterdam. [We were fortunate that Alexander Hope, commander of the ship *Queen Elizabeth* saw fit to add the ages to his passenger manifests.] He took the oath of allegiance the same day in Philadelphia [*Foreigners Who Took The Oath of Allegiance, 1727-1775*, Pages 160-162; contained in Genealogy.com's resource: German and Swiss Settlers in America, 1700s-1800s]. Also on the same ship appear the names "Heinrich Weber," "Jno. Georick Sharp" [age 16,] "Ernst Sharp" [age 39], and directly before his own name "Georick Sharp" [age 36]. The Sharps listed are almost certainly related, and likely brothers. These ages of Isaac, George, John George, and Ernst are entirely consistent with the ages of these men as recorded in our Sharp family genealogy. [Isaac's birth year is inferred to be 1660 based on his age; no actual birthdate is known.] Their anglicized names by which they are commonly called today are Isaac, Aaron, Johan, and George. Both Ernst and Isaac wrote in their own handwriting, but Goerick and Jno. Goerick only made marks, indicating that they could not write their names. On the lists, Ernst and Jno. Georick are always adjacent to each other [likely father and son], and then Johan Georick [later listed

just as Johan] and Isaac are always adjacent to each other [probably brothers, and also a brother to Ernst].[4] Other passengers aboard the *Queen Elizabeth* was J. George Kunkel.

After landing at the port of Philadelphia, these immigrants moved to the north and west into a region of the present Bucks & Montgomery Counties, settling at New Providence, now Trapp and Collegeville & Goshenhoppen or Faulkner Swamp at New Hanover. In 1743, Anna Elizabeth "Scherb" (the daughter of Ernst Sharp) was married to Heinrich Wilhelm (anglicized "Henry Williams") in Bethel Township in Berks County, Pennsylvania. By 1744, Ernst and George Sharp were recorded in the Pott's Manuscripts as being on the frontier of the Tulpehocken area of Pennsylvania - now part of Berks and Lebanon counties. Between 1744 and 1746, Potts was a traveling merchant who supplied various goods to the settlers living in the outlying districts. The records of the purchases made by these settlers were administered through the Tulpehocken Trinity Church. Other family names that occurred in these Tulpehocken Accounts were Heinrich Wilhelm (Henry Williams), Johannis Graf (John Graves), Heinrich (Henry) Loy. Other people also known to have been in the same area were Anna Elizabeth Sharp and Anna Barbara Sharp.

In the same vicinity but somewhat to the west was the Tax Collector for the East Hanover Section of then Lancaster County (presently eastern Lebanon County, Pennsylvania) for 1756, who was Isaac Sharp. This Isaac Sharp was probably the Isaac Sharp who arrived aboard the *Queen Elizabeth* in 1738. As more and more settlers arrived and moved on further into the interior, they followed the Indians trails through the Schuykill, Perkamon, Oley and Lehigh Valleys until they reached the Kittaniney Hills or Blue Mtns, which were then considered the frontier or the outer limits of the white mans settlement bordering on the lands still held by the Indians. During 1756, several of the settlers in Isaac Sharp's Tax District were massacred by Indians and there was a mass exodus of inhabitants (about 50%) towards more protected areas to the east. However, Isaac continued to appear on the tax rolls through 1781. Isaac appears never to have left the area, and died there in 1783 [Mrs. Peters states he died about 1767]. Isaac left a wife, Margaret, and the following five children: 1) John; 2) John Henry[5]; 3) Margaret [married George Pritz or Pretz]; 4) Veronica [married Jacob Setter]; and 6) Barbara [married Valentine Kintzer]. If we are correct that he was age 26 at his arrival in 1738, he would have been about 71 years old [55 per Mrs. Peters] when he died.

SHARPS DOWN THE GREAT WAGON ROAD

Although our Sharp progenitor was still residing in his East Hannover home at the time of his death in 1783, most of his progeny had moved further south, along with descendants from the related Sharp immigrants aboard the *Queen Elizabeth* in 1638. After leaving Pennsylvania, the father-son pair Ernst and George Sharp were first found at a settlement along the New River plateau in Virginia.

The Appalachian Ridge crosses from Pennsylvania southward into the Valley of Virginia. At the southernmost point of the Appalachians and to the west of the ridge is a plateau sloping southwest toward the New River. New River rises in the mountains of North Carolina and takes a north westerly course across southwest Virginia. At the mouth of and in conjunction with Gauley River, its name is changed to the Great Kanawha River and flows into the Ohio River.

---

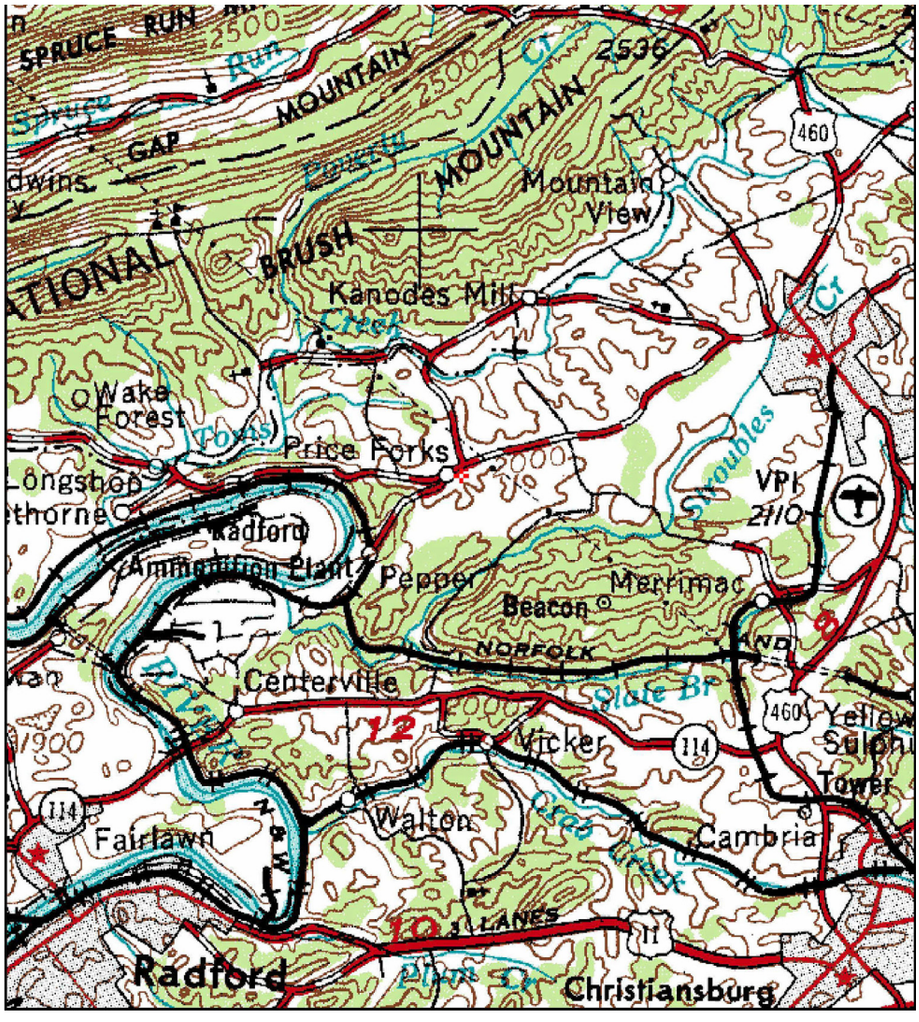
4 The three lists on which the four names appear are recorded as:
ERNST SHARP 39; JN GEORICK SHARP 16 -- GEORICK SHARP, 36; ISAAC SHARP, 26.
ERNST SCHARP; GEO. (X) SHARP-- JOHANN GEO. SHARPE; ISAAC SCHARP
ERNST SCHARP; GEORGE (X) SHARP -- -GEORGE (X) SHARP; ISAAC SCHARP

5 John Henry [John Heinrich], recorded in church records as son of Isaak Scherff, born May 4,1753; baptized May 31' Sponsors, Heinrich Webber and wife [Isaac's wife was Margaret Webber]; Rev. John Casper Stoever.

The New River plateau would sit within the path of settlement of western Virginia and beyond for travelers who would travel the Great Carolina Wagon Road in the coming years, so it seemed a good place to begin a settlement. [This is the location of what would become Blacksburg, Montgomery County, Virginia.] Because this plateau was located on the western side of the Appalachian mountains, the settlers were exposed to the continuing threat of Indian hostilities. Nevertheless, German families began to arrive as settlers in the area as early as 1738. The earliest group of German immigrants to what would be called the "New River Settlements" arrived aboard the *Winter Galley* from Rotterdam on September 5, 1738 and then migrated to the New River in North Carolina. Among them were Augustine, Henry, Daniel, and Michael Price as well as Philip Harless. Augustine Price was married in 1748 to Anna Elizabeth Sharp, daughter of Johannes Ernst Herman Sharp [Ernst, or anglicized to "Aaron"] and his wife Anna Maria. [This was Anna Elizabeth's second marriage; her first husband, Heinrich Wilhelm [Henry Williams] died at Peaked Mountain in 1747. This is an example of the interrelatedness between the Germany families, and demonstrates why they relocated as a group.]

In 1748 James Patton -- a land speculator -- explored that plateau area with others, to locate and survey lands for the Woods River Grant. The lands were surveyed and then offered for sale to new settlers. The first settlers who arrived to take up lands under the grant included a widow, Mrs. Eleonor Draper, her daughter Mary and son John, and Thomas Ingles and his sons William, Mathew and John.

Additional German settlers came from Lancaster County and settled with the German community that had begun there in 1738. The 1746/7 settlements have been documented by Patricia Givens Johnson in The New River Early Settlement where she notes that many persecuted Rhinelanders sought sanctuary on the New River in Virginia in 1746/7. Settlers she listed in her work included John and Henry Miller, George Hoppaugh, Peter Shafer, John Negley, the Graffs [our ancestors], Webers, Grebils, Freys, Landes, and others. The first settlers on the plateau section of the New River were Germans on Sinking Creek, extending to Reed Creek, where the settlers were mostly



Map showing locations of Stroubles Creek and Tom's Creek relative to the New River; this is on the plateau on the western slope of the Appalachians at the New River settlement site.

The plateau on the western slope of the Appalachians -- the red X shows the general location of the New River settlement.

Scotch and Irish. The first record of settlers on Sinking Creek was in 1749. This German settlement included bottoms at the mouth of Thoms (Tom's), Strouble and Back Creeks. Thoms Creek was first called Jones Creek. The first settlers on Sinking Creek, later removing to Thoms (Toms) Creek were John and William Trolinger. St. Peter's - St. Michael's Lutheran Church was built on Toms Creek and was the first church built by the Germans in that vicinity.

In July 1748 Lorton sold to Michael Price and Philip Harless 400 acres at the mouth of Jones or Tom's Creek and 400 acres to Augustine, Henry and Daniel Price at the Horseshoe Bottoms. This Price family were the children of David Preisch (Breisch) and Agnes Hoffman of Offenbach, Landau, Rheinland Pfalz, Germany. Their father David had recently died in 1735 before their emigration to Pennsylvania. After immigration aboard the *Winter Galley*, the Price and Harless families remained for a time in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, but soon came down the Great Carolina Wagon Road to the New River settlement in Virginia.

Early Adventures on the Western Waters, Vol I, by Mary B. Kegley and F.B. Kegley, also describes the settlement of Toms Creek, Dunkard's Bottom, etc. The survey for 7500 acres was made by John Buchanan in the fall of 1747 and subdivided by William Preston in the spring and summer of 1753. There were apparently several settlers already in the boundary and the borders of this 7500 acre tract, including in particular the Price's. The pre-existing and new settlers received their titles for the tracts in 1754. It is uncertain when any of the purchasers of these tracts came into the settlement. Adam Harman was known to have been in the same area early and is presumed to have arrived with or at the same time as the Dunkards, a group of German Seventh Day Baptists who first came there in 1745, from Lancaster County, Pennsylvania.

The settlers created two distinct settlements, one at Reed Creek and the other at Draper's Meadows. Draper's Meadows was also the location in which Ernst and George Sharp settled.[6] William Preston mapped the surveyed tracts of settlers in 1754, which shows exactly where John and George Sharp and Martin Loy lived that year. Based on those land records, we know that John, George and Ernst [Aaron] Sharp, along with Martin Loy and Augustin Price and their families settled on Tom's Creek near Blacksburg, Virginia sometime between 1745 and February 1753.[7]

By summer of 1755 many more people had joined the Drapers and Ingles at Draper's Meadows. Most were German with names of Moser, Lingle, Barger, Loy,[8] Cull, Leopard, Sharp, and Seilor. During the summer of 1755, James Patton, with his nephew William Preston, continued to visit Drapers Meadow while pursuing his duties as surveyor in the new Loyal Land Company. He was also the leader of the Augusta County Rangers, formed to protect the settlers from Indian attacks.

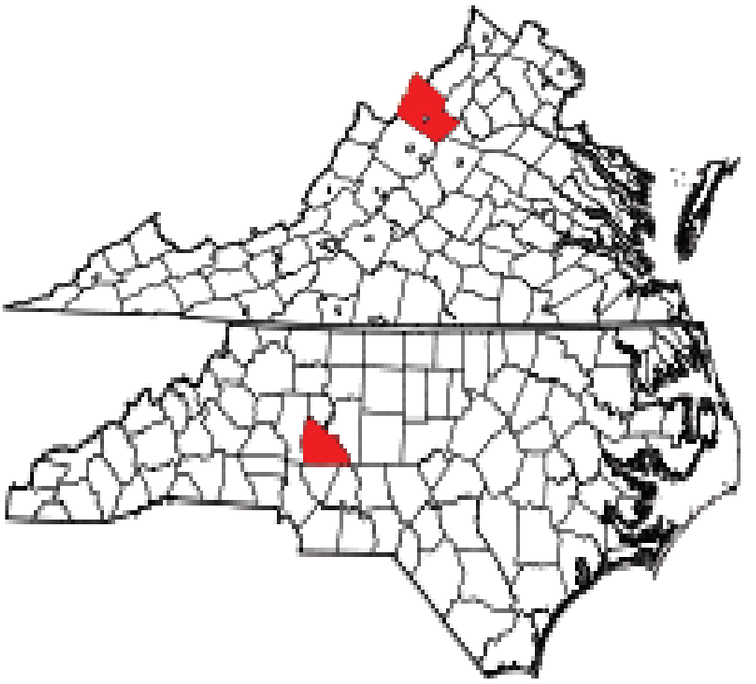
Unfortunately, the Sharps were not able to establish themselves in that location for long. Within only a

6 On Feb 17, 1753, John Patton's estate was appraised and the names of Ernst Sharp, John Sharp (John George?) and Martin Loy were listed as owing the estate for land that they had been occupying -- on Feb 1, 1754, there was an indenture between Col. James Patton of Augusta County, Virginia, and Harnis (no doubt "Honus"- or Ernst) Sharp of the same county, consideration 40 pounds, 320 acres on Tom's Creek, a branch of the New river; corner of George Sharp's. Witnesses were William Preston and Jacob Harmon. On the same date, another indenture between Col. James Patton and George Sharp of Augusta County, consideration 35 pounds, 285 acres on Tom's Creek, corner of Martin Loy's land. Same witnesses as above. On the same date, another indenture to Martin Loy - 230 acres on Tom's Creek corner of George Sharp's land.

7 Lyman Chalkley's Chronicles of Augusta County, VA, also documents the presence of at least two of the Sharps, perhaps three, in Augusta County in 1753-4

8 On Sep 26, 1741, a Martin Loy arrived in Philadelphia aboard the *St. Mark* from the Palatinate. According to Loy family history, the Loy family descend from the French Huguenots who fled France to live in Germany. Isaac Sharp [the immigrant] was a witness to Martin Loy's will. Johann George Sharp was Martin Loy's son-in-law, because Martin's daughter Anna Marie married Johann George Sharp. Augusta County records show a Martin Loy as the next-door neighbor of [Johann]George Sharp in 1754. There appears to be no record of how long Martin Loy lived in Virginia or just when he moved to Orange County, North Carolina, but he died in Orange County in 1777.

few years, the Sharps had moved further south. The reason for their abrupt change is almost certainly tied to the history of the area. As competition for western lands between the French and English accelerated, the Indian harassment of settlers increased. Indian troubles had began in the area in May 1753, when sixty Indians reportedly raided, burning at least one house and stable, killed the family's dogs, burned the corn crop and threatened the family. There may well have been other such raids and perhaps even people killed, of which there is no record.



Highlights show locations of Rockingham County, within Virginia and Rowan County, within North Carolina.

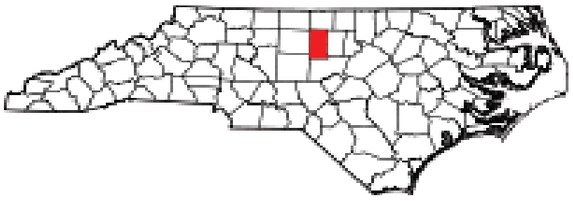
The trouble became explosive by May 1755 when Henry Zinn was killed on New River.[9] Thereafter, the Indians made a number of raids in the area during the summer of 1755, killing a number of people and taking several women and children captive, among them Mrs Mary Ingles. The Ingles and their in-laws, the Drapers, did not live far from the Sharps and Loys. The raid, which took place on Jul 30, 1755, is referred to by many as the Draper Massacre. Col. James Patton was visiting the Ingles that day and was killed during the Indian raid. Patton and Preston were at Drapers Meadows when Shawnee Indians attacked, killing several persons including Patton and Mrs. Draper, and carrying off Mary Draper Ingles with her two sons and Betty Draper, wives of William Ingles and John Draper. William Preston was on an errand away from the community and escaped harm. Mrs. Ingles soon escaped and after an arduous trip with another captive returned to her home. Mrs. Draper and Tommy Ingles were eventually ransomed and returned to their families, but all moved to other fortified settlements. The men, and those from the nearby German communities, kept their lands but moved their families to forts and spent much of their time fighting the Indians.

After the Drapers Meadow massacre in July, 1755, people from New River settlements fled in every direction -- including our extended Sharp family; the refugees from New River followed the Indian Road or Catawba Road down the North Fork of Roanoke River to meet the road to Carolina [Alternatively, they may have followed the Catawba Valley north toward the James River and on north to the Augusta Shenandoah settlements near Peaked Mountain]. The Germans called this "Pinquit Mountdan" on "Chanithor" in "Agoste."

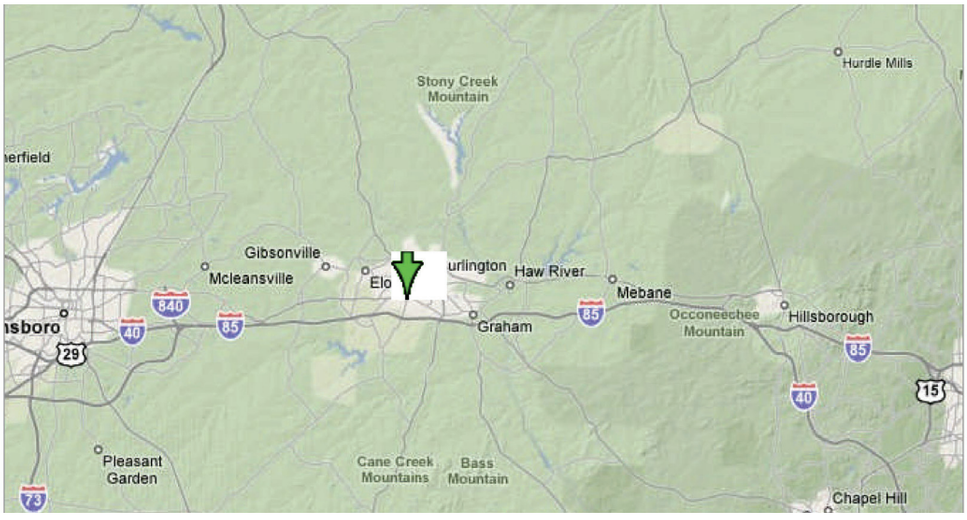
Near the Peaked Mountain settlement on Cub Run near Elkton, Rockingham County, in Southwest Virginia escapees from New River found safety. Unfortunately, our Sharp family members had to abandon any claim with their land in the New River area, and that land "lapsed."[10]

9 Thereafter, the remaining Dunkards suddenly left, and Garret Zinn who had purchased the Dunkard Bottom land from Eckerling moved to Carolina to keep from being murdered by the Indians.

10 Early Adventures, page 177 documents the lapsing of the tracts: "[i]n the northeast corner of the 7500 acre tract, George Sharp, Harniss - [Herman -- recorded in family records as Johannes Ernst Herman Sharp, but anglicized to Aaron] Sharp, and Martin Loy had deeds early in 1754. These tracts lapsed, indicating they were abandoned, probably at the time of Indian troubles beginning in 1755." Later deeds regranting the lapsed lands reference the earlier Sharp residence: Nov 4, 1776 - "Agreement between Executors of



Above: Highlight shows location of Alamance County, within North Carolina; Below: Green Arrow shows approximate location of 1745 settlement west of the Haw River in Orange County, North Carolina.



An early church established by the Germans who settled there after leaving New River was the Peaked Mountain church: The first settlers on New River, near Peaked Mountain, were: Adam, Jacob, and Valentine Harman; Michael, Henry, Daniel and Augustine Price (Preiss, Preis, Preisch, Preuss); and John Phillip Harless (Herlas, Horlas, Herlass, anglicized to Harless). Some of the Sharp family members also removed to that area.

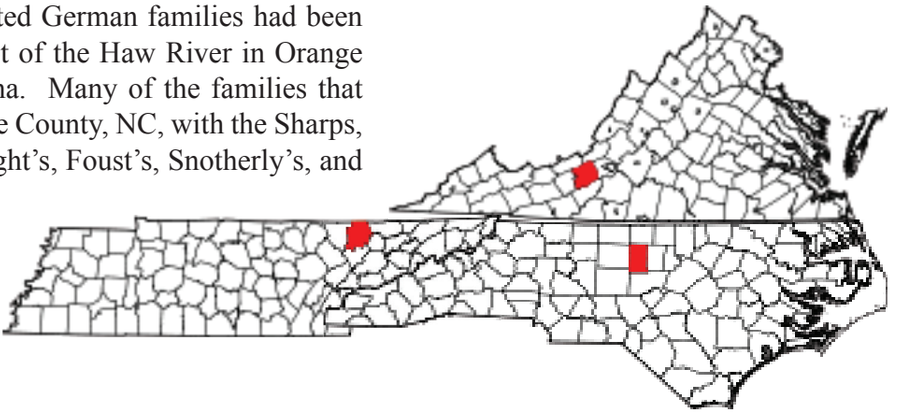
The records of the Peaked Mountain Church[11] is one of the oldest and most important German record books to be found in the upper part of the Shenandoah Valley. It contains much historical and genealogical information about the early German Reformed and Lutheran settlers in Rockingham County (once part of Augusta), which cannot be found anywhere else. Among the very earliest records of that church are two baptism records for the children of Heinrich Wilhelm and Anna Elizabeth Sharp (son Michael in 1745, and son George Henry in 1747); these would have been the grandchildren of Ernst Sharp (who was 46 years old in 1745), and the nephews of Johann George Sharp, who was age 23 in 1745, and the sponsor for the children.

Ernst and George Sharp, along with other German families from New River were next found in Rowan County, North Carolina where they became naturalized citizens on 22 September 1764. On that date, both Ernst and George Sharp became naturalized, along with other Germans including Martin Loy, Conrad Stoner, Jacob Summers, and Adam Smith; other Germans naturalized the same year in Rowan County whom we know to be related to our Sharps include John Graves, Lodaweek Clap, Lodaweek Albright, Valentine Lingle, George Valentine Clap, and Lawrence Lingle. It appears, therefore, that quite a few of the German families who escaped from the Draper's Meadow massacre relocated to Rowan County, North Carolina. In fact, other Germans in Rowan County in the 1760s included Valentine and Lawrence Lingle, Adam Moser, John Leopard and Coonrod Seilor.

Col. J. Patton and George Martin and John Miller of Sinking Creek for 835 acres sold to them, located above the land of William McMullen and Toms Creek, and known by the name of Sharp Place [sic], being three surveys laid off to people of that name returned to the Patton estate (Preston Family papers, Library of Congress, #944)".

11 Record of the Peaked Mountain (Pinquit Moundyn) Church, Rockingham County, VA; Edited by Professor Wm. J. Hinke and Chas. E. Kemper. The first church mentioned in 1762 was located near the mill race of Mr. Herman. The second church was dedicated on Oct 23,1768, by the Lutheran preacher - Rev. John Schwarbach. On Oct 31, 1769, an agreement was signed by 45 persons according to which the church was to be a Union church of Reformed and Lutheran people. The names of Augustin Preisch [Price], Augustine Price, Jr., and Adam Herman [Harmon] appeared on the list of signers. The second church was located near Stoney Creek. The third church was dedicated May 27, 1804. It was located at McGayheysville, Virginia.

Meanwhile, a settlement of related German families had been established about 1745 on the land west of the Haw River in Orange [now Alamance] County, North Carolina. Many of the families that settled in the St. Asaph's District, Orange County, NC, with the Sharps, namely - Graves (Graff's), Loy's, Albright's, Foust's, Snotherly's, and Nicholas Gibbs (see Gibbs Family History), are known to have come from Berks and Lancaster Counties, as well as other counties in Pennsylvania, crossing Maryland and Virginia in wagons. The pioneers in that group were Lutherans.



Highlights show relative locations of Montgomery County, Virginia; Alamance County, North Carolina, and Campbell County, Tennessee [location of Sharp's Station].

Some of those settlements pre-date the 1755 massacre at Draper's Meadows. For exampl,e Ludwig Clapp's grant of 640 acres on the Alamance (River) was recorded in 1752. Others came after 1755, but by the mid1760's the settlement was substantial. Michael Holt's large acreage lay along the Great and Little Alamance. John Faust had land on Cain Creek and Adam Trollinger on the west bank of the Haw River, near the present railway crossing. Among the pioneer Germans were Henry Sharp, Sr. [probably the son of Isaac] and his brother John Joseph, along with their respective families, Christian Faust, Jacob Albright, Peter Sharp, Phillip Snotherly and David Efland. Records of land purchases in Orange County, North Carolina, and other court records of that county, show that about 1763, a George Sharp.[12] and an Aaron Sharp purchased land from Henry McCullough By

12 The 1759 Tax List of Albany Twp., Berks County, Pennsylvania lists a George Sharp. This is undoubtedly the George who was born in 1702 and who was one of the three original immigrant brothers. Because the group of Sharp migrants who left Pennsylvania did not include George, it was no longer necessary for Johann George [or "John" George; son of Aaron and nephew to George the immigrant brother] to have to use his first name in order to be distinguished from the elder George in legal matters. Thus, Johann George is the senior George Sharp in the Sharp family who lived at that time in North Carolina.

The 1780 Tax List for St. Asaph's District, Orange County, North Carolina listed "George Sharp, Jr." no property and "George Sharp, Sr." 214 acres. Similarly, in 1783, George Sharp Jr. was taxed for 200 acres and George Sharp, Sr. for 270 acres. The "George Sharp, Sr." referred to on those lists was undoubtedly Johann George Sharp, son of Aaron, and "George Sharp, Jr." was his son, born 25 July 1755 in Orange County, North Carolina. That George Sharp, Jr. does not appear on the Tax Lists for Orange County after 1783, suggesting that he had left the area by that time. In 1787, George Sharp, Sr. is taxed for 214 acres of land; he appearson the Tax List again in 1788, but not thereafter.

John George Sharp died in Orange County, North Carolina in 1789; in May 1789, administration of the estate of George Sharp [e.g., Johann George Sharp] was granted to Aaron Sharp [Johann George's eldest son]. In the 1792 Tax List of St. Asaph's District, that Aaron Sharp is listed as "Aaron Sharp, Jr." and named as the administrator of the estate of George Sharp, Sr.. [He was called Aaron Sharp, Jr. in order to distinguish him from his uncle Aaron and brother to Johann George.] That Johann George was undoubtedly the original immigrant and member of the group of Sharps who were on the "List Of Foreigners Imported In The Ship Queen Elizabeth, Alexander Hope, Master, From Rotterdam. Qualified Sept. 16, 1738" in Philadelphia, listed in "Foreigners Who Took The Oath of Allegiance, 1727-1775, Pages 160-162 [contained in Genealogy.com's resource: German and Swiss Settlers in America, 1700s-1800s] as "Jno. Georick Sharp" [age 16]. George Sharp, Jr. is no longer mentioned in the Orange County tax lists after 1783. He does appear on the tax roll for Montgomery County, Virginia for 1788 and has several land deeds filed in 1790's in that area. In 1798, his son John Sharp married Winifred Kirk, in Montgomery County, Virginia. He also appears in the 1790's tax records of Botetourt and Montgomery Counties, Virginia, and is recorded as having purchased 199 acres from John and Phyllis Sharp on Aug 10, 1795, on Clover Bottom, Sinking Creek. He also purchased 75 acres on a branch of Sinking Creek called Bear Camp, from Tobias Tilllman. [Heinrich, Sr.'s son-in-inlaw and daughter.] George Sharp, Sr. apparently left Montgomery County, Virginia around 1798 and is next seen in the records of Grainger County, Tennessee, residing in that portion which later became Claiborne County. In 1831-32, George Sharp, his wife and 9 of his 11 children and all their families, left Claiborne County and settled in or near Macoupin, Greene & Morgan Counties, Illinois. He died on 25 September 1833 in Macoupin County, Illinois. However, one of his children was named George Sharp, so when they resided

1773 there were so many Germans in western Orange County that J.F.D. Smyth, an English traveler, experienced difficulty in finding anyone who understood his language in some areas west of Hillsboro, North Carolina!

The first church built by German settlers in the Alamance was a log building near Law's Church, now on the old road from Hillsboro to Salisbury. It was a union Lutheran and German Reformed Church. Stoners Church was organized about 1758, with Rev. Weyburg as the first pastor. The founders of this church were the Albright (Albrechts), Fausts, Basons, Ephlands (Eflands), Gerhards, Loys, Steiners, Neases, Trollingers, Sharps and others, whose descendants still people that fertile region of the waters of the Haw River, Alamance and Stinking Creek. These immigrants were mostly from the counties of Schuykill and Berks in Pennsylvania, and from Maryland. Their houses of worship, in order to be central to the widely scattered settlements, was erected on the point of land formed by the confluence of the Alamance and Stinking Quarter streams. The place was very inconvenient of access and this accounts largely for its decadence. David Efland, son of Peter and Catherine Efland, together with Philip Snotherly, were the first deacons of Stoner's church, and Jacob Albright, Peter Sharp and John Faust were the first elders. By 1776 there were German schools along the Alamance and Stinking Quarter Creek; nearly every church was a school house. Our early German settlers preferred teachers to preachers. In many cases the teachers did the preaching.

Heavy tax burdens and other abuses suffered by the settlers caused some of the Haw River Valley German families to dispose of their property on the Alamance during the last year of the Revolution and relocate to the German settlement at Christianburg, Montgomery County, Virginia in the New River area [the vicinity where the Sharps had previously lived]. Among those were Henry Sharp, Sr. and his brother John Joseph, and Henry's many sons along with their neighbors. In fact, many German names that had been found in the Haw River (NC) area such as Trolinger, Faust, Albright, Sharp and Ephland (or Efland) were later in the New River settlement.

We find three Sharp men in early records of Orange County, North Carolina, in that part that in 1748 was cut off to create Alamance County. The timing of the Sharp family moves can be established by tax records. John Joseph Sharp [son of Isaac, and brother to Heinrich, Sr. -- our ancestor] --) 1779 - Orange County, North Carolina, St. Asaph's District [property valued at $1,462], and in --) 1780 [300 acres of land] 1782 - 1787 - Botetourt County, Virginia. This migration is also corroborated by a land transaction on 3 June 1786 wherein Henry and Barbara Sharp [our ancestors] deeded their land situated in Orange County, North Carolina to Michael Holt.[13] In Montgomery County, Virginia in 1787, John Joseph Sharp held 290 acres of land. By inference, he moved from North Carolina to Virginia sometime between 1780 and 1787, and we can almost certainly presume that our ancestor Henry's family followed as well.

THE SHARPS COME TO TENNESSEE

Henry with his brothers, John Joseph and Aaron (Big Aaron) or Aaron Sr. first came to Sharps Fort on the Cinch River from Virginia about 1784.[14] The Sharps were also land owners in Montgomery County, VA, and appear to have moved back and forth between these two German settlements before finally coming to settle on the

in Illinois, George Sharp, Jr. was referred to as "George Sharp, Sr." in order to distinguish him from his son, who became "George Sharp, Jr.."

13 Heinrich Sharp was living in Botetourt County, Virginia when an indenture was made on Jun 3, 1785, with Michael Holt of Orange County, North Carolina for 216 acres of land in Orange County, North Carolina. Henry's son-in-law, Tobias Tillman, and a John Sharp, were also carried in Botetourt County, Virginia tax rolls for 1782 - 87. In 1782, Henry had 220 acres of land surveyed and another 100 acres in Montgomery County on Sinking Creek, assigned to him by George Williams.

14 Sharp's Station antedated White's Fort at Knoxville, which was established in 1785. A Henry Sharp appears in the Hawkins records in 1786 [the year the County was created]

Clinch (River) in Tennessee. The settlers at Sharp's Station were of German descent and included families named Sharp, Albright, Clapp, Foust, Ridenour, Snodderly, Keck, Graves, Tiliman, Hinds and Gibbs.

Henry Sharp Sr migrated to the Southwest Territory in 1782; at that time he believed the settlement was in Virginia. The land transaction in which he purchased land was recorded in Botetourt County. Later when Botetourt County gave up a portion of it land mass to form other Virginia counties, he registered his land in Montgomery County, Virginia over time, boundary lines changed many times and Sharp's property in later years was considered to be in the colony of North Carolina. In 1792 the northern boundary line of Knox County, Tennessee was the Clinch River. That year the county court ordered roads to be built in the county in several directions from Knoxville--to Kelley's Mill and Craig's Mill on Nine Mile Creek; west to Campbell's Station; east to the mouth of the French Broad River; and north to the Clinch River. The northern route was probably chosen because of the early settlement at Sharp's Fort. More than thirty years passed before "The Roads and Distances from Place to Place along the State and Steam Boat Routes" was drawn by J.& W.W. Warr and published by H.S. Tanner of Philadelphia as a New Map of Tennessee in 1833. The "new map" traced the Jacksboro Road from Knoxville by way of Church Grove at Bull Run Creek to Loy's Cross Roads, then on to Jacksboro, the county seat of Campbell County.

An excerpt from Families of Norris Reservoir Area, pages 203-206, by Marshal A. Wilson, an employee of the Tennessee Valley Authority (TVA). This book was initially developed at the request of the TVA to document the history of the families who would be displaced by the Norris Dam.

> Most of the families of the Norris Area are related to the Sharps. The Sharp family is the most numerous of the Norris Area families. The earliest authentic records of families in the area relate to the Sharps of Sharp's Station. Sharp's Station was located about 3/4 mile south of Clinch River, in what is now Union County. The site of the blockhouse was on land owned by Lon Sharp when purchased by TVA as tract no NR-1604. . . . The date of this first settlement at Sharp's station is not known, but at the June 1792 term of Hawkins County Court, Henry Sharp, one of the settlers "entered strays" (unclaimed livestock, usually horses).[15] Also entering strays were Samuel Wilson, Jacob Miller and John Miller. On May 22, 1794, the Knoxville Gazette carried an advertisement of Jacob Sharp, stating that he had caught stray horses and the owner could recover them from him at Sharp Station on Clinch River. Sharp Station came within the boundaries of Knox County when it was established, and Knox County records contain several references to the station.

From this we can discern that Jacob Sharp was present at Sharp Station at least as early as 1794; this is almost certainly the Jacob b. 1778 who was the son of Heinrich Sharp and Barbara Graves, and sibling to Henry [Pioneer] Sharp, our ancestor. From 1786 to 1792, Sharp's Station remained within Hawkins County. In 1792, Anderson County was set off from Knox County, and Sharp's Station was placed within the bounds of Anderson County. (At the same time, Claiborne County was created out of Hawkins and Grainger Counties.) That changed again in 1806 when Campbell County was organized, including the portion of Anderson County west of the Clinch River [which included Sharp's Station]. The Claiborne County line then extended down the Big Valey (also known as the "Bold" Valley) to a point just below Irwin's Chapel; the line separating Claiborne and Campbell Counties bisected the home of Peter Sharp.

Other Sharps at Sharp's Station still held title to land on New River in Montgomery County near Christiansburg, Virginia. Local tax lists showed the names of Henry [Heinrich] Sharp, Sr. (son of Isaac; b. 1737, who married Barbara Graves, b. 1743); George Sharp (b. 1722, son of Aaron); and Coonrod Sharp (son of Henry, b.

15 An item of interest from Court Minutes, Clinton: Sep. 14, 1804, ordered that John Sharp have his mark recorded, which is a swallow fork in the left (ear) and a smooth cross and underbit in the right ear of livestock. In those days, cattle, hogs and sheep were thus marked and turned out on the range. That way, when strays were found, their owners could be identified.

1767). In 1802, John Joseph Sharp [brother of Henry] bought 123 acres in B. Valley, Anderson County, Tennessee. [This was perhaps in Big Valley, also called Bold Valley, just west of and a part of the Gaines Snodderly home.] A record at Clinton, Tennessee showed that a "Honnus Scharp" sold a tract of land to John Snodderly in 1803 which was peculiarly thus bounded: "On the east side by Rice, on the south by Sharp, on the west by Sharp and on the north by the Judgment Day."

SHARP'S FORT [Adapted from Union County, Tennessee Historical Society Website][16]

> Ramsey's Annals of Tennessee describes the early forts established among the wilderness settlements, "A fort, in rude military times, consisted of pieces of timber, sharpened at the end and firmly lodged in the ground; rows of pickets enclosed the desired space, which embraced the cabins of inhabitants, One blockhouse or more, of superior care and strength, commanded the side of the fort, with or without a ditch, completed the fortification or stations, as they were commonly called, Generally the interior cabins formed the sides of the fort, The place selected for a station was generally the cabin most central to the whole settlement to be protected by it, However, it was often otherwise, on an elevated position not surrounded by woods, cliffs, or other fastness, from which assailants could deliver fire under cover, contiguity to a spring, a river, or some stream of water, and supply of fuel--all of these had their influence in deciding the place selected for a fort" He went on to say, "At first, each of these stations was a single cabin in the midst of a clearing, When Indian disturbances broke out the inhabitants clustered together in the strongest one near them, and it then became a station.
>
> In 1935, the site of Sharp's Fort was located on a rise above an apple orchard on a 116 acre farm owned by Lon Sharp. The property was purchased by the Tennessee Valley Authority (TVA) as part of the reservoir for the Norris Dam project, Mattie Sharp Stooksbury, daughter of Lon Sharp, described her recollections of the fort as it had been related to her during an interview, According to Stooksbury, the fort was constructed of logs on the style of a barn, Families that occupied the fort were quartered in sections of the facility she called "stalls," Loopholes were cut in the exterior logs to observe the surrounding terrain as well as to serve as gun-slots in case of Indian attacks, There was probably one large fireplace inside the stockade for preparing meals as indicated by a pile of limestonerock at the site today. Wood for fuel was abundant and a large spring on the Lon Sharp farm was sufficient to provide fresh water for the fort, Individual homestead cabins of logs dotted the area surrounding the fort to facilitate farmers in clearing land and raising crops, However, when hostilities threatened, families moved into the fort. Sharps Fort afforded temporary shelter for a number of families that may have exceeded 40 persons during a siege.
>
> "The date of the founding of Sharp's Station is lost to us," William H, Thomas wrote, "but we know that the founders were Henry Sharp Sr, his many sons, a brother, John Joseph Sharp, their kinsmen and neighbors from the Haw River Valley in Orange County, North Carolina, and from other German settlements near Christianburg, Montgomery County, Virginia," Thomas records "the older citizens held the tradition that Sharp's Station was established (1783-1786) before James White erected White's Fort that later grew into the settlement of Knoxville, Tennessee, The site of Sharp's Fort is on the north slope of Big Ridge State Park in Union County, Tennessee, Originally the site was embraced by Botetourt County, Virginia, and later by Washington District, North Carolina, However, as the counties of Tennessee were established, the site was contained within the boundaries of Hawkins County established in 1786; Knox County (1792), Anderson County (1801), Campbell County (1806) and in 1850 was incorporated into Union County.

16 http://www.rootsweb.com/~tnkin/historical/stat1.htm

Following The Treaty of Paris terminating the French and Indian War in 1763, Botetourt and Augusta counties divided the state of Virginia--Botetourt County embraced the entire southern territory of the state including the Kentucky region. The early county of Botetourt should not be confused with that county today.

As early as 1769, permanent settlers lived in the Tennessee region, New settlers came into the area from Virginia and North Carolina in droves, The Treaty of Lochaber established a new line with the Cherokees on October 17, 1770, The boundary line began 'Ion the south branch of Holston River, six miles east of Long Island--thence to the mouth of the Great Kenhawa. This boundary--the western limit of the frontier settlements of Virginia and North Carolina--was a feeble barried against the immigrants who came in greatly increasing numbers to the West, The Holston River was considered the line dividing North Carolina and Virginia,,,when the line was afterwards run, many of those were found to be within the limits of North Carolina" (Ramsey),

The Tennessee region belonged to the British colony of North Carolina, but vast, rugged mountains separated settlers in Tennessee from the mother colony, which offered little protection. In 1772, a group of settlers established law and order in the wilderness by forming their own government, the Wataugh Association, Wataugh was merely an enlargement of the Virginia settlement near it and at the time believed to be part of the territory of that providence--the line dividing Virginia and North Carolina had not yet been run west of Steep Rock" (Ramsey) In 1788, North Carolina gained control of the area and in 1789, gave the Tennessee region to the United States. The federal government made the area into the "Territory of the United States South of the River Ohio (Southwest Territory)," Settlers living near the line separating the Southwest Territory and Virginia were to learn a number of years later of a new line run by commissioners from both states in 1802.

Indians who were hostile toward the white immigrants moving down the Hoiston, Clinch and Powell valleys in the Western district encouraged the early settlements to build stations or forts for protection from Indian attacks principally Cherokees of the Chickamauga faction and their allies, the Upper Creeks, Indian rights to the region of Sharp's Station were not extinquished until the Holston Treaty of 1791, Although the Territorial Governor (William Blount) made a treaty with the Cherokees to give up their land south of the Clinch River, many of the Indians remained hostile toward the settlers and hoped to drive them out,

Although there were many instances of Indian abhorrence in East Tennessee, only those that occurred at Sharp's Fort and at other forts in Union County are mentioned in this study, Indians struck at Amos Well's Station established in 1791 in Hind's Valley in May of 1792. To announce the attack, a man named Cole reached Campbell's Station in the afternoon with news that at ten o'clock that morning six Indians tomahawked and scalped two Wells brothers, ten and eight, as they picked strawberries near their father's home, In the same area the following morning Judge David Campbell, with six other men returning from the Cumberland Settlement, was fired upon, and William Clack was killed, Martin Ridenour, a member of the party, had four bullet holes in his jacket but was otherwise unharmed" (Ramsey).

Hanging Maw (Cherokee chief) was suspected of instigating the raids, Capt, John Beard with two other officers, Capt, Thomas Cox from Sharp's Fort, and Capt. John Chrishoim, and forty men scoured Cumberland Mountain in search of Hanging Maw's camp, When the camp was

discovered, an attack on the camp began and twelve to fifteen Indians were killed on June 12, 1793, This number included several principal chiefs, who had gathered there by order of President Washington, One reference lists the names of those killed or wounded in the attack: Captain Charley, Fool Charley, Scantee, William Rosebury, a white man, who had an Indian wife and a small family, Betty, the daughter of Kittegesgee, Among the wounded were Doublehead, Hanging Maw, and his wife and daughter, James Orr and Daniel Carmichael were fired upon as they ran from Hanging Maw's house Maj. Robert King, a government agent who had formed a connection with Hanging Maw's daughter, escaped through a window. Two hundred Indians were in arms in thirty minutes, and Captain Beard and his men fled. Captain Beard was brought before a court martial for this action, but the court refused to punish him. In retaliation for Captain Beard's actions, harrassment of the forts continued.

Sharp's Station was singled out for attacks because a number of men from the station had participated in the attack on Hanging Maw's camp, Moreover, Sharp's Station was near the Clinch River, which provided an escape and was closer to the Indian camp, On November 13, 1794, Peter Graves from Sharp's Station was tricked into exposing himself to an ambush as he followed the sound of what he believed was the call of a wild turkey, Waiting in ambush, the Indians shot him from behind, scalped, and inutulated his body with a sword,[17] For days the station was alerted for attacks but none came and the settlers relaxed somewhat.

Dr, C, L, Ridenour's book, The Land Between The Lakes published in 1941, recorded the following: "For several days (after Peter Grave's death) the people around the station were on the alert (for Indians, but there was no sign, Around the first of December, the weather was mild and several of the settlers crossed the Clinch and Powell River to a large salt peter cave (Meredith's Cave near Shanghai on property belonging to the Sharps) for niter for making gunpowder. Nicholas Gibbs (Revolutionary War soldier), Henry Sharp, Coonrod Sharp and Levi Hinds were the only men left at the station. About a score of small children perhaps as many women and girls and several boys were gathered from the cabins near-by."

"Just at dusk Gibbs heard several owls hooting on the mountain above. Something in the notes of the owls aroused his curiosity. The other men were convinced that a considerable force of Indians were about. The small children were placed in one of the cabins of the station while the women and girls with the boys were divided into four companies to withstand the Indian attack. Suddenly the owl calls ceased."

"In a short time the heavy chain at the stockade gate rattled and a gutteral 'open' aroused the bear dogs which rushed about the stockade barking furiously. The reply to the Indian at the gate was a rifle shot. The battle lasted through the night with no casualties to the people in the station. Before daybreak the Indians lifted the seige leaving blood on all sides of the station. This unreported Indian battle was perhaps the most hotly contested fight in the annals of East Tennessee. The bullet holes on the old log station remained as a silent reminder of the battle of Sharp's Station."

There were other attacks and killings in the area of East Tennessee as spasmodic fighting continued into the summer of 1795. When hostilities ceased altogether, East Tennessee homesteaders were able to devote more time to establishing their livelihoods. William Sharp (1780-1862), son of

17 William H. Thomas organized the Sharp's Station Improvement Association and erected bronze plaques marking the site of the station and the ledge of limestone where Peter Graves was killed on November 13, 17944 Thomas' documentation of the fort site came through Claude Sharp and his uncle Harvey Sharp.

Henry Sharp Sr, lived at the fort until his death earning him the nickname "Station Bill." Daniel Sharp, a brother, died at the fort in 1809 and was buried in an unmarked grave near the old fort. McHenry Sharp, son of Station Bill lived and died where his son Lon Sharp lived until the exodus of 1935 caused by the creation of Norris Lake. McHenry used some of the logs from the old fort to build a barn on the homestead.

Sharp's Fort Cemetery (Old Lon Sharp) located on the site of Sharp's Fort in Big Ridge State Park, was disinterred by TVA for the Norris Dam Project in the 1930's. Marshall Wilson worked in a number of capacities for the Tennessee valley Authority in the 1930s. He was interested in the early settlement of the Norris Basin so he compiled a book in 1982 which he entitled Tales for the Grass Roots of TVA 1932-1952. In his compilation he made a few brief notes regarding Sharp's Fort. "In 1935," he wrote, "Mrs. Lon (Lertie) Sharp walked with me from her house about a hundred yards to the site of the 'old blockhouse,' as she called it. Some of the old stones from a chimney were still protruding through the sod. Suddenly she stumbled and, with one foot, scratched the ground and came up with an Old English penny having the image of King George II on it. That King George had died in 1760." Wilson went on to say that in July of 1942, he led a group from the Smokey Mountain Hiking Club to the site and "erected a large sign designating its name, dates and, briefly, its purpose" A year later when he visited the site by boat, he discovered that the sign had disappeared.

The Old Lon Sharp Cemetery located in the meadow near the Sharp homestead was inundated by Norris Lake. TVA Land Survey No4 1604 assigned to the Lon Sharp farm shows two cemeteries were located on his property One of these cemeteries was designated by TVA as an "abandoned" cemetery (Old Lon Sharp) containing sixteen graves according to the survey. However, in the TVA Cemetery Removals the count is 19 graves. The second and larger cemetery was recorded by TVA as the Lon Sharp Cemetery and on the survey 68 graves are listed, while the survey of the cemetery records 73 graves. This writer searched the TVA Grave Removal records and counted only 70 graves removed It is interesting to note that although the murder and scalping of Peter Graves near the fort on November 13, 1794, and the burial of Daniel Sharp near his grave was well known among the families along the Clinch River in the 1930s, no mention of their names appear in any of the grave removal records. It has been reported that Graves' remains were the first to be buried in the cemetery near Sharp's Fort and that Daniel Sharp was buried there later. Six unidentified graves were removed from the Lon Sharp Cemetery4 Perhaps two of these graves contained the remains of Peter Graves and Daniel Sharp. There were no unidentified graves removed from the "abandoned" cemetery (Old Lon Sharp).

Site of Sharp's Station: [at extreme left, facing northwest]; looking southward across the meadow and rail fence, established by Henry Sharp, Sr. (1783-86), north slope of Lone Mountain in the background; Photo 1930's; provided by Gladys Stooksbury Snodderly, contained on Union County, Tennessee Historical Society website.

THE GRAFF/GRAVES FAMILY

Our Sharp ancestry intersects with the Graves family directly in multiple generations; in fact, my direct maternal line extends to Elizabeth Graves and a collection of German families. Elizabeth Graves was my mother's [Grace] mother's [Dixie Steele] mother's [Lizzie Fenimore] mother's [Nancy Sharp] mother [Rebecca Graves]. Levi Sharp married Elizabeth Graves in Claiborne County, Tennessee in 1840; Levi's great-grandfather was the father of Henry [Pioneer] Sharp, and is believed to be Heinrich Sharp, a son of the immigrant Isaac Sharp. Heinrich Sharp married Barbara Graves, a daughter of the immigrant Johann Sebastian Graff.[18] Elizabeth Graves was the daughter of Anthony Graves, who was a son of John [Clinch] Graves and Sarah [Sallie] Sharp; Sallie Sharp was a sibling of Henry Sharp and the daughter of Heinrich Sharp and Barbara Graves. John Clinch Graves was the son of John Jacob Graves, and the grandson of the immigrant Johann Sebastian Graff.[19]

Our Graves family progenitor was therefore Johann Sebastian Graff.[20] Johann Graff was born about 1702 in Hoffenheim, Sinsheim, Baden, Germany, within the German Palatinate. He arrived aboard the ship *Alexander & Ann* on 5 September 1730 at the Port of Philadelphia. "At the courthouse in Philadelphia, Sept. 5, 1730, a list was presented of the names of forty-six Palatines who with their families making in all about 130 persons, were imported here in the ship Alexander & Ann, William Clymer, master, from Rotterdam, but last from Deal." The list included the name Johann Sebastian Graff.[21]

Johann Graff married after his arrival in Pennsylvania in about 1740.[22] The migration of this Graves/Graff family from Berks County, Pennsylvania to North Carolina is readily substantiated. In the 1750's many 'Pennsylvania Dutch' migrated to western North Carolina and settled in what was Orange County [but since 1848 has been Alamance County], North Carolina. The prevailing sect was the German Reformed Church, and services continued in German until about 1800. "Old John" moved there prior to 1757 from Berks Co., Pennsylvania, and settled on Stinking Quarter Creek, a branch of the Alamance River. His name does not appear on the tax list for Orange county prior to 1757. In 1757 he purchased 640 acres of land from Hugh Dobbins. In 1762 he purchased 190 acres; in 1764 he bought 459 acres [the 1764 deed shows land purchased by "John Graves"], and in 1765 he purchased 457 acres. Judging from the Orange county records, John Graves was rather a large landowner, and one of the earliest settlers in the county. According to William H. Thomas, The Graves Church was erected on Stinking Quarter Creek where 'Old John of Stinking Quarter' lived, not far from present Burlington, North Carolina. John became naturalized in 1763[23] and lived out his life in his North Carolina home. William Carroll Graves, a great-

18 There is some disagreement about the identity of the father of Barbara Graves -- our ancestor who married Heinrich Sharp. Most records indicate Barbara's father to be John Sebastian Graves. *See* Nicholas Gibbs and His Descendants 1733-1977. However, at least one LDS Ancestral file designates John Michale [Hof] Graves as the progenitor of this Graves family. *See* The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, LDS Ancestral File: Graves. John Michael [Hof] Family Group Record, Family #1709784; [undocumented]; FAMILYSEARCH INTERNATIONAL GENEALOGICAL INDEX, v5.0; Intellectual Reserve, Inc., 1999-2002; [Available Online at FamilySearch.org]. Nevertheless, the vast weight of authority asserts that Barbara was the daughter of the immigrant Johann Sebastian Graves.

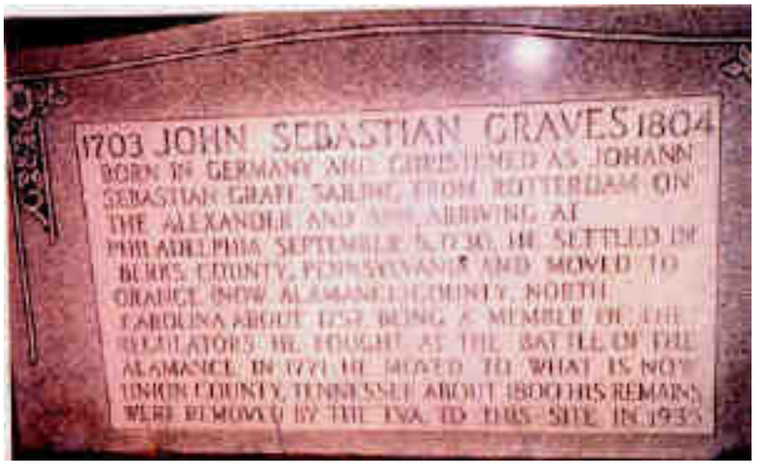
19 Other interconnections exist between the Graves family and my extended Sharp lineage, including individuals surnamed Kobel, Keck, Moser, and others; it is also quite possible that interconnections may exist between this Graves/Sharp Gordion knot and my extended McNutt or McKinney lines.

20 The name was changed to Graves probably after the family moved to North Carolina, though John's son Jacob in 1820 signed his name to his will as "Jacob Graff."

21 Pennsylvania Colonial Records, Vol. III, p. 386. The following oath was signed by Johann Sebastian Graff and others on the above list: "We do swear or solemnly declare that we deny all obedience to the Pope of Rome; and further swear or solemnly declare that no prince or person whatsoever hath any right or title to the Crown of Great Britain but his Majesty George II and his lawful issue."

22 His wife's name in unknown; some researchers have speculated that it was Maria Magdalena Kobel, the sister of Johann Georg Kobel, Jr; another researcher cites her name as Maria Magdalena Fuchs. There are records for a Maria Magdalena Fuchs who was born between between 1720 and 1730 in Germany. She was christened on 25 Aug 1720 in Prussia and died in Pennsylvania.

23 In the minutes of the District Court of Salisbury, N.C., for March, 1763, appears this entry: "This day came into Court the fol-



grandson of John, in a genealogical outline written in 1870, says that John died in 1804 at the age of 101. Given the moniker for John Graves as 'Old John of Stinking Quarter' it was likely that he was not a young man when he settled in North Carolina, so the advanced age is consistent with what we know about John.

Old John is believed to have had a large family [Genevieve E. Peters put the number of children at 17]. William Carroll Graves cites the known names of only five children: Jacob, Boston, Barbara, Peter and John [John and Jacob may be the same person]. T. H. R. Neal also names William. I have identified the birthdate for Barbara [b. 1743] and Peter [b. 13 Jul 1743], and have identified at least three more children: Elizabeth [b. abt. 1746], Conrad [b. abt. 1749], and Maria Philipina [b. 15 Aug 1741].[24] Johann Graff's first child was born in 1741 [which supports a 1740 marriage date]; his eldest son was born John Jacob Graff, March 8, 1746, in Berks county, Pennsylvania., the child of John Graff and wife as proved by records including the inscription on his tombstone. Boston Graves was born Sebastian Graff,[25] Oct. 1, 1747, in Berks county, Pennsylvania., the child of John Graff and wife as proved by Boston's pension application, filed in 1832. The man whose name is recorded in the immigrant list as Johann Sebastian Graff is the father of both John Jacob and Sebastian Graff, who were born in Berks county, Pennsylvania in 1746 and 1747.

The eldest son John Jacob Graff was in North Carolina at the time of the Revolution. However, he relocated soon thereafter. The reason for his move was most likely a result of "the Regulation," since the name of John Graves appears on a list of Regulators of the Almance in 1768. In North Carolina prior to the Revolution there was a constant struggle between the people and the representatives of the Crown over questions of Government, commerce, finance and religion. 'In the 'back country' extortionate fees, excessive taxes, and the oppressive manner of collecting them brought about a popular uprising, known as the Regulation. Violence followed the refusal to pay taxes and in 1768 the Royal Governor was forced to lead a military expedition against the Regulators. New outbreaks followed and on March 16, 1771, with a force of about 1,000 men and officers, the Governor met twice that number of Regulators on the banks of the Almance, where, after two hours of fighting, with losses on each side nearly equal, the ammunition of the Regulators was exhausted and they were routed. About fifteen were taken prisoners, and of these seven were executed. Althought John's name appears on the list of Regulators of the Almance in 1768, whether he participated in the Battle of March 16, 1771 is not known. After the battle, all members of the Regulation were compelled to take an oath of loyalty to the Crown.

John's life following the Regulation was probably not peaceful. John moved from North Carolina to East Tennessee when he was quite old, sometime after 1780. ["John Graves" appears on the 1780 tax list for Orange County, North Carolina, so he had not removed to Tennessee before that date.] Some of his children had preceded him and settled in Tennessee in the Big Valley on the north and south side of the Clinch River, now Union County. Records in Orange county, North Carolina, show that John deeded property in Orange county to his son Jacob on

lowing persons who proved certificate of their receiving the sacrament of the Lord's Supper . . . . . and was naturalized according to law . . . . . to wit: John Graves, Peter Noe, Anthony Cobble . . . . . ."

24 Others have also added Henry [b. 1783], Sarah and David. Given the wide desparity between Henry's birthdate and the other children, I think these are very questionable additions, at best.

25 This may explain the origin of the name Boston, the anglicized form of the name Sebastian, which "Old John" gave to one of his children, and which has been passed on to members of succeeding generations. John Graff of Berks county, Pennsylvania., and John Graves of Orange county, North Carolina were one and the same person.

Nov. 22, 1799, so it is probable that he moved to Tennessee about 1800.

After the Indian hostilities in East Tennessee John Graves and his son Sebastian [anglicized as "Boston"], purchased large tracts of land near Harbison's Cross Roads. The settlement known as Gravestown gets its name from this early American family. Old John lived in Tennessee with his grandson John [son of Jacob], and they both died on John's farm; Old John was buried on Dr. A. H. Longmire's farm near the old (now defunct) Presbyterian church in Big Valley, Claiborne County, Tennessee. His grave was relocated 14 May 1935 due to the building of the Norris Dam by the T.V.A.

OUR KOBEL AND AMICK FAMILIES

Maria Magdalena Kobel was the daughter of Johann George [Jerick] Kobel [or Gobl], Sr. and his wife Eva Sonss. This Kobel family is well known and documented living in the Swiss Alps dating at least as far back as the middle 1300's. Although Johann Georg did not himself immigrate, at least two of his known children did -- Johans George Kobel, Jr. and his wife Maria Barbara Geisler. -- both from Hoffenheim, Sinshein, Baden, Germany, as well as Maria Magdalena Kobel.

Anna Dorothea [also called Dorothy, Thorley, and Turley] Coble [or "Kobel" in the original German] was the wife of John Jacob Graves [Graff], and was therefore also the mother of our ancestor Barbara Graves [who was the wife of Henry Sharp, Sr.]. Anna was the daughter of Anthony Kobel and Anna Maria Amick; her father Anthony was the son of German immigrants.

Anna Maria Amick [or Emig] was the daughter of Johannes George Amick and his wife Anna Dorothea Rotter -- immigrants from Uttenhoffen, Gundershoffen, Bas Rhine, France.

According to Rineland Emigrants [which contains a list of German settlers in Colonial America],[26] Johann George Kobel was a Vassal of the Bishop of Speyer, but through a series of unfortunate circumstances he became overloaded with debts. As a consequence, he was manumitted to go to his relatives in Pennsylvania. He arrived aboard the Ship *Hope* from Rotterdam in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania on 28 August 1733. The emigrating family members included Johann [listed as "Hans Jerick Gobl"], age 40; his wife Barbara, age 38; and children "Antoniey," age 12, Anna Maria [our ancestor], age 10, Madlena, age 8, Jurig Adam, age 5, and Hans Jurig, age 3 1/2. The *Hope* was famous for the group of Mennonites it had transported, but although on board for that voyage, our Johann George Kobel was not a Mennonite. After their arrived in Philadelphia, the Kobel family settled first in Lancaster County, then in Hanover Township -- the same area in which Isaac Sharp had settled. After 1750, all of Johann's married sons moved down the Great Wagon Road to Guilford and Alamance County, North Carolina.

Virginia records have shown us that GEORGE, JOHANNES (JOHN GEORGE) & ERNST (AARON) SHARP, MARTIN LOY, HENRY WILLIAMS and most probably AUGUSTIN PRICE and their families were in Virginia by June 1745. Apparently due to the Indian raids of 1755, the SHARPS and LOYS left the area. It is even possible that some of the family may have been killed or captured by the Indians. Some of the SHARPS may have returned to Pennsylvania, but it would appear that the majority of them went to "Carolina" with GARRET ZINN

TIMELINE

1730 Johann Sebastian Graff immigrates from Germany.

26 Genealogical Publishing Company, Inc., 1985.

Rupp's book of 30,000 Immigrants, contains a list of Swiss and German settlers in Lancaster County, PA which includes the following names for 1719 - SEBASTIAN, GEORGE and HANS GRAFF (GRAVES) and CHRISTOPHER LEY (LOY). Early settlers in Berks and Lancaster Counties include: ALBRIGHT Family, FAUST Family, LOY Family, GRAFF/Graves Family

1738 Sharp brothers immigrate from Germany.

1747 • In the Pennsylvania German Church records, Vol 2, page 273, for New Hanover Lutheran Church Montgomery County, PA (that could be near the county line next to Berks County) we find: TITTLE, ANNA MARIE B: Feb 11, 1747, parents - ADAM & ELIZABETH TITTLE, Sponsors: JURG (GEORGE) and ANNA MARIE SCHERB (SHARP) -- our JOHN GEORGE SHARP and wife MARIE

1752 • The Kegleys' book tells us that AUGUSTIN, DANIEL, and HENRY PRICE settled on land (1120 acres) near Tom's Creek, thereby giving Price Mountain its name. It would appear that the PRICE Family were among the earliest settlers to the area. In 1752, AUGUSTIN PRICE was appointed a Lt. of Troop Horse for Augusta County, VA. Even though we find no further mention of ERNST (AARON) SHARP in Virginia records, there is plenty of evidence that AUGUSTIN PRICE and family lived on Tom's Creek and ERNST SHARP was AUGUSTIN PRICE'S Father-in-law.

1753 • Tom's Creek, where GEORGE & JOHN SHARP and MARTIN LOY lived in 1753 - 4 is located in present day Giles County, VA.

1756 • Rupp's History for Berks and Lebanon County. In Rupp's book there is also mention of the fact that ISAAC SHARP was a Tax Collector in 1756 for Berks County.

1763 • Land purchased in North Carolina

1779 WILLIAM SHARP was on the 1779 Tax List of Orange Co., NC and on the 1790 and 1791 Montgomery Co., VA Tax Roll for 184 acres.

1785 • According to "Annals of Southwestern Virginia" by Summers, on Jun 2, 1785 AUGUSTIN PRICE and CHARLES RUSH sold to JACOB SHELL, 200 acres of land in Montgomery County, VA..

The Coopers

1958